

# Contents

<b>TAPE LIST .....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>THE DAVIDIC COVENANT .....</b>	<b>20</b>
<b>ARIZONA BIBLE CONFERENCE 2008. PSALM 23.....</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>THE NEW RACIAL SPECIES AND THE NEW SPIRITUAL SPECIES IN THE ANGELIC CONFLICT. ....</b>	<b>34</b>
<b>THE NEW RACIAL SPECIES AND THE NEW SPIRITUAL SPECIES IN THE ANGELIC CONFLICT. PART 2. ....</b>	<b>38</b>
<b>THE SHEKINAH GLORY OR THE MANIFESTATION OF CHRIST WITHIN US.....</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>THE BEGINNING OF THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT. ....</b>	<b>48</b>
<b>THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT. PART 2. ....</b>	<b>53</b>
<b>THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT. PART 3. ....</b>	<b>58</b>
<b>THE PALESTINIAN COVENANT.....</b>	<b>63</b>
<b>THE DAVIDIC COVENANT.....</b>	<b>68</b>
<b>THE NEW COVENANT WITH ISRAEL.....</b>	<b>72</b>
<b>THE MOSAIC LAW. WHY BELIEVERS ARE NOT UNDER THE LAW. ....</b>	<b>76</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF THE SABBATH.....</b>	<b>84</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF REST. FROM THE PROMISES OF GOD.....</b>	<b>89</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF REST. PART 2.....</b>	<b>94</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF THE DEITY OF JESUS CHRIST.....</b>	<b>99</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF NEGATIVE VOLITION. ....</b>	<b>105</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF NEGATIVE VOLITION. PART 2. ....</b>	<b>111</b>
<b>NO MATTER SIGHT SAYS, THE PROMISES OF GOD WILL NEVER FAIL. ....</b>	<b>116</b>
<b>WHY THE WORD OF GOD HAS NEVER FAILED, AND WILL NEVER FAIL.....</b>	<b>121</b>
<b>PRINCIPLES THE LORD HAS ESTABLISHED WHICH GUARANTEE THAT THE HUMAN RACE WILL NOT SELF-DESTRUCT.....</b>	<b>126</b>
<b>PRINCIPLES THE LORD HAS ESTABLISHED WHICH GUARANTEE THAT THE HUMAN RACE WILL NOT SELF-DESTRUCT: PART 2 .....</b>	<b>131</b>
<b>PRINCIPLES THE LORD HAS ESTABLISHED WHICH GUARANTEE THAT THE HUMAN RACE WILL NOT SELF-DESTRUCT: PART 3. ....</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>THE THEOCENTRIC DISPENSATIONS: THE DISPENSATION OF THE GENTILES, THE PERIOD OF POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE VOLITION. ....</b>	<b>140</b>
<b>THE THEOCENTRIC DISPENSATIONS: THE DISPENSATION OF THE GENTILES, THE PERIOD OF POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE VOLITION. ....</b>	<b>145</b>
<b>THE PERIOD OF THE PATRIARCHS, ANOTHER ERA OF THE THEOCENTRIC DISPENSATION OF THE GENTILES, AND THE GENIUS OF GOD. ....</b>	<b>149</b>
<b>THE DISPENSATION OF ISRAEL. A MAN CALLED MOSES.....</b>	<b>154</b>
<b>THE DISPENSATION OF THE MOST DRAMATIC EXHIBITION OF DIVINE LOVE. THE HYPOSTATIC UNION. ....</b>	<b>159</b>
<b>THE TREE OF LIFE FROM THE N.E. BIBLE CONFERENCE 2008.....</b>	<b>165</b>
<b>OUR LORD'S SAYINGS ON THE CROSS.....</b>	<b>178</b>
<b>THE CHURCH. THE RAPTURE. THE TRIBULATION. ....</b>	<b>184</b>
<b>THE ROYAL FAMILY HONOR CODE AND SPIRITUAL SELF ESTEEM. ....</b>	<b>189</b>

<b>THE DOCTRINE OF MOTIVATION.....</b>	<b>193</b>
<b>FOR THEY ARE NOT ALL ISRAEL WHO ARE DESCENDED FROM ISRAEL.....</b>	<b>197</b>
<b>SPIRITUAL MECHANICS MUST BE PARLAYED INTO SPIRITUAL DYNAMICS. PART 2.....</b>	<b>202</b>
<b>SPIRITUAL MECHANICS MUST BE PARLAYED INTO SPIRITUAL DYNAMICS. PART 3.....</b>	<b>208</b>
<b>IT HAS ALWAYS TAKEN RESURRECTION LIFE FOR GOD TO EXPRESS HIMSELF IN HUMAN BEINGS.....</b>	<b>213</b>
<b>THE PLAN FOR THE HUMAN RACE FROM THE ETERNAL AND INFINITE GENIUS OF GOD. ....</b>	<b>219</b>
<b>GOD NEVER ELECTED ANYONE TO THE LAKE OF FIRE.....</b>	<b>224</b>
<b>THE DOCTRINE OF THE THEOLOGY OF THE PLAN OF GOD. ....</b>	<b>229</b>
<b>THE SOVEREIGNTY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUSTICE OF GOD AS IT RELATES TO THE THEOLOGY OF GOD'S PLAN. ....</b>	<b>234</b>
<b>THE SOVEREIGNTY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUSTICE OF GOD AS IT RELATES TO THE THEOLOGY OF GOD'S PLAN. PART 2.....</b>	<b>239</b>
<b>THE SOVEREIGNTY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUSTICE OF GOD AS IT RELATES TO THE THEOLOGY OF GOD'S PLAN. PART 3.....</b>	<b>244</b>

# TAPE LIST

- 2112-076 Davidic Covenant.  
01-02-08 2Sa 7:8-17; Psa 89:20-37; Rom 9:1-5.
- 2112-077 Davidic Covenant. Part 2  
01-03-08 2Sa 7:8-16; Psa 89:20-37; Mat 1:1-17; Jer 36:29-31
- 2112-078 Davidic Covenant. Part 3.  
01-04-08 Mat 1:1-17; Jer 36:1-32.
- 2112-080 A man after God's own heart.  
01-16-08 Psa 23 recap. Part 1 Psa 23; Gen 3:8-11; Ecc 3:11; 1Sa 16:10-13  
1Sa 17:32-37; Act 13:22
- 2112-081 The Shepherd and Guardian of Your Souls; Psa 23 Recap, Part 2.  
01-17-08 Psa 23; Joh 10:1-5; Luk 15:1-7; Isa 53:6, 7; 1Pe 2:25
- 2112-082 "I am with you always"  
01-18-08 Psa 23; 25:10; Mat 28:20; Rev 7:17
- 2112-079 Davidic Covenant. Part 4.  
01-06-08 Isa 55; 2Sa 7:8-16 ; Luk 1:31-33; Psa 89:3-4; Jer33:14-21
- 2112-083 Racial species and new spiritual species in the Angelic Conflict.  
01-20-08
- 2112-084 New racial species and new spiritual species in the Angelic Conflict. Part 2.  
01-23-08 Heb 11:33-12:3; Act 13:44.
- 2112-085 New Racial & Spiritual Species in the Angelic Conflict. Part 3  
01-24-08 Heb 11:39-12:3; Act 13:44-52; Jam 1:2-4
- 2112-086 The New Racial and Spiritual Species Originate from a form of Death.  
01-25-08 Heb 12:1-3; Gen 17:1-4; Col 2:11-14

- 2112-087 "New things have come."  
01-27-08 2Co 5:17; Tit 3:3-7; Gal 2:20; Gal 6:15; Gal 3:26-28; Eph 4:24; Joh 3:3, 7; Eph 2:11-22.
- 2112-088 Such an opportunity!  
01-30-08 2Co 5:17; Gal 6:15; Eph 2:11-22; Gal 3:26-28; 1Co 1:5; Rom 3:21-24
- 2112-089 God will perform what He has promised.  
01-31-08 1Jo 5:11, 12; Rom 3:21-24; Rom 4:16-21; Gen 17:9-14
- 2112-090 The circumcision made without hands  
02-01-08 Jer 4:4; Rom 2:28-29 Col 2:10-14; Rom 8:3-4, 8, 12-13
- 2112-091 The Shekinah Glory  
02-03-08
- 2112-092 The Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of Christ within us.  
02-06-08 Rom 9:1-4; Joh 17:22-26; Joh 14:1-9.
- 2112-093 The Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of Christ within us, the road to spiritual maturity.  
02-07-08 Joh 14:5-9; Gal 2:10; Col 1:27
- 2112-094 The Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of Christ within us, the road to solitary confinement.  
02-08-08 Rom 9:3-4; Lam 3:5-13; 2Co 4:6-18; Gen 32:24.
- 2112-095 The Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of Christ within us, alone with God  
02-10-08 Rom 9:1-4; Joh 14:20; Mat 27:38-40; Joh 2:19-21
- 2112-096 The Shekinah Glory - understanding that you are on the road to spiritual maturity.  
02-14-08 Gal 2:20; Joh 15:4, 17-25.
- 2112-097 The Shekinah Glory and the indwelling of Christ in this age.  
02-15-08
- 2112-098 The Abrahamic Covenant.

02-20-08

2112-099 The Beginning of the Abrahamic Covenant  
02-21-08 Rom 9:4; Gen 11:26-12:3; Heb 11:8

2112-100 Abraham chooses God over family and friends.  
02-24-08 Rom 12:17-19; 2Th 3:6-14; 1Pe 4:3-5; Mat 7:6.

2112-101 How to know God's will for your life.  
02-27-08 Isa 55:7-9; 2Co 10:1-6; Act 11:1-16.

2112-102 Abraham teaches us that in the selection of a mate, you need to understand why  
relationships fail.  
02-28-08 Gen 11:28-29; Pro 12:4-5; 6:23-32; Eph 5:25-28; Col 3:18-19.

2112-103 There never is any divine revelation in the dried up spiritual life.  
02-29-08 Gen 11:30-32; Act 7:2-4 Gen 12:1

2112-104 Your scale of values changes radically when you are up against eternity and death.  
03-02-08 Gen 11:27-32; Gen 12:1; 1Co 10:19-20; Luk 16:22-29.

2112-105 God must remove from our reach the things that hinder our spiritual growth.  
03-05-08 Heb 12:27-29; 1Pe 4:12-17; Gen 12:1-3.

2112-106 The Abrahamic Covenant or the Unconditional, Unilateral Covenant of God.  
03-06-08 Gen 12:1-3; Mar 10:28-30; Col 3:17, 23; Gen 15:1-21

2112-107 The Abrahamic Covenant - There is no place for a guilt complex or for anxiety about  
past failures.  
03-07-08 Gen 12:2-3; Gen 15:1-10; Rom 4:16-21; Luk 12:27-32.

2112-108 The Abrahamic Covenant - The ceremony in Gen 15 indicates the unconditional nature  
of the covenant.  
03-09-08 Gen 15:1-21; Mat 13:4, 19, 32.

2112-109 The mystery and true message behind the Abrahamic Covenant.  
03-12-08 Gen 15:1-21; Mat 13:4, 19, 32.

- 2112-110 The Palestinian Covenant - the mystery and true message behind the Palestinian  
Covenant.  
03-13-08 Jos 1:1-9; Deu 30:1-3; 4:30-40
- 2112-111 The Palestinian Covenant - the mystery and true message behind the Palestinian  
Covenant. Part 2.  
03-14-08 Deu 30:1-9; 4:30-40; Psa 106:41-46.
- 2112-112 The Palestinian Covenant - the mystery and true message behind the Palestinian  
Covenant. Part 3.  
03-16-08 Deu 30:1-9; 4:30-40
- 2112-113 The Davidic Covenant The relationship between Abraham, David and the believer in the  
Church Age  
03-19-08 2Sa 7:10-16 Gal 3:6-29 Psa 89: 1-4
- 2112-114 The Davidic Covenant Part 2 The Mystery Behind the Coniah Curse.  
03-20-08 Jer 22:23-24; Mat 1:1-17; Eze 18:20;
- 2112-115 The Davidic Covenant Part 3 The Mystery Behind the Coniah Curse. Part 2  
03-21-08 Jer 22:23-24; Mat 1:1-17; Eze 18:20;
- 2112-116 The New Covenant to Israel.  
03-26-08 Jer 31:31-34 Eze 16:1-62
- 2112-117 The Israelites, to whom is the deposit of the law. The Mosaic Law, Part 1.  
03-27-08 Rom 9:1-4; 7:5-13; Exo 20:12-17
- 2112-118 The Israelites, to whom is the deposit of the law. The Mosaic Law, Part 2.  
03-28-08 Act 13:26-39; Rom 3:20-22, 28; Gal 3:21-26; 3:1-5
- 2112-119 The Israelites, to whom is the deposit of the law. The Mosaic Law, Part 3.  
03-30-08 Rom 9:1-4; 7:5-13; Joh 5:36-40; Heb 7:19.
- 2112-120 Beware of legalism using the Mosaic Law. The Mosaic Law, Part 4.  
04-02-08 Gal 1:1-6; Rom 16:25-26; Eph 3:1-6; Col 1:25-26.

- 2112-121      Seventeen Points on Why the Believer is Not Under the Law.  
04-03-08      Rom 10:1-4; 6:15; Galatians.
- 2112-122      Seventeen Points on why the believer is not under the Law, Part 2.  
04-04-08      Galatians; Joh 1:12-13; 1Co 8:8-13; 6:12; 9:12.
- 2112-123      The Sabbath to remind us of the principle of grace and rest.  
04-06-08      Rom 9:4; Heb 3:7-13; Heb 4:1-7; Gen 2:1-3.
- 2112-124      The Sabbath to remind us of the principle of grace and rest. Part 2.  
04-09-08      Rom 9:4; Eph 2:10; Mat 28:19-20; Deu 6:10-14; 8:7-10.
- 2112-125      The Sabbath to remind us of the principle of grace and rest. Part 3.  
04-10-08      Gen 2:1-3; Col 1:9-13; Exo 20:8-11; 16:1-30.
- 2112-126      The Sabbath to remind us of the principle of grace and rest. Part 4.  
04-11-08      Isa 58:13-59:1; Exo 23:10-11; Lev 25:3-4; Lev 26:33-37.
- 2112-127      The Sabbath to remind us of the principle of grace and rest. Part 5.  
04-13-08      Isa 58:13-14; 1Co 15:20-23; Jam 1:18; Col 2:16-17.
- 2112-128      The Doctrine of Rest from the principle of grace and mercy, Part 1.  
04-16-08      Mar 16:1-9; Rom 14:4-6; Lam 3:22-25; Heb 4:3.
- 2112-129      The Doctrine of Rest from the promises of God. Part 2.  
04-17-08      Mat 11:28, 29; Heb 12:2, 3 Mat 12:1, 2.
- 2112-130      The Doctrine of Rest. The guide to lead God's people to rest.  
04-18-08      Isa 28:9-13; Psa 95:6-11; Jer 6:16-17; Deu 12:9-12.
- 2112-131      The Doctrine of Rest. Part 4. The Opposition to Rest.  
04-20-08      Rom 7:14, 18; 8:5-14; 13:14; Deu 25:17-19.
- 2112-132      The Doctrine of Rest. Part 5. Learning the value of authority and humility.  
04-23-08      Deu 25:17-19; Rev 14:11; Col 2:14-15; Eph 4:11-13.

- 2112-133     The Doctrine of Rest. Part 6. God's attitude of rest towards the believer.  
04-24-08     Isa 32:17-18; Ecc 5:1-2.
- 2112-134     The Doctrine of Rest. The believer's responsibility and means to rest.  
04-25-08     Heb 3:14-4:12; Heb 5:14; 1Ti 4:7-8.
- 2112-135     The greater and more perfect tabernacle.  
04-27-08
- 2112-136     The Deity of the Lord Jesus Christ. Part 1. The Christ according to the flesh, who is over  
all, God                                     who is blessed forever.  
04-30-08     Rom 9:5; Joh 1:1-3; Rev 4:1; Col 1:16-18; Heb 5:6.
- 2112-137     The Deity of the Lord Jesus Christ Part 2. Scriptural Documentation.  
05-01-08     Rom 9:5; 1Ch 29:11; Mat 25:31-34; Joh 2:18-21; Rev 1:7.
- 2112-138     Your self-determination determines your capacity for life or the excuses that you make.  
05-02-08     Heb 13:5-6; 1Jo 2:22-23; 1Jo 5:19-21; Rom 9:4-5; Rom 11:17-36.
- 2112-139     The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Part 1. The importance of your self-determination  
and free will.  
05-04-08     Rom 9:5; Joh 1:1, 11, 14; Joh 14:8-9; 2Co 3:2-6; 1Sa 28.
- 2112-140     The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Part 2. Saul's negative volition and the witch of  
Endor.  
05-07-08     1Sa 28:5-8; Lev 19:31; Lev 20:6; Pro 5:11-14.
- 2112-141     The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Part 3. The influence of demonism in the believer  
who is negative                             toward doctrine.  
05-08-08     1Sa 28:6-9; 2Co 11:3-15
- 2112-142     The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Part 4. The Witch of Endor and Saul's reversionism.  
05-09-08     1Ch 10:13-14; 1Sa 28:9.
- 2112-143     The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Part 5. If Saul had simply remembered doctrine, he  
would have                                     been victorious.  
05-14-08     1Sa 28:5-13; 2Co 10:3-6



- 2112-144 The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Part 6. Negative volition toward doctrine is revealed  
by rejection of spiritual authority.  
05-15-08 Luk 16:27-31; 1Sa 28:11-19; Rom 13:1-2
- 2112-145 The Doctrine of Negative Volition Part 7. A Visit from the Dead for the Believer  
Negative Toward Doctrine.  
05-16-08 1Sa 28:15-19; Jam 4:4-10
- 2112-146 The Doctrine of Negative Volition Part 8. The pessimist and the case of the witch turned  
woman.  
05-18-08 1Sa 28:1-24.
- 2112-147 No matter what sight says, the promises of God will never fail.  
05-21-08 Rom 9:4-6; Isa 14:13-14; Zec 14:16-19; Dan 7:24-27.
- 2112-148 The Signs of the Last Days, Proving That the Word of God Has Never Failed.  
05-22-08 Rom 9:6; 3:10-18, 23; 1:20-2:1; Rev 6:8; 9:15
- 2112-149 In spite of what happens, the word of God has never failed and will never fail.  
05-23-08 Rom 9:6; 2Ti 3:1-7; 2Pe 3:3-18.
- 2112-150 Signs of the last days and why the Word of God will never fail.  
05-25-08 Rom 9:4-6; 2Pe 3:3-18.
- 2112-151 The reason why the word of God has never and will never fail.  
05-28-08 Col 1:15-17; Rev 21:1; Heb 2:10; Heb 12:26-28; 1Pe 1:23-25.
- 2112-152 Basic principles the Lord has established which guarantee that the human race will  
never self-destruct.  
05-29-08 Mat 10:29-31; Joh 15:15-19; Gen 11:1-9; Act 17:22-27
- 2112-153 The principles God established which guarantee that the human race will not  
self-destruct. Languages and client nations.  
05-30-08 Gen 6:5-7; 11:1-19; Act 17:22-26; Jer 6:9-19.

- 2112-154     What are you living for?  
06-01-08     Mat 16:24-25; Gen 11:6-8; Act 17:26-27.
- 2112-155     The client nations to God and the deception of the 3 P's, the politicians, the priests, and  
the prophets.  
06-04-08     Jer 6:9-19; Eze 13:8-16; Pro 6:16-19; Mat 5:13-14.
- 2112-156     The Fourth Basic Principle that the Lord has Established - The Salvation Work of The  
Lord Jesus             Christ.  
06-05-08     Joh 3:18,36; 2Co 3:3; 5:18-20; Joh 16:8-11
- 2112-157     The Fifth Basic Principle that the Lord has Established - The Invisible Impact of the  
Invisible Hero.  
06-06-08     Mat 7:24-27; Rev 14:12-13; Col 1:9-11; Mat 7:12-20.
- 2112-158     PVTD vs. NVTD - a snapshot of David and Saul.  
06-08-08     1Sa 13:9-14; 17:11; 18:6-9; 1Ch 12:22; Act 13:22.
- 2112-159     The divine provision of the different dispensations.  
06-11-08     Eph 3:1-10; 2Co 12:1-7; 1Pe 1:12.
- 2112-160     Understanding the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age.  
06-12-08     1Co 3:1-11; Eph 3:1-9; Mat 16:13-19
- 2112-161     The dispensation of the Church-age is the most difficult yet exciting time in history.  
06-13-08     Eph 3:1-9; Mat 16:13-19; Eph 2:14-22; 1Pe 2:4-10.
- 2112-162     Why the Church-age, the dispensation of the mystery, is so important for you to master.  
06-18-08     Col 1:25-27; 1Ti 1:1-4; Eph 3:1-13.
- 2112-163     Our role and goal in the Church-Age, the Dispensation of the Mystery.  
06-19-08     Joh 16:12-14; Eph 3:1-13; Eph 6:18-20
- 2112-164     The downfall of the god of this age, the unraveling of the whole cosmic system, the  
destruction of the             lie and Satan's appeal trial.  
06-20-08     Eph 3:13; Mat 13:20-22; 21:28-31; Eph 1:11-22; Eph 2:6-10.

- 2112-165 The excitement and energy that comes from the dispensation of the mystery, the Church-age.  
06-22-08 Rom 16:25-26; Eph 1:15-23; Eph 2:4-19.
- 2112-166 The Theocentric Dispensations: The dispensation of the Gentiles, the Period of Positive and Negative Volition.  
06-25-08 Gen 2:22-24; Gen 4:1-6; Heb 11:4.
- 2112-167 The Theocentric Dispensations: The dispensation of the first murder in human history.  
06-26-08 Heb 11:4; Gen 3:24; Gen 6:2; 2Pe 2:4-5; Jud 1:14-15; Gen 4:3-8.
- 2112-168 The Theocentric dispensations: The beginning of violence and murder in human history and the cause of it.  
06-27-08 1Jo 3:12; Joh 3:20; Joh 7:7; Joh 15:18-20; Joh 17:14-18; Gen 4:3-8.
- 2112-169 Virtue-love is unraveling the cosmic system.  
06-29-08 Eph 6:11-17; 1Jo 4:4; Joh 16:33; Joh 13:34-35; 1Jo 4:19-21; Eph 6:24.
- 2112-170 Satan is not only the instigator of the first murder but the author of Cain's religion.  
07-02-08 Gen 4:3-17; Mat 26:42; Mat 9:5-6.
- 2112-171 The Theocentric Dispensations: The current lesson of the first Theocentric Dispensation concerning our 4th of July, Independence Day.  
7-03-08 Gen 4:9-17; Rom 2:12-15; Deu 6:1-12
- 2112-172 Independence Day Special: Lessons from a letter to Abigail.  
07-06-08 Gal 5; 1Co 6:19-20; 7:23; Deu 6:1-12; 2Ch 7:13-14.
- 2112-173 The Period of the Patriarchs, another era of the Theocentric dispensation of the Gentiles, and the genius of God.  
07-09-08 Heb 6:13-18; Heb 11:8-10; 1Co 15:22,45-49; Mat 10:29-31.
- 2112-174 The Period of the Patriarchs: Meet Abraham, Isaac & Jacob.  
07-10-08 Gal 5:2-9; Gen 35:22-26
- 2112-175 The mystery behind the last four words in the book of Genesis concerning the Period of the Patriarchs.  
07-11-08 Gen 35:22-26; Mat 19:3-8; Luk 14:16-20;

Rev 7:4-8; Rev 12:1; Rev 21:12-14.

- 2112-176     The Holy Spirit reveals the importance of assembling together and the value of  
repetition.  
07-13-08     Joh 14 :22-26; Gen 12 : 1-2 Rev 1:7; Rev 19:11-16.
- 2112-177     God brings in a new policy for mankind to operate in and again man fails.  
07-16-08     Luk 16:10-12; Gen 12:1-3; Jos 2:10-11; Rev 1:7; Rev 19:11-16.
- 2112-178     The Dispensation of Israel, Part 1 A man called Moses  
07-17-08     Exo 1:8-2:10; 3:1-6; Heb 11:23-26 Num 12:1-10; Deu 7:1-3
- 2112-179     The dispensation of Israel, Part 2. The faithfulness and grace of God in giving the Mosaic  
Law.  
07-18-08     Jam 1:13-16; Exo 3:7-15; Exo 4:1-14; Col 2:16-17; Heb 8:1-5.
- 2112-180     The dispensation of Israel, Part 3. The real purpose and mystery behind the Mosaic Law  
given to  
Israel.  
07-20-08     2Sa 12:5-23; Rom 8:1-4; Rom 5:12-21; Gal 3:21-24; Gal 4:9.
- 2112-181     The dispensation of Israel. Part 4. God has not rejected His people nor His promises, the  
five divine  
covenants.  
07-23-08     Exo 33:18-19; Gal 4:9; Gal 3:10-14; Mal 3:8-11; Jer 31:31-34.
- 2112-182     The Dispensation of Israel. Part 5.  
07-24-08
- 2112-183     The Dispensation of Israel. Part 6. The New Covenant to Israel not to the Church.  
07-25-08     Heb 8:8-12; Heb 10:15-17; Jer 31:31-37; Eze 34:25-28.
- 2112-184     The introduction to the dispensation of the most dramatic exhibition of divine love. The  
Hypostatic  
Union. Part 1.  
07-27-08     Rom 9:20-21; Rom 12:1; Col 1:16-29; Col 3:9-11; Eph 5:1-2.
- 2112-185     The dispensation of the most dramatic exhibition of divine love. The Hypostatic Union.  
Part 2.  
07-30-08     Eph 5:1-2; Eph 2:19-Eph 3:3; Rom 1:1-4; Rom 9:5; Joh 8:52-58.

- 2112-186     The Hypostatic Union. Part 3. The most unique expression of the omnipotence of God.  
07-31-08     Act 2:6-11; Isa 28:10-13; Isa 7:14; Isa 9:6; Luk 1:35,46-47.
- 2112-187     The Hypostatic Union. Part 4. Every problem and adversity our Lord faced, He faced by  
operating in  
the power of the Holy Spirit.  
08-01-08     1Pe 2:18-19; 3:14-16; Rom 12:14-21; Matthew passages.
- 2112-188     The Hypostatic Union. Part 5. Jesus teaches us how to handle lies, accusations, and  
unfair and unjust                     treatment.  
08-03-08     Luk 1:26-37; Luk 3:22; Luk 4:1-2,14-21; Eph 1:18-20.
- 2112-189     The Hypostatic Union. Part 6. Our Lord's sayings on the cross.  
08-13-08     Phi 2:11-14; Luk 23:33-34; Luk 23:39-43; Joh 19:25-27; Mar 15:34.
- 2112-190     The Hypostatic Union. Part 7. Our Lord's sayings on the cross. Part 2.  
08-14-08     Joh 19:25-27; Mar 15:34; Rom 5:8-9; Rom 3:23-26; 1Pe 1:18-21.
- 2112-191     The Hypostatic Union. Part 8. Our Lord's sayings on the cross. Part 3.  
08-15-08     Mat 27:46; Joh 8:29; Joh 13:13-17; Joh 19:28; Joh 19:30; Luk 23:46.
- 2112-192     The Hypostatic Union. Part 9. On the cross, our Lord was occupied with others.  
08-17-08     Col 1:17-20; Luk 23:33-34,43,46; Joh 19:26-30; Mat 27:46.
- 2112-193     The Dispensation of the Mystery.  
08-20-08     Joh 14:12-29; Act 1:1-5; Rom 16:25-26; Eph 3:1-9; Col 1:24-29; Rev 19:5-16.
- 2112-194     The Rapture & Tribulation Period  
08-21-08     1Co 15:51-58; 1Th 4:13-18; Zep 1:14-18; Rev 6:12-17; Isa 26:20-21
- 2112-195     The Millennial Reign: God's final exam for fallen man.  
08-24-08     Zec 14:1-9; Rev 20:1-10; Dan 7:24-27; Phi 4:11-13.
- 2112-196     Discipleship in the Church-age.  
08-28-08     Rom 12:4-13; 1Co 1:26-29; Luk 6:12-16.

- 2112-197 Interdependence - God's plan for the body of Christ.  
08-29-08
- 2112-198 Discipleship demands the function of the royal family honor code.  
08-31-08 Eph 6:10-14; 1Th 5:8; Mat 5:39-48; 1Co 8-9
- 2112-199 The Royal Family honor code and spiritual self-esteem.  
09-03-08 Eph 6:10-14; 1Co 8-9
- 2112-200 SSE is the foundation for the Royal Family honor code.  
09-04-08 1Co 15:10; Pro 19:8; Pro 6:16-19.
- 2112-201 SSE is the foundation for the Royal Family honor code. Part 2.  
09-05-08 1Co 15:10; Pro 19:8; Pro 6:16-19.
- 2112-202 The modus operandi of the RFHC demands the function of impersonal love, grace,  
authority, giving and laying down your life.  
09-07-08 Rom 12-15
- 2112-203 What is our part?  
09-10-08 Rom 8:28; Phi 1:6; Phi 2:13; Heb 13:21; Isa 26:12; Psa 119:16,24
- 2112-204 What is our part? Part 2.  
09-11-08
- 2112-205 Doers of the Word.  
09-12-08
- 2112-207 Motivation for the believer to keep going is love for God.  
09-17-08 Isa 40:1-8; 2Co 4:6-12; Joh 1:19-20; Act 13:22
- 2112-208 Motivation for the believer to keep going is love for God. Part 2  
09-18-08 1Jo 3:1; Rom 8:28-32; Psa 33:4-5
- 2112-209 Motivation for the believer to keep going is love for God. Part 3  
09-19-08 Act 13:22; Psa 89:14; Psa 32:5; Psa 18:35

- 2112-210 Motivation for the believer to keep going is love for God. Part 4.  
09-21-08
- 2112-206 Meet the one man our Lord marveled at.  
09-14-08
- 2112-211 For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel. Beware of hypocrites who  
attack the teaching of doctrine.  
09-24-08 Rom 9:1-6; Mat 12:46-50; 12:25; Joh 1:12-13.
- 2112-212 Why most Christians are professors and not possessors.  
09-25-08 Joh 1:12-13; Eph 2:8-10; Gal 3:28; Gal 3:16-19; Joh 8:30-44
- 2112-213 The spiritual life is not to be executed or achieved through statistical understanding or  
a spiritual formula.  
09-26-08 Gal 3:16-19; Mat 7:13-23; Col 2:13-19.
- 2112-214 Religion, rituals, program spirituality, or statistical obsession blind the believer from  
the spiritual life. Part 1.  
09-28-08 Luk 8:14-15; 22:18; Col 1:9-10; 2:13-19.
- 2112-215 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics.  
10-01-08 1Co 3:13-15; 5:1-5; Jam 1:22-25.
- 2112-216 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 2. A doer of the  
word.  
10-02-08 Jam 1:22-25; Mat 10:34-38; 2Co 3:18
- 2112-217 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed  
10-03-08
- 2112-218 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 4. The greatest  
blessing money cannot buy.  
10-05-08 Jam 1:1,21-27; 2:14-26; 3:13-17; Col 2:13-19; Eph 4:11-16.
- 2112-219 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 5.  
10-08-08 Col 2:18-19; Jer 9:23-24; Eph 4:11-16; Gal 5:22-25.

- 2112-220 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 6. The importance of the joints and ligaments.  
10-09-08 Col 2:19; Rom 12:4-5; 1Co 12:4-18; 1Ti 4:7-8.
- 2112-221 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 7. The Doctrine of the Joints.  
10-10-08 Col 2:19-23; 1Co 12:1; 1Ti 4:7-8; Rev 22:12.
- 2112-222 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 8. The doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments, Part 2.  
10-12-08 Col 2:19; 1Jo 2:5-6; Col 3:1-4.
- 2112-223 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 9. The doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments, Part 3.  
10-15-08 Eph 4:11-16; Gal 5:22; Psa 37; Pro 24.
- 2112-224 Spiritual mechanics must be parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Part 10. The doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments, Part 4.  
10-16-08 Phi 3:1-5; Joh 14:7-26; 2Pe 1:2-4
- 2112-225 Knowing Him all begins with one very simplistic word: Time  
10-17-08 Phi 1 : 6 ; Phi 2:13; Heb 13:21;1 Jo 1:1-3; 2Pe 3:10-18.
- 2112-226 The discovery of the mystery of having the spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics through resurrection life.  
10-19-08 Phi 3:1-15; Rom 7:14,8:2.
- 2112-227 It has always taken resurrection life for God to express Himself in human beings.  
10-22-08 Rom 7:14 - Rom 8:1-29; Phi 1:6; Phi 2:13.
- 2112-228 It has always taken resurrection life for God to express Himself in human beings. Part 2.  
10-23-08 Rom 7:14 - Rom 8:1-29; Deu 7:13-26; Deu 28:1-14; Mat 5:17-20.
- 2112-229 It has always taken resurrection life for God to express Himself in human beings. Part 3.  
10-24-08 1Jo 2:3-11; 2Co 4:6-12,18; Eph 1:17-18; Eph 3:16; Eph 2:7.



- 2112-230 Living in the dynamic spiritual life will increase your love, prayers, and fellowship with God.  
10-26-08 1Th 5:1-18; Luk 11:1-4; Eph 5:15-16; Joh 14:13-14; Act 1:24-25.
- 2112-231 The plan for the human race from the eternal and infinite genius of God.  
10-29-08 Rom 9:1-6; Mat 10:16-20; Gen 2:7-21.
- 2112-232 The reason why Abraham left all his estate to Isaac.  
10-30-08 Rom 5:12-21; 1Ti 1:15-16; Rom 9:7, Eze 18:14-20.
- 2112-233 Don't blame the parents for how children turn out.  
10-31-08 Rom 9:7-9; Eze 18:14-20; Luk 14:26-27; Luk 18:29-30.
- 2112-234 According to the will of the Father whoever takes the Son, GETS IT ALL.  
11-02-08 Rom 9:6-16; Rom 11:33-12:1; Isa 14:12-27; Isa 55:8-11.
- 2112-235 Drawing near to Christ to fulfill the plan of God.  
11-05-08 Rom 9:9-16; Eph 1:3-14.
- 2112-236 Free will to choose the plan of God for your life.  
11-07-08 Rom 9:9-16; 2Ti 2; Rom 11:33-36
- 2112-237 The doctrine of the theology of the plan of God.  
11-09-08 Rom 9:6-16; Isa 46:8-13; Rom 3:10-18; Psa 39:5b-6.
- 2112-238 God never elected anyone to the Lake of Fire  
11-12-08 1Sa 2:6-8; Eph 1:3-4; 1Pe 2:9-10
- 2112-239 God's plan handles man's free will decisions.  
11-13-08 Eph 1:3-4; Rom 8:28-30; Rom 9:14-23 , Mat12:18 ; Isa 45:3-4.
- 2112-240 God elected you to be rich!  
11-14-08 Mat 12:18; Isa 45:3-4; Eph 1:17-18; Eph 2:4-7
- 2112-241 God measures everything by the perfections of His Son,  
11-16-08 Mat 12:18; Isa 45:3-4; Eph 2:4-7; Act 4:27-28

- 2112-242 The doctrine of the theology of the plan of God. Part 2.  
11-19-08 Rom 9:1-16; Rom 11:33-36; Rom 12:1-3; Rom 3:10-18; Psa 39:5b-6.
- 2112-243 The doctrine of the theology of the plan of God. Part 3. The Trinity.  
11-20-08 Psa 39:5b-6; Psa 56:4,11; Isa 48:12-16; 1Ch 29:10-17.
- 2112-244 The doctrine of the theology of the plan of God. Part 4. His character and nature toward  
you.  
11-21-08 Jam 4:13-14; Heb 11:1,6; 1Ch 29:10-17.
- 2112-245 Special: Divine Inspiration from the Spirit in the Sky.  
11-23-08 Rev 12:9-11; Rom 15:13-18; Eph 5:18-22; 2 Corinthians.
- 2112-246 Christianity begins not with the word "DO," but with the word "DONE".  
11-30-08 Phi 3:9; Col 2:8-23; Rom 8:31-32; Tit 2:11-14; 1Jo 3:12.
- 2112-247 The Essence of God is necessary to understand God's Perfect Plan.  
12-03-08
- 2112-248 The sovereignty, righteousness, and justice of God as it relates to the theology of God's  
plan.  
12-04-08
- 2112-249 The mystery of the Essence of God.  
12-05-08
- 2112-250 The Theology of the plan of God. Part 5. How to live in the righteousness of God.  
12-07-08 Eph 3:14-21; Act 2:22-23; Act 4:27-28; Heb 10:38-39
- 2112-251 The Theology of the plan of God. Part 6. The true definition of living in the  
righteousness of God.  
12-10-08 Rom 7:24-8:4; Joh 15:17-20; Psa 119
- 2112-252 The doctrine of the Theology of the plan of God, Part 7. The true definition of living in  
the justice of God.  
12-11-08

- 2112-253 The doctrine of the Theology of the plan of God. Part 8. Justice and righteousness produces integrity in man.  
12-12-08 Rom 1:16-17; Isa 1:27; 9:6-7; 16:5; 28:17; Isa 32:16; 33:5
- 2112-254 The doctrine of the Theology of the plan of God. Part 9. Results of living in the justice and righteousness of God.  
12-14-08 Heb 12:15-17; Heb 9:27; Psa 119; Job 29:1-18
- 2112-255 The doctrine of the Theology of the plan of God. Part 10. Understanding love as God loves.  
12-17-08 Tit 2:11-12; Gal 1:3-4; Mat 15:17-20; Rom 2:1-4
- 2112-256 The doctrine of the Theology of the plan of God, Part 11. The policy of grace revealing the love of God.  
12-18-08 2Pe 1:1-4; Rom 2:1-4; Rev 20:11-15; 1Jo 2:1-2; Luk 13:22-24

# THE DAVIDIC COVENANT

01/06/08

*ROM 9:1-5, "I am telling the truth in Christ, I am not lying, my conscience bearing me witness in the Holy Spirit, that I have great sorrow and unceasing grief in my heart. For I could wish that I myself were accursed, separated from Christ for the sake of my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh, who are Israelites, to whom belongs the adoption as sons and the glory and the covenants and the giving of the Law and the temple service and the promises, whose are the fathers, and from whom is the Christ according to the flesh, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen."*

This isn't only Paul's heart alone, this is the Lord's heart for His people being communicating through Paul. MAT 23:37 "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were unwilling." Our Lord desired to gather them under His wings in every letter of the Law, in every unconditional covenant, in every phrase uttered by the prophets. For thousands of years the Lord has desired them. Upon His last entrance into Jerusalem, upon the colt, He looked upon the city and as He approached He saw it and wept over it. The Lord didn't smash the city with His raw power; rather He wept over it. The Lord has wept over some of you as well. He has given you much more than the Jews, and still some of you reject Him as well. He weeps and prays for you at the right hand of God the Father.

Some of you may not think that gifts come from God, but rather think that gifts are in and come from the system, and by the way, there are gifts in the system. Yet unlike God's gifts, there are conditions attached to those gifts. To get the gifts of the system you have to buy into the system, you have to bow to it. It's not like the movies where you sign a contract with the Devil. Rather it is a very simple principle: You will bow to what you love. If you love the promises of the cosmic system, then you will bow down to them and you will sell out for them. If you love the Lord who purchased your life you will bow to Him. It is then that you will see the great life that the system cannot give. This is a life with great capacity for life, love, and happiness, that is not borrowed from anything else, it is truly your own, and you live it. JOH 10:10 "The thief comes only to steal, and kill, and destroy; I came that they might have life, and might have it abundantly."

So, in Romans 9 Paul is asking his countrymen if they are still looking for the Messiah that has already come. As we are noting in this study, Paul lists eight things that have been given to Israel, and in each, God has communicated to them exactly who the Messiah would be.

As a part of the gracious unconditional covenants that were given to Israel, let's look at the Davidic Covenant. Remember that there are five covenants given to Israel; four unconditional and one conditional.

1) The Abrahamic covenant defines the race for client nation Israel. Abraham became a Jew at age 99; and circumcision was the sign (GEN 12:1-3; GEN 13:15-16; GEN 15:18; GEN 22:15-18; GEN 26:3-4; EXO 6:2-8).

2) The Palestinian covenant defines the land for client nation Israel (GEN 15:18; NUM 34:1-12; DEU 30:1-9; JOS 1:3-4). This is the real estate of the client nation.

3). The Mosaic Law defines the policy for client nation Israel (both spiritual and temporal policy). This is the one conditional covenant.

4). The Davidic covenant defines the dynasty for client nation Israel (2 Sam 7:8-16; PSA 89:20-37).

5). The New covenant defines the restoration of the client nation Israel at the Second Advent and its millennial modus operandi (JER 31:31-34). This part of the contract is not operational until the Second Advent.

The Davidic Covenant says that the seed of the woman, the humanity of Christ, will descend from the tribe of Judah through the family of David (2SA 7:8-17; PSA 89:20-37).

The Gospel of Matthew conveys the story of salvation. Here the book demonstrates the fact that Jesus is the Christ, the predicted Messiah, the King of the Jews Who was rejected by His own people, Who was accepted by the Gentiles, and Who some day will return to reign as the King of kings and the Lord of Lords. In fact, the message of the book of Matthew is the story of the King revealed, the King who was rejected, and the King who will return.

The first thing you notice in Matthew's Gospel is the King revealed. Matthew does this by presenting the person of Jesus in Royal colors. His ancestry is traced from the Royal line (MAT 1:1-17). His birth was dreaded by a king named Herod (MAT 2:1-16). Wise men who were known as the magi and were known for recognizing when a king was born offered their royal gifts (MAT 2:11). His herald, John the Baptist, declares that His kingdom is at hand (MAT 3:1). Even in His temptation in chapter four, you see the Royalty of the Person of Christ. The temptation itself reaches a climax when Satan offers Him all the kingdoms of the world, an acknowledgment that He has a right to rule (MAT 4:9). His great message, the sermon on the Mount was the manifesto of the King setting forth the laws of the kingdom. His miracles were His Royal credentials (MAT 11:20). His parables were called the mysteries of the kingdom (MAT 13:11). He was hailed as the son of David (MAT 15:22). He makes a royal entry into Jerusalem and claims sovereignty and tells concerning Himself the story of the marriage of a King's son (Mat 22). While facing the Cross, He predicted His future reign (MAT 26:29). He claimed to have dominion over the angels and that He could call a legion of them to His defense (MAT 26:53). The point is that Matthew presents our Lord as a King. A king revealed.

However, the Gospel of Matthew also presents the King rejected. Matthew reveals the fact that the people to whom He came to, and who owed Him submission, never gave it. He was a King rejected. No other Gospel has as much to say about His kingliness, or has as much to say about His rejection as King. The shadow of the rejection of the Lord is never lifted from the Gospel of Matthew. For example, before He was born, His mother was in danger of being rejected by Joseph (MAT 1:18-19). At His birth Jerusalem was troubled and Herod killed an untold number of children two years and under because Herod sought the life of baby Jesus (MAT 2:16). On the plains of Bethlehem there were no angelic choir sings, but instead mothers are weeping in anguish as their babies are being slaughtered (MAT 2:18). In fact, our Lord was hurried away, running for His life and living in the obscurity of a little no account village called Nazareth (MAT 2:23). His forerunner was thrown in a dungeon and finally beheaded (MAT 14:10). He had no where to lay His own head and His parables indicated that His kingdom would not be accepted in this age (MAT 8:20). Even in His death, He said "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me," (MAT 27:46). Those who passed by the Cross reviled and marked Him and they hired soldiers to lie even after He was dead about His resurrection (Mat 27-28). In no other Gospel is the attack upon Christ as bitter as it is in Matthew. Matthew also presents the fact that the King is returning, so in a sense it is a gospel of triumph. When you get to chapters 24 -26 you hear the fact that they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. So it's the Gospel of the revelation of the King, the rejection of the King, and finally the return of the King. In chapter one, Matthew begins by presenting the King, the King revealed, and it all begins with the family tree of Jesus. If the King is to be herald as a King, and to be believed to be a King, if He is to have any credibility at all, and if anyone is to accept the fact that He is a King, then you must start with the proof that He came from a Royal line. There was a Royal line in Israel and it came through David. In 2Sa 7, God said through the prophet Nathan to David that it would be through the loins of David that the King would come, and Who would ultimately reign in Israel and set up an eternal kingdom. That

was never fulfilled in Solomon, and so they waited for one to be born of the seed of David to fulfill the prophecy. If Jesus is to be that King, it must first of all be established that He has the right to reign because He ascends from the genealogy of Royalty.

The two lines of our Lord originated from David and Bathsheba. Their son Solomon's line, given in Matthew, ends with Joseph, the legal, but not real father of our Lord's humanity. That's because Solomon's line had the Coniah Curse, and so was cut off from being the source of the Messiah. Nathan's line, recorded for us in Luke, ends with Mary, the source of the true humanity of Christ.

In Mat:1:11-12, To Josiah were born Jeconiah [Coniah] and his brothers, at the time of the deportation to Babylon [the Babylonian captivity]. And after the deportation to Babylon, to Jeconiah [Coniah] was born She-al-tiel; and to She-al-tiel, Zerubbabel; Now, this line in Matthew is Joseph's! JER 22:28-30, "Is this man Coniah a despised, shattered jar? Or is he an undesirable vessel? Why have he and his descendants been hurled out And cast into a land that they had not known? O land, land, land, Hear the word of the Lord! Thus says the Lord, 'Write this man down childless [this means none of Coniah's sons will ever sit on the Davidic throne], A man who will not prosper in his days; For no man of his descendants will prosper Sitting on the throne of David Or ruling again in Judah.'" This is Jeconiah, the same man, so JER 22:28-30 declares the curse on Coniah.

First of all, Josiah was king; his second son, Jehoiakim, was made what they called a vassal to Nebuchadnezzar after the fourth cycle of discipline at the battle of Carchemish. A vassal was a person who held land for a dominating lord and received protection in return for homage and allegiance. Now, as a reversionist, Jehoiakim destroyed copies of Scripture, and in JER 36:29-31 his death was prophesied. His son was Coniah, who in 597 B.C. ruled for three months and ten days. He was made a prisoner for thirty-six years. So the curse of Coniah ensured that Coniah would never have a son to sit on David's throne in fulfillment of the Davidic Covenant, yet he was in the line of David. This curse was fulfilled with the virgin birth, when Joseph (from Solomon and Coniah's line) became the legal, but not the real, father of Jesus Christ. That's another reason that Matthew traces Solomon's line of the genealogy of Christ through Joseph, and Luke traces Nathan's line of genealogy of Christ through Mary (1CH 3:5; LUK 3:23-38).

So the Coniah curse, which said that he would never have a son that will be the Messiah, was fulfilled in the virgin birth, in that Joseph was not the real father of the Messiah. These are a few of the remarkable stories of how God's grace provided for us a Savior, Jesus Christ our Lord. This is why two genealogies are listed in the New Testament. If Jesus had been the real son of Joseph, He never could have sat on the throne of David. He would be under the curse, and yet He had to be the legal son of Joseph to have the right. God had to devise a plan by which He would be the legal heir of the throne, but He would not be in the line of David descending through Jeconiah or Coniah. Another fascinating principle concerning the birth of Christ. So you see one of the main reasons for the genealogy is to present the fact that this is the One who had the right to reign. It may take us a long time to unscramble the significance of the genealogy found in Matthew chapter 1, but rest assured that all the Jewish people had to do was read it, and they got the message. They knew their Old Testament. They knew the curse on Jeconiah. So Matthew is establishing that our Lord Jesus Christ had the right to be King.

MAT 1:1-17, The book [the list of names] of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. To Abraham was born Isaac; and to Isaac, Jacob; and to Jacob, Judah and his brothers; and to Judah were born Perez and Zerah by Tamar; and to Perez was born Hezron; and to Hezron, Ram; and to Ram was born Amminadab; and to Amminadab, Nahshon; and to Nahshon, Salmon; and to Salmon was born Boaz by Rahab; and to Boaz was born Obed by Ruth; and to Obed, Jesse; and to Jesse was born David the king. And to David was born Solomon by her {who had been the wife} of Uriah; and to Solomon was born Rehoboam; and to

Rehoboam, Abijah; and to Abijah, Asa; and to Asa was born Jehoshaphat; and to Jehoshaphat, Joram; and to Joram, Uzziah; and to Uzziah was born Jotham; and to Jotham, Ahaz; and to Ahaz, Hezekiah; and to Hezekiah was born Manasseh; and to Manasseh, Amon; and to Amon, Josiah; and to Josiah were born Jeconiah and his brothers, at the time of the deportation to Babylon. And after the deportation to Babylon, to Jeconiah was born Shealtiel; and to Shealtiel, Zerubbabel; and to Zerubbabel was born Abihud; and to Abihud, Eliakim; and to Eliakim, Azor; and to Azor was born Zadok; and to Zadok, Achim; and to Achim, Eliud; and to Eliud was born Eleazar; and to Eleazar, Matthan; and to Matthan, Jacob; and to Jacob was born Joseph the husband of Mary, by whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. Therefore all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David to the deportation to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the deportation to Babylon to {the time of} Christ fourteen generations.

Now, there's an emphasis in this genealogy. Think of the fact that Jesus Christ was a King. That's why we read in MAT 2:2 that the magi from the east said "Where is He who has been born King of the Jews? For we saw His star in the east, and have come to worship Him." However, the Lord wasn't a king like any other king. He was a King who ruled by grace. If you search this genealogy that we have been noting, you find grace leaking out everywhere. For example, there is grace to Mary who had the privilege of becoming the mother of the Messiah (LUK 1:30). No one knew about Mary before this. She was a sinner like all of us! She was a wonderful woman, devout, a virgin, but she was a sinner who needed a Savior. We also see the grace of the King not only in the choice of one woman, but in the seed of two men. Look at MAT 1:1 The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. He is called the son of David, the son of Abraham, both sinners. David was an adulterer, a polygamist, a murderer. Abraham who lies about his wife in Egypt and brought them both into shame, who wouldn't fight for the woman he loved. Abraham who disbelieved God and committed adultery with Hagar. Abraham lied about Sarah his wife and gave her to the king saying that she was just his sister. Two sinners, yet their seed was the Son of God! Now, that's grace!

What about their seed? What about Solomon and Isaac. Solomon, the son of David to whom David looked for the next step in this marvelous fulfillment turned out to be a tragedy. We're familiar with Solomon so very little has to be said. He destroyed the unity of Israel. He had over 300 wives and 700 concubines, but God didn't cancel His promise. His story is one of a disastrous failure, one of foolishness and folly! However, one day there came a greater son of David, the Lord Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham Who came to overcome the failures of both of those lines and their seeds and to accomplish what they could never accomplish. He came through the line of two sinners, that's grace!

Notice next, we see the grace of God in the history of three eras. In MAT 1:17 Therefore all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David to the deportation to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the deportation to Babylon to {the time of} Christ fourteen generations.

Now, the first period that Matthew mentions is the period from Abraham to David. That's the period of the patriarchs, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, of Moses and Joshua. It was that great period of heroism when Israel was made famous. It was a period of greatness. The second period, and from David to the deportation to Babylon fourteen generations; This is a period of decline. The first was a period of ascendancy, as Israel goes from non-existence in Abraham's time to fame because of it's great heroism as the judges lead the Jewish people to victory after victory. However the second period is the period of the monarchy. As soon as the monarchy came with Saul, you know what happened, things started to go down hill.

So after the glory days of David, followed by the glory days of Solomon, which led into apostasy, we have tragedy upon tragedy upon tragedy. Every once in a while you get a glimpse of a winner believer, but what dominates the landscape are the Rehoboam's and Ahaz's and Manasseh's, the Coniah's, all evil men. So its' a period of apostasy, and it's a period of degeneracy that ultimately ends up in the devastation and the destruction of Israel, and the inevitable captivity in Babylon.

The third period is strange in the that it is a period we know little about. It's a period shrouded in darkness, 600 years of dateless ness. Names we don't even know! You see, the story of Israel is the story of three era's. The genealogy of Jesus is one of glory and shame, of heroism and disgrace, of renown and obscurity. All along the way, even though the whole nation is going down the tubes until finally they curse and spit on their own Messiah, it is nevertheless, through that nation that the Messiah comes. That is grace. He is the King of grace!



# ARIZONA BIBLE CONFERENCE 2008. PSALM 23

01/18/08

Our thanks go out to the Arizona Grace Bible Church for hosting this conference and all the work that has gone into setting things up. This is first of all a Bible conference, and we are going to be fellowshiping around God's Word and we're going to do that by concentrating on a magnificent Psalm called Psalm 23.

There is this calling in all of us that won't stop its call. Sometimes people try to drown it out, but it remains. At the same time we have this nameless, formless, shadowy discontentedness. This can all be traced back to our beginning. GEN 3:8-11, They heard the sound of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden. Then the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?" He said, "I heard the sound of You in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid myself." And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?"

Fallen creatures, we think we can outrun our God, but we can't. We think we can escape the atmosphere of His justice, outrun the gravitational pull of the Lord God's love, but we can't. We have this hole in the middle of our soul that we take with us on our runaway journey. ECC 3:11 "He has made everything appropriate in its time. He has also set eternity in their heart, yet so that man will not find out the work which God has done from the beginning even to the end." We have almost everything in place, or so we think, except for that one thing we lack, that one desire we can't seem to fill, and we run and run. Just like Solomon, we try sex, drugs, fame, family, money, college and career, pleasure and parties, every kind of private indulgences, but nothing does the trick. We arrive places, but we never rest. Where has all the hustling, jostling, lusting, fighting, gotten us? Why do we feel so empty and uneasy and sad? Like a child that has opened a dozen presents, and the wanting remains an empty box, we wonder if that is all there is. It's not that we're greedy; it is just that something has been promised that we've not yet received.

The problem is that most people, Christians included, live their lives as sheep without a Shepherd. This simply means that whether they know it or not, they put themselves under the domination of the no-good shepherd. By using the word "we" it is meant as a description of the human condition apart from the shepherding of Christ, each of us must decide for yourself how much of this applies to you! So, we keep running away, farther and farther into the dark nights. More and more of the land is parched, dry and lifeless. Still we wander, still we search. We somehow can't outrun the nighttime Caller. We know that voice, He knows our name. There is a search and rescue mission, it is searching for us. The truth is that we are lost and Someone is searching for us. LUK 19:10 "For the Son of Man has come to seek and to save that which was lost." We must be pretty important to Him, we must have something that is valuable to Him, it's like He has to get us and bring us back into His fold like we're His property or something. We're like a wounded sheep bleeding and running for help, clueless that the Shepherd is running in the night behind us, calling out to us. The one thing that has never occurred to us is to simply stop. We are going on a journey and it takes place in Psalm 23. This is perhaps the most recognized and beloved Psalm in the Bible. That is both good and bad. The bad is that we think we know it inside and out. We perhaps have even memorized it, and we think that because we can recite it we have conquered it. However, Psalm 23 is more than a lesson to be learned, it is a place to live. It is a poem you can lie down in. If someone were to ask you very simply and directly, "What is God like?" What would you tell them? The default answer may well be to lead such a questioner to the attributes of God. We could tell them that God is sovereign, that He is just, righteous, loving, and all powerful. All this would be true. All would be profitable. Yet there comes a time when

something else entirely is called for. Psalm 23 was David's something else entirely as the answer to the question "What is God like?" David's answer: "The Lord is my Shepherd" We are going to look at this Psalm, and emerge with a fresh answer to that single question: "What is the Lord like?" Along the way, we'll find that being with the Shepherd also tells us a lot about what we are like as well. We're going to explore some isagogics to find out what it meant to be a shepherd in the ancient Near East. If you follow along you will end the journey refreshed, rested, and more in love than ever with the Shepherd King who bought you with His blood, and taps His foot waiting for you to let Him fill your cup to overflowing.

Let's read the Psalm from start to finish. It's Hebrew poetry, so let's enjoy it as poetry from the Lord. PSA 23:1-6, A Psalm of David. The Lord is my shepherd, I shall not want. He makes me lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside quiet waters. He restores my soul; He guides me in the paths of righteousness For His name's sake. Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I fear no evil, for You are with me; Your rod and Your staff, they comfort me. You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; My cup overflows. Surely goodness and lovingkindness will follow me all the days of my life, And I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever.

Psalm 23 was written during the Absalom revolution, when David had fled from Absalom. David had really high highs, and really low lows. He killed the giant Goliath and became an instant hero. He became a powerful and successful king. However, he also watched his newborn baby die. Watched as two of his sons turned against him and tried to steal his throne (Absalom and Adonijah). At one point in his life, David lived as Public Enemy #1 for ten years. Absalom plotted to overthrow his father by cunning and charisma, and nearly succeeded (2SA 5:14). David had lost everything when he fled. Every phrase in this psalm 23 has a remarkable statement of David's deployment of the problem solving devices. This is particularly a psalm of grace orientation. David realized that believers had been distracted by prosperity. There are two great metaphors in this psalm: The shepherd and the sheep (verses 1-4) and the host and the guest (verses 5-6). The number two plays a prominent role in this psalm, and this serves to emphasize relationship between two who are utterly unlike one another, and yet enjoy sweet fellowship.

The Psalm begins and ends with Yahweh-the Lord. There is a switch from the third person "He" to the second person "You" in verses 4 and 5. As is commonly the case with Hebrew poetry, there is parallelism or couplets, meaning there are pairs of lines that go together. Finally, on the subject of structure, the 23rd Psalm is a perfect construction of the faith rest drill. Verse 1 claims a Biblical promise. The Lord is my shepherd, I shall not want. Verses 2-5 adopt a Biblical rationale that expounds on the promise. Verse 6 draws a doctrinal conclusion that solves the problem. Surely goodness and lovingkindness will follow me all the days of my life, And I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever.

Psalm 23 is of course between Psalm 22 and Psalm 24. It turns out that each of these 3 Psalms portrays a different work of the Lord Jesus Christ for His people. It is not really a stretch to say that for the Church, Psalm 22 is in the past, Psalm 23 is about the present, and Psalm 24 is about the future. Psalm 22 is about the Suffering Servant Savior. Psalm 24 is about the Conquering King who will come. Psalm 23 is about the Shepherd King at the Right Hand of the Father. Look at Psalm 22:1, "My God, my God, why have You forsaken me? Far from my deliverance are the words of my groaning."

Psalm 22 sketches a prophetic picture of the death of the Savior on the Cross. David looks down across the hills of future centuries and sees the hill of Calvary with the suffering Messiah hanging on a tree. Psa 22 therefore deals with JOH 10:11 "I am the good shepherd; the good shepherd lays down His life for the sheep." We need to understand what happened at the Cross before we can really benefit from the provision of the Risen Shepherd. It is only after we have read, "My God, my God, why have You forsaken Me!" that we come to "The LORD is my shepherd." We must by experience know

the value of the blood-shedding, and see the sword pierce the Chief Shepherd, before we can truly come to appreciate the sweetness of the good Shepherd's care. The cup of the Cross that Christ drank made it possible for the cup of overflowing blessing with our name on it.

Psalm 23 deals with what the writer of Hebrews describes to be the great shepherd resurrected for the sheep. HEB 13:20-21, Now the God of peace, who brought up from the dead the great Shepherd of the sheep through the blood of the eternal covenant, even Jesus our Lord, equip you in every good thing to do His will, working in us that which is pleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be the glory forever and ever. Amen. Psalm 24 tells of the chief Shepherd who will return to reward those who care for the sheep, as promised in 1Pe 5. This is a passage that should be closely examined by any man who has the gift of pastor-teacher. 1PE 5:1-4, "Therefore, I exhort the elders among you, as your fellow elder and witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker also of the glory that is to be revealed, shepherd the flock of God among you, exercising oversight not under compulsion, but voluntarily, according to the will of God; and not for sordid gain, but with eagerness; nor yet as lording it over those allotted to your charge, but proving to be examples to the flock. And when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the unfading crown of glory." If you are born again and saved, you have already put your trust in Jesus Christ as the Savior presented in Psalm 22. You may even be looking forward to His return as the King of Psalm 24. But will you experience the joy and rest of the present work of the Shepherd King on your behalf, as described in Psalm 23?

We don't have the time to see all of the Hebrew so we will look at a bit of a corrected translation here: PSA 23:1, "A song of David. The Lord [Jesus Christ] is the one who keeps on shepherding me; I cannot lack anything." The corrected translation clearly tells us that the Lord not only has the position of my Shepherd; He is also actively shepherding us: ruling and guiding and caring for and protecting us. You also have the believer in the relationship choosing to submit to the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ and appreciate the grace. We see right away two additional things that are noteworthy: First, we are told that the author is David. Secondly, David tells us that the Lord is his shepherd. So David answers our question right away. "What is the Lord like? David tells us his answer, He directs my life. He provides for me. He rescues me. He keeps me on the right paths. I am like a sheep, and so the Lord, He's my Shepherd." The trouble with us is that we have no idea what calling the Lord a shepherd would have stirred up in the heart of a Jew living in David's time or the Lord's time for that matter. However, Psa 23 is not some cute poem. It's not at all easy to understand, particular for 21st century Americans living in urban or suburban culture. To appreciate the scenery 3,000 years ago and half a world away we are going to need some help to appreciate the power and significance of David's words: "The Lord is my shepherd." To do this, we need to travel back in time see what it meant to be a shepherd in the Ancient Near East in the times David lived. We call that Isagogics, examining the historical setting in which the scripture was written.

So we are reading a psalm of David, and so first we ought to see a little bit about who David was. David was the greatest king that Israel ever had in the Old Testament. As a youth, David had served as a shepherd (1SA 16:12-14). Here we see God's grace policy in the promotion of David. It turns out that being a shepherd apparently was not for the faint of heart (1SA 17:32-37). All the victories David had were rehearsals for the Goliath crisis and David beginning to fulfill his personal sense of destiny. What is your attitude toward any of those rehearsals in life? LUK 16:10 "He who is faithful in a very little thing is faithful also in much;" David miserably failed even after discovering his personal sense of destiny. In 1SA 21:1-10 David willfully sinned and lied and because of his lie the entire city of Nob was destroyed by King Saul and wiped out, eighty-five priests were murdered because of David's lie. In 1SA 21:11-18, he faked madness and made the enemy believe he was crazy, and as a result hundreds died. Thousands were killed in battle because David pretended to be crazy in the city of Gath. In 2SA 6:1-13, he did not honor the word of God. David failed in his responsibility as the King in 2SA 11:1. He should have led his troops in battle but he stayed home in Jerusalem and as a result there was

unnecessary disaster on the battlefield even though they won. While he was in Jerusalem in 2SA 11:2-27, he ended up in certain shocking sins. He committed adultery, got a man drunk, had him killed, and willfully lied. In 1Ch 21, David rejected the promises of God and even questioned the faithfulness of God. Joab, his chief of staff, warned him about this unbelief, but he did it anyway, and as a result 70,000 people died! Of course we have his failure to forgive completely his son Absalom. David had character and integrity, but he also failed miserably at times. There were many times that David worshiped God with all of his heart, soul, mind and strength. He was a man bursting with life and vitality. He loved God and he openly admitted his faults. When tragedy occurred, and it looked as if David and his men would never see their loved ones again, David did not cover it all up. Instead, he wept, and then he strengthened himself in the Lord (ISA 30:1-6). David had two wives, in addition to that he will have at least ten mistresses and will take on more wives mentioned in 2SA 5:13, and polygamy was forbidden by the Word of God in David's day (DEU 17:14-17). David made mistakes, he had trouble with his children, he expressed his pain, fear, confusion, and anger with frankness and honesty to the Lord. So, what was God's verdict on such a passionate expression of humanity? ACT 13:22 "And after He had removed him, He raised up David to be their king, concerning whom He also testified and said, 'I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after My heart, who will do all My will.'" David's faith in God was deep, yet he was also deeply flawed. His sins were usually as visible as his victories, but he repented, and came back to the God he served and loved. Indeed, David was open and human as few leaders in history have ever been. That is why David's story speaks to us. It invites all of us, as suffering sinners to listen to his story, to discover fresh hope and see that in fulfilling our personal sense of destiny we should not get shocked by our sins and failures. God never gave up on David and He never gives up on us either. David's years of toiling with the flocks of his father Jesse were great training for his eventual task of shepherding God's flock, the nation Israel.

Back in Psalm 23: 1 "A song of David. The Lord [Jesus Christ] is the one who keeps on shepherding me, I cannot lack anything." Since David was a shepherd in his early days, we might be tempted to start interpreting this Psalm from the perspective of the shepherd. However, the vantage point of this Psalm is not that of the shepherd, but rather of the sheep! David compares himself to a creature that is weak, defenseless, and foolish. He takes the Lord to be his Provider, Preserver, Director, and in the end, his Everything. The Lord allowed David to describe Him in terms of the office and character of a shepherd. The shepherd lived with his flock. The shepherd was everything to the sheep, guide, physician, and protector. Many of God's men in the Old Testament were shepherds. In addition to David, we have Abel, and Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and Joseph and his brothers, and Moses, to name just a few. GEN 48:15 He [Jacob] blessed Joseph, and said, " The God before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac walked, The God who has been my shepherd all my life to this day," Flocks were a tremendous store of wealth in the times of the Bible. When Abraham left Ur and took on a nomadic form of life, he would have turned his wealth into flocks and herds so that his wealth could travel with him. The sheep provided wool, meat, and horn containers. The shepherd had a very demanding and dangerous job. In the springtime, after the winter rains, there was plenty of pasturage near the village. However, when summer arrived, they had to seek whatever dried grass remained under the hot sun. The shepherd constantly sought out sources of fresh grass with a water supply nearby. When surface water had dried out, it was necessary to use well water for the sheep. The sheep need constant protection because there were plenty of dangers to the flock from the wild animals. Think of Samson scraping honey out of the carcass of a lion (JUD 14:8), and the 2 bears that killed the 42 juvenile delinquents who had made fun of Elisha (2KI 2:24). It was well understood that a shepherd might not return alive from his season of shepherding. Being killed by a wild beast while defending his flock was a commonly accepted occupational hazard of the shepherd profession. It was not a random statement that our Lord made when He said the Good Shepherd had to give his life for the sheep: JOH 10:11 "I am the good shepherd; the good shepherd lays down His life for the sheep." The Lord Jesus Christ is

the shepherd to all who believe in Him.” You become a sheep under the policy of grace by means of personal faith in Jesus Christ. You come into this relationship with God totally apart from any merit. John 10:12-15, “He who is a hired hand, and not a shepherd, who is not the owner of the sheep, sees the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep and flees, and the wolf snatches them and scatters them. He flees because he is a hired hand and is not concerned about the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and I know My own and My own know Me, even as the Father knows Me and I know the Father; and I lay down My life for the sheep.”

Here you have this wonderful picture of the shepherd Jesus laying down His life for the flocks of His Father, as David fought bears for Jesse’s sheep. As David was anointed king, so the Father would proclaim Jesus to be the King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

The shepherd had to fight back, because he had to make good any losses to the owners. Any hired help that the shepherd might have brought on did not have the same kind of commitment. JOH 10:27-30, “My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me; and I give eternal life to them, and they will never perish; and no one will snatch them out of My hand. My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of the Father’s hand. I and the Father are one.”

The shepherd was expected to count the sheep, one by one, calling each by its own name, both morning and evening, for he had to render an accounting for any that were missing. The shepherd would name each sheep, and it was usually derived from the personality or character of that individual (JOH 10:1-3).

The shepherd was acquainted with all their ways, their peculiarities, their characteristic marks, their tendencies, their idiosyncrasies. For the most part, the shepherd’s long days and nights in the field made for a lonely life. He would talk to his sheep each day to pass the time, and it came about that they all learned to recognize his voice. It was only by this close daily contact with the shepherd that the sheep learned to trust only this one who would protect and care for them. JOH 10:5 “A stranger they simply will not follow, but will flee from him, because they do not know the voice of strangers.”

When you keep in mind that Jesus Christ is the shepherd of the Father’s flock, passages like JOH 17:12 take on a new edge: “While I was with them, I was keeping them in Your name which You have given Me; and I guarded them and not one of them perished but the son of perdition, so that the Scripture would be fulfilled.”

Shepherds also had to provide shelter, medication, aid in lambing time, and provision for lameness and weariness. Without the shepherd, the sheep were helpless and in mortal danger (MAT 9:35-36). To protect himself and his flock from harm, the shepherd had weapons. He carried a heavy club, and this is what Psa 23 calls a “rod.” It was a heavy weapon, and had flints or nails embedded in it to make for a more potent defense. The rod was a weapon to ward off beasts. The shepherd was also equipped with a staff, which was not primarily a weapon although it was used as such on occasion. The staff was about six feet long and sometimes had a crook at the end of it that was used to extricate the sheep from perilous places or to restrain them from wandering away. It was normally used to help the shepherd get around easily in hilly or rough country. When the sheep were passing through a narrow entry, as for example when they entered the sheepfold at night, they were counted in under the rod or staff. When the sheep was tired or sick, the shepherd carried it on his shoulders. When it was lost, the shepherd went to search for it, which happened a lot. Look at how ISA 53:6 puts it, “All of us like sheep have gone astray, Each of us has turned to his own way; But the Lord has caused the iniquity of us all To fall on Him.”

This is the scene evoked by our Lord when He told the cold hearted Pharisees that parable concerning the lost sheep (LUK 15:1-7). Often friends with their flocks would meet at a watering spot, and would keep watch at night. When they parted there was no difficulty in separating the animals,

for each knew its own shepherd's call. At night the shepherd gathered his sheep to a safe place called a fold where he kept watch. The fold offered protection against beasts, thieves, and the cold. On occasion the shepherd would lay down across the only opening to the fold, effectively becoming a door for the sheep (JOH 10:7-10). The criminal practice of the day was to climb over the wall, slaughter as many sheep as possible before detection, and throw them to accomplices outside. Shepherding was serious, demanding, and strenuous work. Nevertheless, the true or faithful shepherd was thought to have a disposition that was thoughtful, tender, gentle, strong, resourceful in times of danger, but not hot-tempered. Ordinarily he led the sheep.

*PSA 23:2-3, "He makes me lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside quiet waters. He restores my soul; He guides me in the paths of righteousness For His name's sake."*

There might be under-shepherds who followed the flock to encourage the weary and aid the heavy-laden as well as the newborn lambs. Interestingly, the Greek word for pastor in EPH 4:11 is *poimenas*, which comes from a root word meaning to protect. It means a herdsman, especially a shepherd. This is the picture Isaiah gives of our Lord who is our Good Shepherd: ISA 40:10-11, "Behold, the Lord God will come with might, With His arm ruling for Him. Behold, His reward is with Him And His recompense before Him. Like a shepherd He will tend His flock, In His arm He will gather the lambs And carry them in His bosom; He will gently lead the nursing ewes." What an illustration of the Lord's compassion for His people. What is the Lord like? He is like the good shepherd who never left his sheep alone or uncared for. They (we) are lost without Him. His presence is their assurance. The very fact that the Almighty Creator King would assume toward His people the office and character of a shepherd ought to give us a sense of awe and overwhelming gratitude. It is a supreme act of grace that God allows Himself to be compared to this keeper of flocks. This was after all a job for the poor and simple. Shepherds were servants, giving care to animals. This is how the Lord chooses to depict His own great love and care for His children.

A sheep is an object of property, not a wild animal. Its owner considers it valuable, and frequently it is bought with a substantial price (1CO 6:19-20). There is an unassuming confidence about the phrase "The Lord is my shepherd." There is no sometimes or hopefully, no ifs ands or buts about it. Our Shepard is Yahweh, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, He is the Lord Jesus Christ, He is the Creator of all things visible and invisible. This is the pulse of excitement that runs throughout Psalm 23. David is saying that he (and us as believers) are but a mere speck of matter in an infinite universe, and incredibly enough, Christ, the Creator of all this magnificence, has no problem at all calling Himself his (and our) Shepherd!

The sweetest word in verse 1 has to be the two letters "my"! David did not write "The Lord is the shepherd of everyone in the world, and leads forth the multitudes as his flock, but rather, "The Lord is MY Shepherd" and He cares for ME. He watches over ME, and preserves ME. That relationship is personal! We should look at this like David, personally, the shepherd actually took on the lot of a lamb, God became man, to do this for me. He knows me by name. He knows every hair on my head. He knows my comings and my goings, my secret faults and innermost thoughts (LUK 12:6-7). He marked me as His on the very day I first believed. He inspects me every night to make sure that no harm has come to me. If I run away, if I make by bed in the most awful filth, He is going to come after me and won't rest until He finds me and brings me back to safety. What a deal! There is a challenge for each of us: Have we exchanged our stubborn insistence on being the captain of our soul for the satisfying adventure of following Him? LUK 9:23-24, "And He was saying to them all, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross daily and follow Me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake, he is the one who will save it."

PSA 23:2 "He causes me to lie down in pastures of choice grass; He leads me to waters of refreshment." This is life support for the sheep. Lying down in pastures of choice grass is a picture of tranquility that results from using the three spiritual skills for learning doctrine. The three spiritual

skills are: 1) The Filling of the Holy Spirit. 2) The perception, metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine. 3) The deployment of the ten problem solving devices. The phrase makes me lie down is the English translation of the Hebrew word *rabats* in the Hiphil imperfect stem. It represents the subject as causing an object to participate indirectly as a second subject in the action of the verb. Here the Lord Jesus Christ causes the event of David, and by extension us, lying down in the pastures. Like the green pastures the good shepherd can always find for his flock, Bible doctrine, the mind of Christ, is always fresh, rich, and never exhausted. When we believe in the promises of the Bible, we are like the sheep that lie down in the middle of the pasture. We find at that moment both rest and refreshment. It is the Lord who graciously enables us to perceive the preciousness of His truth, and to feed upon it. So we ought to have gratitude for the ability, for example, to appropriate the promises of God! The green pastures represent the Word of God, the truth of Bible doctrine, which is the perfect food for our souls, just as tender grass is natural nutrition for sheep. When the Lord entreated Peter to feed His sheep 3 times, He was commanding Peter to preach the word, in season and out of season. The choice grass for the Church-age believer includes the unique mystery doctrines. Being led to waters of refreshment refers to the application of doctrine to your life. Metabolized doctrine circulating in your stream of consciousness is your spiritual refreshment. God the Holy Spirit teaches us how to apply doctrine. There are many things about sheep that correlate with humans magnificently. Sheep require endless attention and meticulous care, more than any other class of livestock. It is no accident that God has chosen to call us sheep. The behavior of sheep and human beings is similar in many respects. Our mob instincts, our fears and timidity, our stubbornness and stupidity, and our perverse habits are all parallels that are both uncanny and a little bit unsettling! Yet despite all that, Our Lord Jesus Christ chose us, bought us, calls us by name, makes us His own, and delights in caring for us. The strange thing about sheep is that because of their make up, it's almost impossible for them to lie down and rest unless certain requirements are met. There must be a complete sense of freedom from fear, tension, aggravations and hunger. Only the shepherd can establish these conditions for their benefit. As long as there is the slightest hint of possible danger, the sheep stay standing, ready to flee for their lives. They have little or no means of self-defense. When one startled sheep starts to run, a dozen others will follow it. See any parallels with human flocks? A flock that is restless, discontented, always agitated and disturbed never does well, and the same is true of people. The one thing that settles and reassures the sheep is the sight of their shepherd with them in the field. The most courageous sheep in the world would be easy prey for the tiniest wolf. Sheep also need the shepherd to protect them from rivalry and cruelty within the flock itself. Sheep have what is called the butting order. It establishes the rank between sheep, who's the boss and so forth down the line. A domineering ewe will keep her position by butting and driving other ewes away from the best grazing areas. Ezekiel actually gives an accurate picture of this in EZE 34:15-16 and Eze 34: 20-22. Again, the sight of the shepherd puts a stop to most of the butting and fighting. That was the whole gist of the Lord washing the feet of the disciples the night before He went to the Cross. The disciples were head butting to see who would be the greatest until Jesus came in and tended to His sheep and put an end to the nonsense. PSA 23:2 "He makes me lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside quiet waters [or waters of refreshment and comfort]. The still waters refer to the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the believer. Sheep require a consistent amount of water. However unlike other animals they are totally dependent on their shepherd to find this water. The human soul thirsts as well. The soul of the unbeliever thirsts for the convincing ministry of the God the Holy Spirit that makes Gospel information understandable. The soul of the believer thirsts for the water of the filling of the Spirit. JOH 7:37-38, Now on the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, "If anyone is thirsty, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture said, 'From his innermost being will flow rivers of living water.'" Thirsty souls can only be fully satisfied when their thirst for the spiritual life is quenched by drawing on the water from Christ. Under the principle

of logistical grace, God provides the quiet waters which we need to survive. He provides the Comforter, God the Holy Spirit, as our true mentor and teacher. The still waters are plural, indicating the many functions the Holy Spirit performs to refresh our souls. The Holy Spirit makes the Bible understandable to us. He provides divine guidance and direction. He performs cleansing and refreshment, and consolation. He convicts us, and inspires us. The filling of the Holy Spirit is the water that is needed to digest the food of Bible doctrine.

PSA 23:3 "He restores my soul; He guides me in the paths of righteousness because of His reputation." One of the wonderful things about Psa 23 and Joh 10 is the revelation that the God-man Jesus Christ is our Shepherd. We tend to think that when we fall, God is angry with us and is disgusted, waiting for us to make it up to Him. In reality, the Lord has the same concern and compassion for cast men and women as the shepherd has for cast sheep. We see this in the life of Jesus, where he was so kind to the down-and-out people He met. He wept over those who rejected Him. LUK 19:10 "For the Son of Man has come to seek and to save that which was lost." This is the principle of being renewed and refreshed through recovering from sin and its effects. Having the soul restored simply means that even though we are in the care of the good shepherd, we do have times when we need restoration. The healing and the restoration provided for the Church-age believer are much greater than what David received. It is the removal of guilt, the restoration of the filling of the Spirit, the recovery of fellowship with God, and the forward progress of the spiritual life. David had the problem solving device of rebound, but he did not have the 100% availability of the power source of the filling of the Holy Spirit. Nor did he have the opportunity to live the unique spiritual life that our Lord pioneered for us in His first Advent. Jesus Christ is revealed to us as the One shining forth from the Father. He came to answer the same question we posed at the beginning of this conference: What is God like? PSA 23:3 "He restores my soul; He guides me in the paths of righteousness For His name's sake." Grace depends on God's reputation not ours. The paths of righteousness speak of the pre-designed plan of God designed for us in eternity past.

Notice all the principles that we have so far: In verse 1, the Lord from logistical grace provides everything that we need so that we have no wants. In verse 2, He provides provisions for us that cause us to rest. In verse 3, He provides for us rebound for restoration and a pre-designed plan to live in. Paths of righteousness may lead to places that many would rather not visit - like the death-shadowed valley.

PSA 23:4 "In addition to this, when I walk through a death-shadowed valley, I cannot fear evil [the manner of dying]; because You are with me; Your rod and your staff, they comfort me." The personal pronouns "I" and "You" now enter the poem. This means we are about to have more intimacy and deep affection with our Lord. In verses 1-3, David had been talking about the Shepherd. Now he speaks directly to the Shepherd. He had been praising the Lord, and now He is praying to Him. The valley of deep darkness to a shepherd meant a chasm among the hills, a deep, abrupt, faintly lighted ravine with steep, jagged sides, and a narrow floor. It was a dangerous place for sheep. Yet the valley too, with all its dangers and shadows, is still part of the shepherd's plan for the sheep. It is so often in the valleys of our lives that we find the sweetest refreshment and fellowship alone with God. Under the principle of logistical grace, it is comforting to know that the Lord knows all about the difficulties and dangers that we will ever face in this life. Shepherds would not take their flock where they had not already been themselves. This is why no matter what we face in life, the comfort of logistical grace allows us to say I will not fear for You are with me. He is with us in every situation and let me reiterate, not as a blessing but as a manifestation of His logistical grace. To walk indicates the steady advance of a soul which knows its road, knows its destiny, resolves to follow the path, feels quite safe and secure, and therefore perfectly cool, calm and collected. He is with us in every dark trial, every disappointment, every distressing dilemma. This is all a part of logistical grace support.



The Lord has also provided dying grace. The shadow represents your dying. No two death-shadowed valleys are the same. Some are very short and sudden, some are long and twisting. But the same grace principle applies to all believers. The dying believer is not walking in the valley, but through the valley. We go through the dark tunnel of death and emerge into the light of immortality. Death is merely a shadow. Jesus Christ has conquered death.

Where there is a shadow, there must be light somewhere nearby. Death stands by the side of the highway in which we have to travel, and the light of God's word shining on death throws a shadow across our path. God picks the time, the manner and the place of your dying, so you don't have to worry about it. In fact, for those who have been consistent in the perception, metabolization, and application of doctrine, dying is the dessert of life, that time of ultimate blessing. So PSA 23:4 is David applying dying grace, occupation with Christ, and a personal sense of destiny to the problem of death or disaster. This is the unique joy of the believer. The fear principle points to the sin unto death.

PSA 23:4-5, In addition to this, when I walk through a death-shadowed valley, I cannot fear evil [the manner of dying]; because You are with me; Your rod [divine discipline] and your staff [divine deliverance], they comfort me. You have prepared a table in front of me for my benefit in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup overflows." In verse 5 we have the hospitality metaphor. Jesus Christ is the host, and David is the guest. This is logistical grace right in the presence of our enemies. The mature believer always has hostile enemies. No one who consistently follows Lord Jesus Christ will avoid this (JOH 15:18-21). To sit as a guest at the table of a host was to be assured of food, housing, fellowship, and protection. PSA 23:5 "You have anointed my head with oil; My cup overflows." In the East, people frequently anointed their visitors with an expensive fragrant oil or perfume, and gave them a cup or glass of choice wine, which they would be careful to fill until it ran over. The anointing with oil was a sign of love and respect; the overflowing cup said that while they remained there, they would have an abundance of everything. The anointing of the head with oil is a sign of promotion. Many times promotion comes from logistical grace. The antagonism and conspiracy of David's enemies cannot cancel, destroy, or remove God's promotion of David. God's promotion of you is based on your spiritual life and cannot be canceled by the antagonism of others. You can destroy yourself, but the conspiracy of others cannot remove God's promotion. Your promotion is related to what is in your soul, and your enemies cannot take that away from you. If God does not promote you, you are not promoted. You are not promoted because of what others think of you.

PSA 23:6 "Surely goodness [prosperity from our escrow blessings] and lovingkindness [grace] will follow me all the days of my life, And I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever." As long as you live, logistical grace will pursue you. You will never be a day without logistical grace. The Lord is the One shepherding me. He is working hard to bring me somewhere. He is leading, providing, protecting, restoring, comforting, promoting, blessing and beckoning on this journey to somewhere. He is leading me to my destiny of becoming a spiritually mature believer. I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever. He is leading me to a great forever after. Spiritual maturity. Escrow blessings for time. Dying grace. Escrow blessings for eternity.

# THE NEW RACIAL SPECIES AND THE NEW SPIRITUAL SPECIES IN THE ANGELIC CONFLICT.

01/27/08

We have been looking at the roles of the new racial species and the new spiritual species in the angelic conflict. This conflict began when Satan, who was created perfect as the highest of all angels and the guardian of God's throne, became absorbed with himself. So, from this perfection came unrighteousness by choosing to be independent from God.

*EZE 28:14-16, "You were the anointed cherub who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire. You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created, until unrighteousness was found in you. By the abundance of your trade you were internally filled with violence, and you sinned; Therefore I have cast you as profane From the mountain of God. I have destroyed you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire."*

The cherub's name was changed to Satan, which means accuser, and he was sentenced to the lake of fire to be forever separated from God (MAT 25:41). Since the lake of fire was prepared for the devil and the fallen angels, and the fact that they will not be put there until the end of human history, we conclude that a trial is taking place in which God has allowed Satan, to appeal his case.

We know that God has allowed this so that His Righteousness, Justice, Love, and Grace could be revealed to all His creatures to the fullest. This trial is not unlike the system of jurisprudence that God gave to Israel, and the same one that our nation attempts to follow today. Unfortunately, our system has been corrupted by evil men with power.

A trial, under God's system of jurisprudence has three phases, and can only be concluded on the basis of two or three witnesses. There is the **formal presentation** of the case where the prosecution presents its case, followed by the defense presenting its case. We have seen that the formal presentation of Satan's appeal trial corresponds to Old Testament history with the Jews as a race and Israel as a nation as the center of the conflict. Next is the **rebuttal phase** where the rebuttal arguments of the prosecution [God] is followed by those of the defense [Satan]. Evidence and arguments are offered by both sides. The rebuttal phase of the prosecution is coterminous with the two Christocentric dispensations, the Hypostatic-union, and the Church-age. Dispensations are Divine categories of human history. Dispensations are the vehicle by which believers living at a specific time in history can orient to God's will, plan, and purpose for their lives. God's plan is not the same, in fact quite different for every dispensation. Again, there are only two dispensations or periods of time in human history where Christ lives inside of man, the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union and the Church-age. These two dispensations are when God presents His case and reveals His Justice and Righteousness and Love to the fullest. His Justice is revealed by His fairness in dealing with the fall of mankind and by judging sin and continuing to forgive sin after the use of 1Jn 1:9.

His Righteousness is revealed by the fact that He was willing to forsake His own Son while judging sin and continuing to impute His perfect Righteousness to anyone who will believe in Christ as their Savior. His Love is revealed by the fact that He offered salvation to anyone who would believe upon the Lord Jesus Christ and that He continues to deal with His creatures in amazing grace. This also means that there are two categories of main witnesses for the prosecution. Our Lord, and the invisible heroes of the Church-age. Although only two witnesses are needed, a third is added by God, Christian marriage. This is not to mean that Old Testament heroes were not witnesses, they were as we have seen in HEB 12:1, but they are not the main witnesses. Remember that the laws of evidence found in the Bible demand investigation of each accusation. Legitimate evidence is based on two or three

witnesses being interrogated independently and agreeing to their testimony. Finally comes the **closing argument and summary**, first by the prosecution [God] and then by the defense [Satan].

Let's look at each phase of the trial and the role of the new racial species and the new spiritual species in more detail. Phase 1: The trial phase. This begins with the fall of man in the garden and continues until the beginning of the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union. During this period of time, God has called upon the new racial species, the Jew to bring glory to Him. This is why in Heb 11, God's hall of fame for the Old Testament believers we have such a list of witnesses. These ones by means of doctrine resident in their soul, who conquered kingdoms. Because of their spiritual preparation, they performed acts of righteousness or justice, they gained what was promised; they shut the mouths of lions, quenched the power of fire with the Word of God, they successfully evaded the destructive power of the sword, from weakness they were made strong, became mighty in war, put foreign armies to flight. Women received back their dead by resurrection; and others were tortured, not accepting their release, in order that they might obtain a better resurrection; and others experienced mockings and scourgings, chains and imprisonment.

These Old Testament heroes understood why God created them, and why they were here. They were promoted or approved by God, but they must wait for their promised rewards until the Church receives hers. HEB 11:39 *And all these, having gained approval through their faith, did not receive what was promised*, None of these who obtained Divine commendation because of the doctrine in their souls has yet obtained the ultimate promise, the blessings that follow resurrection life. Yet in the second phase of the trial, the **rebuttal phase**, God will create a creature, a new spiritual species that will have the opportunity to enjoy the resurrection life in time.

After the formal trial, God turns up the heat for the rebuttal phase, and brings in His star witness, the Lord Jesus Christ, and millions of His true witnesses, whose lives will attest to His Righteousness, Justice, Love, and Grace. It's not just hearing the word of God, although that is a most important and necessary step, but its application of the mystery doctrine that we have that will exalt us to the high calling of true witnesses. God has a plan so gracious that He will not begin His closing arguments in the angelic conflict until the true worshippers of God are called to the witness stand to prove to elect and fallen angels, that His Righteousness, Justice, Love, and Grace are not only pure and true, but go beyond what anyone ever thought possible. So, in our main passage in Rom 9 Paul is pleading with his countrymen, the Jews, to understand that the formal trial is over, that the star witness, their Messiah, the One they have been waiting for, has come and defeated all enemies That the Jews who live in the Church-age should stop living in the Mosaic Law, believe on Jesus Christ as their Messiah, and move into the rebuttal phase with the mystery doctrine of the Church, and become the greater witnesses.

Phase two of the trial was hidden from the Old Testament saints. They missed the fact that was presented to them over and over again that the Messiah must die first. The Cross must come before the crown and that salvation would come to the Gentiles. They should have known this, it was shown to them, but they were too earthly minded. They wanted deliverance into the Millennial kingdom rather than the most important deliverance which is from the bondage of the slave market of sin.

In Act 13 Paul and Barnabas present the Gospel to the Jews and the Gentiles at Antioch, and interestingly it was at Antioch not long before this that the term Christian was first coined for believers in the Church-age. As the Church begins, and is growing like wildfire; the **rebuttal trial** of the angelic conflict begins.

*ACT 13:44-52, And the next Sabbath nearly the whole city assembled to hear the word of God. But when the Jews saw the crowds, they were filled with jealousy, and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul, and were blaspheming. And Paul and Barnabas spoke out boldly and said, "It was necessary that the word of God should be spoken to you first; since you repudiate it, and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, behold, we are turning to the Gentiles. For thus the Lord has commanded us [ISA 49:6], 'I have placed You as a light for the Gentiles, That You should bring*

*salvation to the end of the earth.” And when the Gentiles heard this, they began rejoicing and glorifying the word of the Lord; and as many as had been appointed to eternal life believed. And the word of the Lord was being spread through the whole region. But the Jews aroused the devout women of prominence and the leading men of the city, and instigated a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out of their district. But they shook off the dust of their feet in protest against them and went to Iconium. And the disciples were continually filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.*

It was not as though the Jews were losing anything. They were invited into the Church-age first, even before the Gentiles, but they were arrogant as God’s people. Yet the Gentiles rejoiced at the good news.

So in our passage in Heb 11, the Old Testament believers will not receive their resurrection bodies before us! Though they preceded us chronologically in history, the Church-age believer will precede them in resurrection. This is the plan and the grace of God!

Again HEB 11:40 *because God had provided something better for us, so that apart from us they should not be made perfect.* There's no chapter break in the original language so HEB 12:1 says *Therefore, since we have so great a cloud of witnesses surrounding us,* The Greek word for witnesses is *martus* which means a witness in a legal sense to testify as eyewitnesses or a character reference for one being questioned. This does not mean that they can see us now, or are watching us, but that they, the visible heroes of the Old Testament were successful witnesses in the formal trial of the angelic conflict. It also refers to those, who after our Lord's example, have proved the strength and genuineness of their faith in Christ by undergoing suffering or even death. They are not mere witnesses, but testifiers who prove by their own life and experience the impeccable character and nature of God.

So in HEB 12:1 *Therefore, since we have so great a cloud of witnesses* [Old Testament winners from the new racial species, the Jew] *surrounding us, let us* [New Testament spiritual species, the church] *also lay aside every encumbrance, and the sin which so easily entangles us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us,*

Isn't it interesting that the writer of the book of Hebrews, a book written to the Jews of the Church-age, now identifies a transition of witnesses from the Old Testament racial species to the New Testament spiritual species. The Greek word for endurance is *hupomone* meaning to dwell under, a patient steadfast waiting for. The believer must keep on running with endurance. The plan of God is a marathon, not a sprint. The beginning of the race [salvation] is exciting, and the end of the race, if we experience dying grace, is exciting as we break the tape and fall into our Savior’s arms. However, the middle of the race is long and often grueling. Will you keep running or are you going to quit? Every one of us faces different obstacles. There will always be times when we are tempted to quit. Especially after we fail, it is so much easier to quit than to get back up on our feet and start running again. But don't quit, abide under the pressure; do not try to escape it.

HEB 12:2-3, *be concentrating on Jesus [your Shepherd and Husband], the author and perfecter of faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider Him [your forerunner] who has endured such hostility by sinners against Himself, so that you may not grow weary and lose heart.*

When you are tempted to quit, consider Him who has endured all temptations and realize you have the same power and assets as He did, and remember that it is for His glory that you are alive. You need to turn the eyes of your soul away from earthly things when you need endurance in the angelic conflict (COL 3:2-3). *Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died, and your life is hidden with Christ in God.* Compare the way that Christ endured hostility and suffering to the way you might normally attempt to endure it in your human power. The defense mechanisms of the flesh only end up in the arrogant and emotional complex of sins. Christ’s way was

the way of the Father. He submitted Himself in His humanity to the plan of the Father. In that way He was strong, courageous, and victorious. Christ was able to fulfill the prototype plan of God because He learned endurance through dependence upon His own spiritual life in submission to the Father's will. Many of us rejoice because we see that we are in the end times of our dispensation. It seems, from the signs of the times that the rebuttal phase of the conflict is almost at a close. However the reason for your existence is to bring glory to God by becoming a witness for the prosecution in the rebuttal phase of the angelic conflict. There will be much opposition at the hands of the Satan and the kingdom of darkness and their cosmic system to prevent you from getting there. Don't stop your daily intake of the Word of God and don't stop rebounding when you sin. Put on the full armor of God that you may be able to hold your ground with endurance (EPH 6:11-13).

At the conclusion of the rebuttal phase, which is the intensified stage of the angelic conflict the final two dispensations will become the closing arguments. The third and final phase of the angelic conflict involves the closing arguments by the prosecution and then the defense, where the Jew again is the center of the conflict in the Tribulation and the Millennial reign of Christ.

This is the relationship between the new racial species, the Jew, and the new spiritual species, the Church, and how they both integrate in the historical phase of the angelic conflict. Each new species, the racial Jew and the new spiritual species, the Church, originates from a category of Biblical death. The new racial species began with Abraham (GEN 17:1-4), and the sign of this covenant would be circumcision. The Church originates from the baptism of the Holy Spirit, the union with the substitutionary spiritual death of Christ on the Cross. This is why GAL 2:20 says *"I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and delivered Himself up for me."*

It's also interesting to note that each new species was formed from a significant event in history connected with circumcision. The new racial species is related to the circumcision of Abraham at age 99. The new spiritual species is created through circumcision as well, but it is the baptism of the Holy Spirit at Salvation which began on the day of Pentecost. The baptism of the Spirit at salvation and the resultant positional sanctification is the only circumcision of the Church-age (COL 2:11-14). The day that you believed in the Lord Jesus Christ you were identified with Him in His death, burial, and resurrection. The spiritual circumcision of being entered into union with Christ is the sign of the new spiritual species, a circumcision made or performed without human hands, as COL 2:11 says. This *"circumcision made without hands"* means that it is a spiritual reality and not a physical ceremony. Physical circumcision was cutting off of a part of the flesh as a symbol of a covenant relationship with God and His people. In COL 2:11, spiritual circumcision is removal of, not a part of the body, but, the entire body of the flesh or the old sin nature.

# THE NEW RACIAL SPECIES AND THE NEW SPIRITUAL SPECIES IN THE ANGELIC CONFLICT. PART 2.

02/03/08

We have been studying the two new species created by God, the new racial species of the Jew, and the new spiritual species of the Church-age believer in union with Jesus Christ. The new racial species was a blessing from the grace of God, just as the new spiritual species in the Church-age is.

In the history of the human race only two new species have ever been added: Israel was added as the new racial species. The Church has been added as the new spiritual species.

The new racial species of Israel had to be perpetuated through procreation, while in the Church-age the new spiritual species of the Royal Family of God is perpetuated through regeneration or the baptism of the Spirit which occurs at the point of salvation.

It's also interesting to note that each new species was created by God for a definite historical impact. Israel was created for a visible historical impact in the Old Testament (age of Israel) and in the Millennium through their function as a client nation. The Church was created for an invisible historical impact during the times of the Gentiles. Each new species is a witness for the prosecution in Satan's appeal trial which is coterminous with human history.

We also looked at the new species from the point of view of our position as Church-age believers.

*2CO 5:17 "Therefore, if anyone [any Church-age believer] is in Christ Jesus [and they are], he is a new [spiritual] species. The old things [position in Adam, spiritual death] have lost their power; behold, new things have come [the invisible assets plus the PPOG]."*

The Greek words *kaine ktisis* does not mean that you have been renovated, but it means you have been created a brand new creature. The day that you became born again is the day that God made you a brand new person or brand new creation. Circumcision made Abraham the first Jew, and Isaac's physical birth was the first birth of the new racial species. The day when you became born again, you became a brand new spiritual species. So the phrase *kaine ktisis* suggests to us something brand new, something that is brought into being out of nothing. It is something that God has created in you. The new creature is not a gradual improvement of the old (Adam), it is a brand new creation from God. God has put something in us which was never there before, a brand new nature, a nature which cannot sin. 1JO 3:9 *No one who is born of God practices sin, because his seed [incorruptible seed] abides in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.* If the church of Jesus Christ could recognize this simple but profound teaching, the Church would be revolutionized. The Christian is not the old man improved, he is not the old creature trying to do better than what he did before salvation, rather he is a brand new person from a brand new birth. The new man is indeed a new creation.

*JOH 3:3 "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."*

*JOH 3:7 "Do not marvel that I said to you, you must be born again."*

The Greek word for born is *gennao* which means to procreate or regenerate. Then the word for *again* is the Greek word *anoteren* which means something totally brand new from above, or from a higher place. The new spiritual species or the new creature originates from regeneration and the mechanics of the baptism of the Holy Spirit. This means that the new spiritual species is unique and exclusive to the Church-age only. The reason for the new spiritual species is the continuation of the great power demonstration of the Hypostatic-union into the Church-age. This extension demands that all the power that was first given to Jesus Christ in Hypostatic-union is now available to every believer (although it is not used by many). That is why the apostle Paul reveals how the ritual plan of God is out and the Pre-designed Plan of God (PPOG) is in. GAL 6:15 *"For neither is circumcision anything*

[Jewish race], *nor uncircumcision* The new racial species, the Jew has been replaced in the Church-age by the new spiritual species, the Church. The new spiritual species in history demands new distinctions in Biblical systematic theology. As a result of the new racial species of Israel, Bible doctrine distinguishes between Jew and Gentile from Abraham to Christ. But, as a result of the new spiritual species of the Church or body of Christ, distinction between Jew and Gentile is removed during the Church-age,

*EPH 2:11-22*, "Therefore remember, that formerly you, the Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by the so-called Circumcision [the Jew] which is performed in the flesh by human hands. Remember that you were at that time separate from Christ, excluded from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers to the covenants of promise, having no hope and without God in the world. But now in Christ Jesus you who formerly were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ. For He Himself is our peace, who made both groups into one, and broke down the barrier of the dividing wall. By abolishing in His flesh the enmity, which is the Law of commandments contained in ordinances, that in Himself He might make the two into one new man, thus establishing peace and might reconcile them both in one body to God through the cross, by it having put to death the enmity. And He came and preached peace to you who were far away, and peace to those who were near; for through Him we both have our access in one Spirit to the Father. So then you are no longer strangers and aliens, but you are fellow citizens with the saints, and are of God's household, having been built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone, in whom the whole building, being fitted together is growing into a holy temple in the Lord; in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit." [*Gentile race*]; *but a new spiritual species.*"

The Jew as a new racial species is always distinguished in the Old Testament from the Gentile. However, the Jew has absolutely no spiritual blessings in the Church-age unless he becomes a member of the body of Christ, and then his blessings are no better than any other Church-age believer. The new spiritual species of the Church-age formed by the baptism of the Holy Spirit erases all racial distinctions between Jew and Gentile, plus all other racial distinctions in the Royal Family of God. In fact, with the coming of the Church-age and the baptism of the Spirit, the following distinctions are removed: Racial, cultural, social, and sexual (*GAL 3:26-28*; *EPH 2:11-12*; *1CO 12:13*). In the Church-age, there is no racial distinction at anytime for any reason for any believer; distinctions are gone forever. In the Church-age you are to regard yourself as a person, not as a member of any race, but to a new spiritual species. All Church-age believers have equal privileges and equal opportunities under the invisible assets of election and pre-destination. The application of this doctrine means tolerance for all believers. Tolerance is important because it gives all believers the necessary privacy to grow in grace.

The only distinctions recognized in the new spiritual species are: 1) Between carnal and spiritual believers, which is the absolute concept of Christianity. 2) Between winner and loser believers, which is the relative concept of Christianity, based on spiritual momentum or retrogression.

The new spiritual species or the new creature is classified as body of Christ, Royal Family of God, and the Church. This means that the new spiritual species is unique and exclusive to the Church-age only. This new spiritual species, or the new creature, provides equal privilege and equal opportunity for all believers to execute God's will, plan, and purpose for the Church-age. The reason for the new spiritual species is the continuation of the great power demonstration of the Hypostatic-union into the Church-age. This extension demands that all the power first given to Jesus Christ in Hypostatic-union is now available to every believer (although it is not used by many believers). You now stand on the threshold of history with the opportunity to have an impact which can change history, and the course of not only our nation but also the world. You can sink back into the swamp of preoccupation with self, or your erroneous standards and priorities, or your mixed-up, confused, and hopeless attitude. Or

you can forget all of that nonsense and take advantage of the opportunity God has given you to have a life of fantastic purpose and meaning. You do have a choice! Whether you ever exploit your fantastic opportunity or not depends upon your Perception, Metabolization, and Application (PMA) of Bible doctrine and your resultant spiritual growth. In 1CO 3:5 "the Lord gives opportunity to each one." GAL 5:1 *It was for freedom that Christ set us free; therefore keep standing firm and do not be subject again to a yoke of slavery.*

GAL 5:13 *For you were called to freedom, brethren; only {do} not {turn} your freedom into an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another.* COL 4:5 *Conduct yourselves with wisdom toward outsiders, making the most of the opportunity.*

Think of it, we have the same assets and Divine power available to us as did Jesus Christ, yet we are imperfect. This is why we had to be created a new spiritual species at salvation, apart from which we could not use Divine power. This unprecedented grace provision of Divine power to every believer demands a new spiritual species for the utilization of that power. This power could never have been used by the Old Testament saints, not being a new spiritual species.

So some of the characteristics of this new spiritual species are as follows: The new spiritual species is created by the baptism of the Spirit at salvation. This positional sanctification constitutes the equal privilege of pre-destination. The new spiritual species is forever protected from liability at the last judgment; in other words, you cannot lose your salvation (ROM 8:1).

The new spiritual species possesses eternal life (1JO 5:11-12).

The new spiritual species possesses a double Divine righteousness: First, the imputed perfect righteousness of God the Father (ROM 3:22), and secondly, the perfect righteousness we share with Jesus Christ through positional sanctification (1CO 1:30).

The new spiritual species has an inheritance protected by the omnipotence of God (1PE 1:4). Being a new spiritual species is not progressive. It cannot be improved in time or in eternity. It is a gift of God and originates from His sovereignty; therefore, we cannot improve it by anything we do.

Being a new spiritual species is not an emotion or an experience. Emotion is a normal part of life, a normal soul function, but it has no part in the Christian life; it is not part of the spiritual life. You can be filled with the Holy Spirit and be emotional about something, but emotion is not a sign of spirituality; it is not a function of the filling of the Holy Spirit.

Being a new spiritual species is not related to any form of human works or human merit.

The new spiritual species of the Church-age is both justified and sanctified (ROM 3:24; 1CO 1:2; 1CO 1:30; HEB 10:10; HEB 10:14). We are justified as new spiritual species, Old Testament believers were also justified upon receiving the imputation of God's perfect righteousness. We are sanctified (entered into union with Christ) as new spiritual species (1CO 1:2; 1CO 1:30; HEB 10:10; HEB 10:14).

The new spiritual species is unique to the Church-age, and never existed in any previous dispensation, nor will it exist in any future dispensation. This means that there is a the challenge for the new spiritual species. The Church-age is the greatest opportunity afforded to individual believers in Christ in all of human history. We have more going for us than even Adam had in the perfect environment of the Garden, or any group of people in history. We should never stoop to claiming any superiority based on any human standards by which members of the human race are distinguished. We now have the privilege of becoming a person with a purpose under the greatest plan from God. Our impact is not only extensive and invisible in human history, but it also extends into the angelic conflict with the elect and fallen angels. As a new spiritual species, you have a greater spiritual impact than Israel had in the Old Testament. Never has such an opportunity been afforded by God as is now given to each of us.

So you must entirely change your human viewpoint and no longer regard yourself or any other believers as inferior or superior under any of these human categories. You must regard yourself as a member of the Royal Family of God, with your very own invisible assets plus an absolutely perfect and



wonderful plan guaranteed to keep you on top of life as long as you live, guaranteed to give you the type of happiness you never dreamed existed, guaranteed to provide for you blessings beyond description. Your ideas and dreams of happiness, greatness or prosperity, are nothing compared to what God provides, which is beyond what you can think or imagine. You live in the age of the greatest potential dynamics to ever exist in human history. Yet, right from the start, only a small minority of all born-again believers in any generation have ever learned and fully applied the spiritual mechanics and executed God's plan under God's power. This is the great tragedy.

As new creatures or new spiritual species we can have the strength and power to live the Christian life. Remember that if we are commanded to do something in the Word of God then we can expect to receive, from God, the power to do so. The Christian way of life is a supernatural way of life and demands a supernatural means of execution.

In the Old Testament, God basically used the new racial species, the Jew as His witness.

In the New Testament, God uses the new spiritual species, the Church, as His witness.

It is also interesting to note that each new species, the racial Jew and the new spiritual species, the Church, originates from a category of Biblical death. Israel originated from Abraham's sexual death (ROM 4:17-21; HEB 11:11-12). The Church originates from the baptism of the Holy Spirit, our identification with the substitutionary spiritual death of Christ on the Cross. This is why GAL 2:20 says *"I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and delivered Himself up for me."*

*Or ROM 6:3 Or do you not know that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus have been baptized into His death?*

So each new species, the racial Jew, and the new spiritual species, the Church, originates from a category of Biblical death. It's also interesting to note that each new species was formed from a significant event in history connected with circumcision. Circumcision consists in cutting away the foreskin of the male phallus using a flint knife for the operation (EXO 4:25; JOS 5:2). This ritual was related to Abraham's supergrace sexual prosperity and represented his adjustment to the justice of God (GEN 17:1-14).

Abraham was 99 years old and was sexually dead, and circumcision signified his advance to spiritual maturity. Circumcision not only revived his sexual ability, but it was the moment when God established the new race called the Jew. Circumcision is a sign, a token, a training aid, of all that is related to the ultra supergrace prosperity of Abraham and the Jews. Circumcision is the recognition of then beginning of a new birth but also of the fact that God not only provides salvation in time, but it becomes logical that with salvation He will provide many other things that follow. There is something beyond salvation, and therefore, the ritual of circumcision is going to emphasize some of these wonderful things beyond salvation.

This circumcision was a significant and pivotal momentous occasion. Throughout the word of God, momentous occasions are accompanied by permanent training aids to bring to remembrance new doctrinal principles. For example, in the founding of the new race, the Jew, a permanent training aid was set up and that is the ritual of circumcision. In the founding of the new nation, Israel, a permanent training aid was set up the Levitical offerings, the tabernacle and the Holy days, those were permanent training aids. In the bringing forth of the new spiritual species, the Church, the Lord's supper was instituted as a training aid and as a momentous occasion to commemorate the doctrinal principle of the Lord's supper. The night before our Lord's death, He said to His disciples; JOH 13:35 *"By this all men will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another."* This is another doctrinal principle that should be brought to remembrance from the momentous occasion of the Lord's supper as well. When a lot of believers think about the Lord's Supper they think about it as being a time when they go through a ritual that reveals the reality of our Lord's sacrifice, and that is

partly true. However, there is another aspect of it, and that is the aspect of fellowship with God's people.

The Abrahamic covenant is so important to the Jew, to the racial Jew, that it must be guarded in every generation. The covenant is to be guarded by a memorial ritual. A ritual that will be passed down to every generation, and a ritual, which for nearly 4000 years has been faithfully observed in every generation of the Jewish race. That's how this particular ritual has perpetuated itself. The oldest of all the rituals, and therefore one of the least understood, but definitely one of the most important. Since the ritual, even at its very beginning was attacked by overflowing to others who were not Jewish, and becoming a practice for many, many other nationalities and races, it was still the order of God just to Abraham and the Jews. It was practiced by the Egyptians, but they did it simply because they thought that it was good hygiene to be circumcised. There are many gentile groups who are circumcised, but it has no meaning to these people. Just as emersion in baptism has very little meaning, if any today, to certain denominations who claim that it is a must. In other words, they practice it, but it's a ritual without meaning. That is not surprising because the same thing is true about the Lord's table, a ritual started by the Lord Jesus Christ the night He was betrayed, and a ritual, which is now nearly 2000 years old. Yet, in many churches that ritual is not understood. People go through the motions, but ritual without reality is meaningless. All ritual demands that you have the doctrinal counterpart in your soul. To go through the ritual without understanding in your soul is ritual without reality. That's true of Baptism. That's true of the Lords table. That's true of circumcision.

# THE SHEKINAH GLORY OR THE MANIFESTATION OF CHRIST WITHIN US.

02/10/08

So far we have in ROM 9:1-3, *"I am communicating a doctrine [the doctrine of emotions] but I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my right lobe, For I could wish that I myself were accursed, separated from Christ for the sake of my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh, who are Israelites, to whom belongs the adoption as sons and the glory."*

We have already noted the Biblical connotation of adoption based upon the Roman aristocratic function of adoption in the time in which the New Testament was written. But, what about the phrase *to whom belongs the glory?* What does this mean?

Well, *the glory* refers to the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ. Let's look at the word Shekinah first. Shekinah is derived from the Hebrew noun *Shakan*, meaning to dwell. It refers to the fact that Jesus Christ indwelt certain sacred buildings in Israel. Shekinah was coined by the rabbis who developed the technical word to speak of God as dwelling among His people. It was used to express the invisible presence of God with Israel. The Jews became familiar with this and completely missed out on this fantastic blessing, which is the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Hebrew word for *glory* is *kabodh* used for the visible manifestations of Jesus Christ as a theophany.

**Shekinah** itself represents the invisibility of Christ, the God of Israel, actually indwelling three sacred buildings during the age of Israel. He indwelt the Tabernacle, Solomon's Temple, and Zerubbabel's Temple. **Glory** represents the visible manifestation in Theophany form. A theophany is a manifestation of the person and work of Jesus Christ in His pre-incarnate state. This is a theological category for the appearances of Jesus Christ before the First Advent.

A Theophany demonstrates the fact that Jesus Christ is the God of Israel.

- As the Angel of the Lord (the primary Theophany).
- As a man (Gen 18).
- In relation to clouds.
- As a pillar of fire.

To see what an important doctrine this is let's look at JOH 17:22-26, *"And the glory [the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ within us] which Thou hast given Me I have given to them; that they may be one, just as We are one; I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, that the world may know that Thou didst send Me, and didst love them, even as Thou didst love Me. Father, I desire that they also, whom Thou hast given Me, be with Me where I am, in order that they may behold My glory, which Thou hast given Me; for Thou didst love Me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, although the world has not known Thee, yet I have known Thee; and these have known that Thou didst send Me; and I have made Thy name known to them, and will make it known; that the love wherewith Thou didst love Me may be in them, and I in them."*

So, the Lord Jesus Christ appeared throughout the Old Testament in visible forms such as the angel of Jehovah, or the angel of the Lord. There was rarely a generation of Old Testament times when Jesus Christ did not appear. Today, the Lord Jesus Christ still appears, however, today He appears in fallen mankind. As I have said many times; If you cannot see the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord in fallen man, you will never be able to see God at all. This is why JOH 14:1-9 says, *"Let not your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me. In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to Myself; that where I am, {there} you may be also. And you know*

*the way where I am going.” Thomas said to Him, “Lord, we do not know where You are going, how do we know the way?” Jesus said to him, “I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but through Me. If you had known Me, you would have known My Father also; from now on you know Him, and have seen Him.” Philip said to Him, “Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for us.” Jesus said to him, “Have I been so long with you, and {yet} you have not come to know Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father; how do you say, Show us the Father?”*

You must remember that Jesus Christ is the only visible member of the Godhead. Not only did our Lord appear as an angel, usually for the purpose of teaching and communicating doctrine, but sometimes He also appeared as a man. For example, He wrestled with Jacob and permanently injured him (GEN 32:24). The Lord also appeared to Abraham in his tent as a man, accompanied by two other men and He announced that Sarah was going to become pregnant (Gen 18). There are also inanimate theophanies of our Lord such as the cloud over the tent or the tabernacle, which was the visible sign that Jesus Christ was dwelling inside of the holy of holies as the Shekinah glory, or the burning bush, or the pillar of fire at night.

The point is there were many different manifestations of Jesus Christ in the Old Testament used to teach, instruct, to guide and direct the people of God. There was once in history, during the dispensation of Israel, the Lord Jesus Christ actually dwelt inside of sacred buildings. Then of course there is the fact that Jesus Christ came in the flesh. The Bible actually says in JOH 1:14 that He tabernacled or tented before us.

To understand the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ, we need to look at JOH 14:19 which says *“After a little while the world will no longer see Me, but you will see Me; because I live, you will live also.”* Our Lord was speaking at this time as the God-man, and as such, He is making a statement about His resurrection, ascension and session. He is talking to the disciples who would be the initial believers of the Church-age. The Church-age believers would live in the same power system with the same Divine assets as the humanity of Christ. Therefore what our Lord says in verse 19 is the prophecy of how they would see Him again. It is also a hint as to the purpose of the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ within us who have had faith alone in Christ alone.

JOH 14:20 *“In that day you shall come to know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you.”*

In His humanity, The Lord Jesus Christ is seated at the right hand of the Father, but His deity of course is omnipresent. To be aware of the fact that you are indwelt by the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord should make some dynamic changes in your life. Not all at once perhaps, but slowly and surely as we go through this marvelous subject.

Let's note some interesting things concerning this subject.

In our Lords hypostatic-union, which is undiminished deity and true humanity in one person forever, His deity was invisible to the crowd who heard this prophecy, but His humanity was very visible. This is the same pattern as the Shekinah Glory. Remember in ROM 9:4 that Paul was speaking to the Israelites to whom belongs the adoption as sons and the glory. In the Old Testament, they saw the visible manifestation of the Lord in the realm of such things as the tabernacle. However, the Lord who dwelt in the holy of holies was not visible, and no one was allowed in to see Him in His glory. They could see the cloud, that was visible to all. They could see the walls of the tent and later on the temple. However, the walls actually hid Jesus Christ indwelling that tent and later on the temple. In like manner, the people who heard this magnificent prophecy could see the man, the humanity of Christ, but they could not see the glory, His deity, that was hidden from them. In other words, Jesus Christ as God dwelt with His people Israel in a unique way, invisible, they did not see Him. However, they saw the sign of His presence. We are going to see that the correlation is that when you claim such passages as GAL 2:20 to be true about your life, you are on the road to Spiritual Maturity. GAL 2:20 *“I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and delivered Himself up for me.”*

In other words, the Lord Jesus Christ showed me how, and enabled me to do it. I identify myself completely with him. I have been crucified with Christ. My ego is no longer central. It is no longer important that I appear righteous before you or have your good opinion, and I am no longer driven to impress God by works. Christ lives in me. The life you see me living is not mine, but it is lived by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

COL 1:27 *to whom God willed to make known what is the glorious riches of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the confidence of the glory.*

God wanted everyone, not just Jews, to know this rich and glorious secret inside and out, regardless of their background, regardless of their religious standing. The mystery in a nutshell is this: Christ is in you, therefore you can look forward to sharing in God's glory. It's that simple. The substance of the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ is within us. When these passages are true about you the Shekinah glory within your body, your temple, is being manifested and shining through. That is why it means to glorify God or have the glory within be manifested without. Then you are truly fulfilling such passages as MAT 5:14-16).

So, in the Old Testament, they saw a theophany, the cloud said He was there, the pillar of fire said He was there. They could see the cloud but they couldn't see God. They could see the pillar of fire but they couldn't see God. Today, people cannot see the humanity of Christ in you, but they can see the glory of God being revealed through you. Such glory like confidence, courage, strength, love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control; etc.

What happens when we live God's way with the Shekinah Glory or the manifestation of the Lord Jesus Christ being revealed? Things like affection for others, exuberance about life, serenity happen. We develop a willingness to stick with things, a sense of compassion, and a conviction that a basic holiness or virtue permeates things and people. We find ourselves involved in loyal commitments, not needing to force our way in life. We are able to marshal and direct our energies wisely. Religion or legalism is helpless in bringing this about; it only gets in the way. It is our privilege and responsibility to rest in Him where He is, because that is where we are positioned in Him. So we are to abide above. At the same time He abides in us here below, by means of the Spirit. JOH 15:4 *"Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, so neither {can} you, unless you abide in Me."* Reciprocal union, we are in Him, He's in us, the ultimate oneness. God has one main way of revealing Himself today, it is Christ in you. He has no better way of showing Himself to men except as Christ lives in us. Not by the Shekinah glory in the temple built with hands of men, but in lives redeemed and freed and cleansed as they walk about in this dark world with Christ living in them.

When our Lord performed His first miracle, what does it say about Him? JOH 2:11 *This beginning of {His} signs Jesus did in Cana of Galilee, and **manifested His glory**, and His disciples believed in Him.* They didn't see the Shekinah glory, but they saw the manifestation of His glory. When the Lord raised Lazarus from the dead, look what He said to Martha. JOH 11:40 *Jesus said to her, "Did I not say to you, if you believe, you will see the glory of God?"* She didn't see the Shekinah glory, but she saw the manifestation of His glory.

Throughout the Bible the Lord Jesus Christ appeared in different forms to reveal the Shekinah glory. The day of the virgin birth of our Lord was the last day any overt manifestation of Him existed. Never again will there be a theophany, instead there are Christophanies which are manifestations of the humanity of Christ in resurrection body.

In the Old Testament, and in the days of Israel, there was a most unique thing, here was Jesus Christ invisible as God to Israel, but visible as a theophany. He indwelt the sacred building as a sign of blessing and security in Israel. The sign, by the way, was removed according to the book of Ezekiel, several times. There are passages which say that when the Jews went into the Babylonian captivity and that between the two cherub angels in the Temple, something happened, the Shekinah glory left. However, it (He) will never leave you. HEB 13:5 *for He Himself has said, "I will never desert you, nor*

will I ever forsake you," (see also MAT 28:20). So our Lord Jesus Christ is visible but He's also invisible. Today the Lord Jesus Christ is at the right hand of the Father where we can't see Him until we go to heaven, but in the meantime He also indwells our bodies, invisibly. Just like the Jews could not see the Shekinah glory in the Old Testament, but could see a manifestation of His presence, so we can reveal the Shekinah glory or the indwelling of Christ to the world and to each other through our body, the temple of the living God.

The point again is that God has one primary way of revealing Himself today, it is Christ in you. 1PE 1:8 "and though you have not seen Him, you love Him, and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory," So, again we see that God wanted everyone, not just Jews, to know this rich and glorious secret inside and out, regardless of their background, regardless of their religious standing, and there is where the Jews failed terribly (JOH 1:11).

ROM 11:25-30, "For I do not want you, brethren, to be uninformed of this mystery, lest you be wise in your own estimation, that a partial hardening has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in; and thus all Israel will be saved; just as it is written, 'The Deliverer will come from Zion, He will remove ungodliness from Jacob. And this is My covenant with them, When I take away their sins.' From the standpoint of the gospel they are enemies for your sake, but from the standpoint of God's choice they are beloved for the sake of the fathers; for the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable. For just as you once were disobedient to God, but now have been shown mercy because of their disobedience, so these also now have been disobedient, in order that because of the mercy shown to you they also may now be shown mercy. For God has shut up all in disobedience that He might show mercy to all."

ROM 11:33-12:2, "Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and unfathomable His ways! For who has known the mind of the Lord, or who became His counselor? Or who has first given to Him that it might be paid back to him again? For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things. To Him be the glory forever. Amen. I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect."

To be left alone with God is the only true way of arriving at an accurate knowledge of ourselves and our ways. No matter what we may think about ourselves, or what others may think about us, the real question is what does God think about us? The answer to this question can only be learned when we are left alone with Him. By that I mean examining our own lives in light of Bible doctrine! This is one of the things that David said in PSA 26:2 "Examine me, O Lord, and try me; Test my mind and my heart." When a believer objectively examines his own life according to doctrine, he is alone with God.

In GEN 32:24 Jacob had arranged everything for meeting and appeasing his brother Esau, however, the Lord is going to intervene and reveal some very serious problems that Jacob has. To learn these lessons, Jacob must be humbled. He must be stripped from his own strength, lamed and made to limp. GEN 32:24 Then Jacob was left alone, and a man wrestled with him until daybreak. Many individuals teach that Jacob wrestled with the man, who is really the Lord Jesus Christ, and that Jacob was the initiator or the one who started this wrestling match. However, actually, Jacob didn't want to wrestle anybody. Remember that he has his Uncle Laban in back of him who took total advantage of him, and he has his brother Esau ahead of him whom he thinks is going to kill him. So the last thing he feels like doing is wrestling. The point is that he is caught between a rock and a hard place, and he doesn't know which way to turn.

The attack begins with this seemingly mysterious antagonist starting the fight with Jacob and not Jacob starting it with him. Jacob needed to have his human-strength beaten out of him. Jacob has been

relying on human strength, human power, human viewpoint, human gimmicks, to try and get blessings in life as well as to solve his problems. Jacob needed to be made conscious of his standing with God so that he would stop conniving, plotting, scheming, and using human solutions to try and solve his every problem. Therefore, I want you to note that God initiates this wrestling match which ends in the defeat of the old Jacob. It is God who will touch the socket of his hip, and Jacob's hip will be dislocated while he wrestled with Him. It is God who breaks the stubborn, willful, self-reliant Jacob and brings him to his senses. Now, remember that these things were written for our instruction! So, let's establish who this was the Lord Jesus Christ that wrestled with Jacob. To do this we need to go to the book of Hosea.

*HOS 12:2-5, The Lord also has a dispute with Judah, And will punish Jacob according to his ways [Jacob is a title for the nation of Israel here who has gone apostate]; He will repay him according to his deeds. In the womb he [Jacob] took his brother by the heel, And in his maturity he [Jacob] contended with God. Yes, he wrestled with the angel and prevailed; He wept and sought His favor [a reference to the Lord Jesus Christ] He found Him [Jesus Christ] at Bethel, And there He spoke with us, Even the Lord, the God of hosts; The Lord [Jehovah] is His name.*

So it was none other than Jehovah, the pre-incarnate Christ, who wrestled with Jacob that night. This means that Yahweh, Jehovah, the God of Israel, is dealing directly and personally with Jacob to change his life and to give him a new name. By the way, a new life is something that God wants to give to you. God wills his highest and best for every believer, but sadly not every believer receives this highest and best.

# THE BEGINNING OF THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT.

02/24/08

*Rom 9:1-4, "I am communicating doctrine, I am not lying, my conscience bearing joint testimony with me in the Holy Spirit, but I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my right lobe, so I could wish that I myself would be accursed, consequently, separated from Christ, but it cannot be, for the sake of, or on behalf of my brethren, the racial Jews, my fellow countrymen, national Jews according to earthly descent, who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption as sons and the glory [the Shekinah glory], and the covenants and the gift of the law, and the worship of the true God, and the promises."*

We now move to the next three Greek words, *Kai hai diatheekai*, correctly translated *and the covenants*. This is referring primarily to the Abrahamic covenant, though others are included as well. The Abrahamic covenant was the beginning of the Jews, and the beginning of God's promises to Israel. The whole issue in these covenants is very simple. God is faithful, and God keeps His word; God will fulfill every obligation. The integrity of God makes it impossible for Him not to fulfill an obligation. Remember that the integrity of God is composed of His justice and His righteousness, and the only Jews to whom these promises are pertinent are the spiritual, rather than the physical, seed of Abraham. Only those Jews who receive the imputation of Divine righteousness (+R), as did Abraham, in Genesis 15, where Abraham was told that his progeny would be as the stars of the heaven, or like the sands of the sea. In that passage it also says, "*Abraham had believed in the Lord [GEN 15:6], and it was credited to his account for righteousness.*" The only Jews who receive the promises of the Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenants to Israel are those Jews who have +R. Remember that the justice of God imputes blessing to the righteousness of God only, and no Jew is a true Jew until he has the righteousness of God.

Human life imputed at birth, plus Adams original sin, equals the first potential, the potential of **salvation**. Then the pertinent doctrine, the Gospel, equals the first hope or absolute confidence that when you believe in Christ you have **eternal life**. Then comes the adjustment to the justice of God through faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. There can be no blessing from God, unless you possess God's righteousness. Through perception, metabolization, and application of doctrine, one attains maturity and develops capacity to receive Divine blessing. We have the imputation of eternal life, plus the imputation of blessing in time which equals the third potential: Pertinent doctrine plus undeserved suffering equals absolute confidence that when we stand at the judgment seat of Christ in a resurrection body, we are going to receive the imputation of Divine blessing; and this is the plan of God. So, there can be no blessing, no eternal blessing to anyone, without +R.

The *ditheke*, the covenant, is a disposition made by God to Abraham, and in this case we're dealing with the heritage of Israel. Like all the covenants, this is a part of the Divine decrees, and Abraham is a beneficiary without merit. God promised Abraham, he would crack the maturity barrier. God promised unconditionally certain things to Abraham and his spiritual seed; not all Israel is Israel, only those who believe on Christ for +R, as Abraham did in GEN 15:6. These promises are forever so you have to have God's life, eternal life. These promises demand a point of imputation. God can only bless on the basis of His righteousness (+R), not on the basis of our righteousness; today we have people inserting their own self-righteousness, and of course that does not work. We can't reinvent the wheel; God's already done it; it's His plan, not our plan! There is no place for self-righteousness, or any action or any deed no matter how legitimate, no matter how wonderful, or no matter how legalistic; there's simply no place for any human effort to try to gain blessing from God. The justice of God is free to fulfill the Abrahamic covenant to any Jew (anyone who has the genes of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob) who is born again through faith in TLJC. That is absolutely necessary. So, all of these promises we



simply call the Abrahamic covenant are merely a summary of everything that God promised to Abraham and to his spiritual seed.

*GEN 12:1-3, Now the Lord said to Abram, "Go forth from your country, And from your relatives And from your father's house, To the land which I will show you; And I will make you a great nation, And I will bless you, And make your name great; And so you shall be a blessing; And I will bless those who bless you, And the one who curses you I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed."*

These verses emphasize the isolation and separation necessary for the development of the new race. The third dynasty of Ur is about to be destroyed, and God is separating Abraham from that famous Acadian nation. This is why verse 2 says *And I will manufacture from you a great nation*. This does not refer to the seed of Ishmael nor does it refer to the seed of the five sons of Keturah. Abraham had seven sons; but the great nation would come through one only, Isaac: one great nation called the Jews, the Hebrews. Now there are a lot of nations from Abraham; many of them are descendents through Ishmael, or descendents from Abraham through the five sons of Keturah. However, the great nation in GEN 12:2 is elected, but not adopted until the Second Advent, because while Israel has been great in the past, it is nothing compared to what will happen in the Millennial reign of the Lord Jesus Christ. Israel will be the source of blessing for the entire world. Israel in the Millennium is the great nation. Israel in all eternity after the Millennium is the great nation, but the only racial Jews who can be in that great nation are those who are qualified by having +R and eternal life. No-one can qualify without believing in Christ for eternal life.

Now it becomes important, and that's why Paul was so burdened in Romans 9, because these Jews, many of them in arrogance, thought that they recognized their great heritage, but they misinterpreted their heritage and related it to physical birth, rather than the new birth. That's why, to one of the leaders of the Jews, the Pharisee Nicodemus, Jesus said; *"Ye must be born again."* Even though this man was a Pharisee and a brilliant scholar and understood his racial heritage, he was still relating the heritage of Israel to physical life rather than spiritual life. But at least he was positive, for he is one of the Pharisees who believed in the Lord Jesus Christ as a result of His earthly ministry. Being born again is only possible through believing in the salvation work of our Lord. That was the challenge, not only to Nicodemus, but to all Jews: **They must be born again**. So, our Lord tells Nicodemus that it isn't a physical re-birth; it's a spiritual re-birth. It's a birth by means of the Spirit, from the water of the Word and from the Spirit. It isn't the physical seed of Abraham that has the great heritage of the future; it is the spiritual seed of Abraham, those who are born again. When God promised unconditionally He simply said *I will*. That's it. *"I will manufacture from you a great nation, I will bless you, and I will cause your name to become famous, therefore become a blessing, and I will bless those who bless you."*

That brings us to today. The United States of America is a client nation of God, right now. We do not have the spiritual heritage of Israel. We have a glorious heritage of freedom, but nothing compares to the spiritual heritage of Israel in the past. So here we are today, a client nation of God. With that we have the responsibility. We have, first of all, the freedom with its privacy, its property, and its umbrella of authority. We have the freedom to evangelize. From this freedom comes the ability to advance to maturity. From this freedom comes missionary activity to reach out to any nation, or any group of people wherever they may be found, who are positive toward God and God-consciousness, and they will hear the Gospel. God will provide the missionaries and the means, and they are generally sent from a client nation. One other thing that's keeping us going today, and is very important to continue and protect, is that we as a nation are not anti-Semitic. We have some anti-Semitic people in the nation, but as a nation we are not anti-Semitic. We are pro-Semitic with relationship to the Jewish people. We have offered our country, as a client nation to God, as a haven for the Jews, where they have the same opportunity and the same citizenship that we have. No distinction is made and they are

protected. We are about to have a great attack of anti-Semitism in this country, which is just one of the many manifestations of Satan's action.

One of the worst things that you can ever do, is to ever become involved with anyone who is anti-Semitic. We want to stay absolutely clear from that vicious, monstrous evil. Nothing is more Satanic than anti-Semitism. The greatest Satanic movement in all of history, reaching its peak in the middle of the Tribulation, is anti-Semitism. The reason for Satanic opposition to the Jews is related to the four unconditional promises (covenants) of God: The Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenant. All of these covenants guarantee the future of Israel and have not yet been fulfilled, with one exception. God will destroy any person or any nation involved in anti-Semitism. It is not God's will for you to enter into anti-Semitism. Racial prejudice is one of the greatest evils you could ever imagine. Whenever anyone feels any racial prejudice, all they have to do is remember that Christ was judged for that person on the Cross.

How did all of this evil in the Middle East start? We must begin with a descendant of Shem who for 99 years was an Arab, and the Arab's claim him as one of them. However, at age 99 God claimed Abraham for Himself and started a brand new race called the Jews. Let's review the profile of Abraham so that you will know something about him as an Arab and how he became a Jew. This applies directly to America's war in the Middle East.

Abraham was called Abram in the Bible before God changed his name. Abraham was a Gentile who became a Jew when God started the Jewish race through him at age 99. He was the ninth generation descended from Noah's son, Shem. He was born in the city of Ur about 2161 B.C., and the accounts about Abraham are found in GEN 11:26 - GEN 25:11, with the focus on four important aspects of his life. First, his migration: Abraham's story begins with his migration with the rest of his family from UR of the Chaldeans in ancient southern Babylonia (GEN 11:26-32). He and his family moved north along the trade routes of the ancient world and settled in the flourishing trade center of Haran, and there, at the age of 75, Abraham received a call from God to go to an unknown land that God would show him. Remember at this time in human history, there was no Bible so God spoke personally to those whom He chose. The Lord promised Abraham that He would make him and his descendants a great nation, according to GEN 12:1-3. However, like many promises from God to His people, because they are so fantastic, they seem unbelievable. The promise must have seemed unbelievable to Abraham because his wife Sarah (Sarai) was childless and he had no children. GEN 11:26 *And Terah lived seventy years, and became the father of Abram, Nahor and Haran.* Terah was an Acadian unbeliever and in JOS 24:2, he was an idolater. His name Terah means *delayed*; he's well named for he delayed Abraham from getting to the place where the Lord wanted him. God had a plan for Abraham, but as long as Abraham stayed with his father he was delayed in fulfilling the will of God. Now, the king of Ur was a very well known worshipper of the moon God called Ur and Ur was the great center of moon-god worship and other forms of idolatry. The city of Ur built the famous ziggurats, a system of terraced platforms on which temples were erected. It was a very prosperous and high class city! Now Abraham was saved in this city under most unusual conditions. Ur of the Chaldees was a great and powerful empire; however it was destroyed after Abraham left. Abraham left Ur to go north and then south down to Canaan, and on his way to Canaan Abraham passed the Amorites who were on their way to destroy his home area. Now, if Ur had a lot of believers then Ur would have been spared, but the Lord was going to have Ur destroyed; therefore He told Abraham to get out of it. There were only three believers in Ur, Abraham, Sarah, and Lot; so the Lord took the pivot out, and then He destroyed one of the great empires of the ancient world, the third dynasty of Ur. Abraham's spiritual life was very limited in Ur, and he needed to get to a place where he could learn doctrine without being distracted. You may find out that your spiritual life is limited because the place where you are or the people you're with become a stumbling block to your spiritual growth. Sometimes, geographical change is necessary for spiritual growth.

Abraham stayed with his father, and that was a mistake because his father led him down the path to reversionism. His father was a priest of the moon-god Ur, as well as one of the wealthiest men in this city. So Abraham is in a place that was prosperous and secure, and no one ever dreamed that the dynasty would ever come to an end; however, it was destroyed right after Abraham left. Why? Because the Lord Jesus Christ controls history, and since He knew what was going to happen to Ur, He got Abraham out. This is why we should always be sensitive to the leading and guidance of the Lord, and this can only be done by learning the mind of Christ through Bible doctrine. When Abraham left Ur, it was entering into the peak of its prosperity, and he appeared to be leaving a sure thing, a good thing, but it wasn't. But he left! HEB 11:8 tells us how he left, *"By means of doctrine resident in the soul, Abraham, when he was called, obeyed by going out to a place which he was to receive for an inheritance; and he went out, not knowing where he was going."* This verse brings out the importance of resident doctrine, positive volition, and being motivated by that doctrine. The change of geographical location was the basis for separating Abraham from his family and relatives. The principle is that when family or relatives hold you back then family has to go and relatives have to go. A lot of people cannot seem to handle the family relative problem, but Abraham did. Relationship with God must have priority over relationship with people. Your number one priority demands that you have a right relationship with God. Emphasis on people over God must be set aside; this includes emphasis upon yourself. The greatest issue is always doctrine vs. the details of life. Whether its family, friends, loved ones, success, pleasure, social life, sex, status symbols, materialism, or wealth.

There's a very important principle brought out by the life of Abraham. The glory road which is saving grace, living grace, super-grace, dying grace, surpassing grace, was not open to Abraham in Ur of the Chaldea. It wasn't because of Chaldea, but rather because of his family and relatives; Abraham never hit super-grace until he was totally separated from all his relatives. He had to be separated from his father and his nephew Lot! Therefore, it was necessary for Abraham to have a permanent change of residence. Abraham's spiritual growth was the most important thing! Abraham was uprooted in time, so that he will be rooted forever in the eternal state. He left social life, family life, and friends. He was leaving a place where he was well known and apparently a place where he was even appreciated, and that is always very difficult! To leave some environment where you're appreciated, or in some cases, you think that you're appreciated, but your being appreciated is also keeping you from getting Bible doctrine, is vital. Note also that Abraham had positive volition, and doctrine was available to him in Ur of the Chaldea, up to a point. When it ceased to be available, God had to uproot Abraham and get him out of there. It ceased to be available when Abraham's family and relatives and friends and social life and perhaps even his celebrityship - when these things got in the way of his advance down the glory road. Wherever there is positive volition toward doctrine, God provides the spiritual food even if it means a change of residence. The circumstances in Ur of Chaldea limited Abraham from becoming a spiritual champion, invisible hero, and finally a visible one. When Abraham obeyed he did so from the motivation of doctrine in the soul. Doctrine in the soul motivates the believer to come to doctrine class in spite of whatever distractions are a test to you.

So, there must be separation from those loved ones or friends residing in the cosmic system. However, a very important principle; it does not have to be physical separation. There are two categories of separation from people: **First** there is mental separation. In mental separation, there is one-way antagonism from those in the cosmic system toward you. Your volition protects you from becoming antagonistic toward them by your use of impersonal unconditional love. Mental separation emphasizes the integrity, honor, and doctrinal application of the believer residing inside the PPOG. Impersonal love is not influenced by those loved ones who are residing in the cosmic system, who are apostate and/or antagonistic to doctrine. Impersonal love functions on its own integrity and perpetuates its own priorities from the metabolization of doctrine. Impersonal love emphasizes

personal love for God while setting aside the functions of personal love for friends or loved ones. Impersonal love does not compromise the believer's status inside the PPOG.

**Secondly**, there's physical separation. There are some cases where switching from personal love to impersonal love will not work. For example, getting false information in the local church. You must leave physically as well as under the principle of impersonal love. When a woman is used as a punching bag by her husband, she should leave (ROM 12:17-19). The most basic reason is to avoid the compromise of doctrine resident in the soul. Physical separation means to avoid any personal contact with a person under any circumstances. This means severance of all relation with that person of any kind. Physical separation is sometimes needed to maintain one's priorities and to use one's volition to remain inside the PPOG (PRO 13:20; 2TI 3:5-6; 2TH 3:14). Separation from unbelievers inside the cosmic system is taught in 2CO 6:14-17. Every time you hook up with something or someone in the cosmic system, you are in partnership with the cosmic system. Separation is also important in social life (JER 15:16-17; 1PE 4:3-4). The believer is to separate from a superficial social life, a fun crowd. There comes a time when the believer grows spiritually, and his first function is to separate from the crowd that will lead him in the wrong direction.

Abraham, in effect, had to choose between his father whom he loved dearly and the will of God, and at the beginning he loved his father more than the will of God. We all must decide in our lives whether we love the will of God and the word of God more than anything else in life. If you do, you take one course of action. You take in doctrine every day either through face to face teaching or by tapes, or any of the many methods available today. You learn from whoever is your right Pastor-teacher. Remember, every Pastor-teacher is assigned to a certain congregation (ACT 20:28). Every believer is assigned to a certain Pastor-teacher (1PE 5:3). That particular Pastor-teacher is to equip the believer to execute the Christian way of life (EPH 4:12).

So, Abraham was told to separate from his father and his relatives and to leave Ur according to GEN 12:1. Sooner or later in your spiritual advance you're going to have to face the issue of family members or friends who are not positive or are aggressively negative. The ones that are closest to you are often the ones that hinder you from taking in the Word the most, and nothing is more important than the Word. Abraham was told to get away from his father and to get away from the geographical location of Ur in order to advance in the spiritual life.

# THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT. PART 2.

Learning God's will for your life.

03/02/08

In relationship to our main verse in ROM 9:4, we have begun a study on the covenants, mainly the Abrahamic Covenant.

We have been noting the question of the will. First, there's the viewpoint will of God. In other words, what does God want you to think? Obviously, He wants you to think Divine viewpoint (ISA 55:7-9; PRO 23:7). There is also 2CO 10:1 "*Now I, Paul, myself urge you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ-I who am meek when face to face with you, but bold toward you when absent!*" Paul had heard that they were gossiping about him, saying he had been cowardly when he was with them, but harsh and demanding when he was writing letters. Remember 1TI 5:17-20, *Those pastor-teachers who have ruled well with the result that they keep ruling honorably, they must be considered worthy of double honor, most of all those who work hard to the point of exhaustion in the study of the word and the teaching of doctrine. For the Scripture says [DEU 25:4], 'You shall not muzzle the bull while he is threshing, and [DEU 24:15] The laborer is worthy of his wages.'* Do not receive an accusation against a pastor-teacher except on the basis of two or three witnesses. Those who continue in the sin of receiving or making accusations, reprimand in the presence of all, in order that the rest of the congregation also may have respect. So be careful what you say about God's man behind the pulpit; let the Lord deal with him. As for God's man behind the pulpit, remember such scriptures as: 2TI 4:14 "*Alexander the coppersmith did me much harm; the Lord will repay him according to his deeds.*" (See also ISA 54:17; 2CO 13:8).

So the Corinthians were gossiping and trying to discredit the apostle Paul. In 2CO 10:2-6 Paul is saying, please don't force me to take a hard line when I'm present with you. Don't think that I'll hesitate a single minute to stand up to those who say I'm an unprincipled opportunist. The world is unprincipled. It's dog-eat-dog out there! The world doesn't fight fair, but we don't live or fight our battles that way. We use our powerful God-tools for smashing warped philosophies, tearing down barriers erected against the truth of God, fitting every loose thought and emotion and impulse into the structure of life shaped by Christ. Our tools are ready at hand for clearing the ground of every obstruction and building lives of obedience into maturity.

So, first, there's the viewpoint Will of God. Secondly, there's the operational Will of God. What does God want you to do? The operational Will of God involves everything that a Christian should do to the glory of God. Thirdly, there's the geographical Will of God. Where does God want me to be? This category has to do with location. However, the geographical Will of God is never considered apart from the operational Will of God.

And the third is the geographical will of God which is where God wants you to be and that's solved by resident doctrine.

Now, there are also classifications of the Will of God.

There's the **directive Will of God** which is the same as the desire of God. These are direct commands. It was the directive Will of God that called Abraham out of Ur of Chaldea, and it was the directive will of God to which he responded.

The **permissive Will of God** is permitted, but is not God's desire. For example when God permitted Abraham to lie twice about Sarah not being his wife.

The **overruling Will of God** means Jesus Christ controls history. For example when God revealed to Pharaoh that he was touching Abraham's wife in GEN 12:17-20. The overruling Will of God also took place when God took Abraham's father from Abraham when he was in Haran.

There are seven basic mechanics of the Will of God, or how you can receive Divine guidance: 1) Guidance through prayer (ACT 11:5). 2) Guidance through objective thinking of Bible doctrine (ACT 11:6). 3) Guidance through perception of doctrine (ACT 11:7-10). 4) Guidance through providential circumstances, the people we meet (ACT 11:11). 5) Guidance through fellowship and comparison of spiritual data (ACT 11:13-14). 6) Guidance through recalling of doctrine (ACT 11:16). 7) Guidance through disaster. In other words, you have to have a shock or a great disaster in order to realize what's really important. This happened with the death of Abraham's father.

The principle is that Bible doctrine in the soul plus the free will in man equals Divine guidance, and the execution of the Will of God.

Abraham was getting doctrine in Ur of the Chaldea, but because of his family and relatives, he never reached spiritual maturity until he was totally separated from them. This is why the Lord said to Abraham in GEN 12:1 *"Go forth from your country, and from your relatives and from your father's house, To the land which I will show you."* Abraham had to be separated from his father and his nephew Lot! Therefore, it was necessary for Abraham to have a change of residence because his spiritual growth was the most important thing. Abraham had to learn the principle of separation, but Abraham made a mistake and went to Haran which means the dried up place. As long as God's people do not separate from those weirdos who are in reversionism, they will be dried up spiritually as well.

Abram's name is also interesting. The first part of his name *Ab* means father, and *ram* means high and windy places. Abram lived in a very flat place, Ur of the Chaldees was very flat and it was hard to find a place above sea level anywhere. However, Abram was called father of heights because his father, who was one of the chief priests in Ur, named his son after the only high place around. Going over 100 feet in the air was the famous temple, and the last 75 feet a famous tower, on top of the tower another famous temple: the Ziggurat of Ur, and Abram was named after this. So his name actually means father of the heights or father of the high places. Abram was obviously ear-marked for a life of religion and idolatry in Ur, but God had better things for Abram just like God has better things for you. In HEB 1:4 *"We have become as much better than the angels, as we have inherited a more excellent name than they have."* (See also HEB 6:9; HEB 7:19; HEB 7:22; HEB 8:6).

In our study of Abraham, there are five geographical locations that illustrate different principles concerning his life. The first is Ur which represents separation from glamour (Ur was the glamour city of Abram's time) and all the human advantages of life. 600 miles north up the Euphrates river we have Haran, the trade center between Syria and Egypt, and it represents the dried up spiritual life. It represents separation from the idolatrous place of Ur, but not enough separation. It represents going in the right direction, but making a wrong turn into the dried up spiritual life. The third area is Canaan which represents the place of blessing, the place of positive volition, and the place of spiritual advance and blessing. Then there is the Negev; Abraham will break camp and go south from Canaan into the Negev, which represents not rejection of doctrine, but neglect of doctrine. The key to the Negev is neglect. It represents neglect of doctrine, apathy, indifference, once interested, but now starting to get sloppy in the daily attendance to Bible class. Then, after he was in the Negev a while, he went on down to Egypt, and Egypt is the place of the rejection of doctrine. To neglect the Word is to reject the Word, but the neglect comes first. First comes the Negev and then comes Egypt, and both came after Canaan, the land of promise. For us it is a picture of individuals getting into doctrine, and then falling away! So don't miss the principle behind those five cities:

- Ur represents separation from glamour.
- Haran represents the dried spiritual life.
- Canaan represents the place of blessing.
- The Negev represents neglect of doctrine.
- Egypt is the place of rejection of doctrine.

GEN 11:28 *And Haran died in the presence of his father Terah in the land of his birth, in Ur of the Chaldeans.*

Beginning in verse 29, we are getting ready to move out of Ur but before Abraham can be taken out of Ur, we have to have some weddings.

GEN 11:29 *And Abram and Nahor took wives for themselves.*

Please notice that the subject is the man not the woman. This of course is an old custom that goes back to the nature of the male; he is to be the aggressive one, he is to do the wooing or the charming. No male should stand around waiting to be introduced when he finally thinks that he spots someone who is his right woman or someone who is attractive; you just don't stand around and wait, you get into action as quickly as possible. By the way a woman in response can be aggressive. She doesn't have to stand around and wait for the right man to be aggressive, he doesn't have to be the aggressor on every occasion.

Before we study this verse, we have 18 principles concerning the selection of a mate or really 18 reasons why relationships fail: 1) The most obvious one: bad decisions in the selection of a mate (PRO 12:4). This is why believers should never make a decision for marriage until doctrine matures them. 2) The inability to handle personal problems before, during, and even after the marriage. If you can't deal with your own problems how will you deal with the problems of your mate? (1CO 7:28). 3) Another reason relationships fail is because of failure to learn and apply the problem-solving devices. This means that if you are unstable in the intake of doctrine that you bring that instability in any of your relationships in life. 4) Relationships fail because of taking bad advice from friends, ministers, mommy, daddy, etc. People with problems will usually listen to anyone. Remember PSA 1:1 *"How blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked, Nor stand in the path of sinners, Nor sit in the seat of scoffers!"* In sharing your problems with others, when you tell your side of the story, the other person always looks like the rat. One of the signs of growing up is keeping your personal problems private and to yourself. 5) Relationships also fail because of disloyalty or unfaithfulness on the part of one or both mates. Faithfulness is extremely important in the selection of a mate (PRO 6:23-32). 6) Relationships fail because of no personal sense of responsibility on the part of one or both mates. Many are getting married today as children mentally. 7) Remember that relationships and marriage are not designed for perfect people, but for people with old sin natures who are far from perfect, so don't think there's a person for you who is perfect. It is true that God has designed someone who is perfect for you, but that does not mean that they will be perfect. 8) Therefore, the only thing wrong with marriage is not the Divine institution of marriage designed by God but the people involved in marriage. 9) No woman can be successful in any relationship unless she has learned to entertain herself. Ladies, if you can't stand to be alone and he has to be there, you'll never be successful in marriage. You did not marry an entertainer, but a provider. 10) No man can be a successful lover of a woman and at the same time be a lover of himself. Arrogant men do not make good lovers; this also includes the sexual realm. 11) No man can exercise his authority properly without honor, integrity, and virtue. If he has no honor, integrity or virtue, he will abuse his authority. COL 3:19 *"Husbands, love your wives, and do not be embittered against them."* 12) No woman can respond to authority without humility, integrity, and virtue. COL 3:18 *"Wives, be subject to your husbands, as is fitting in the Lord."* If she lacks these qualities she will be hypersensitive and react to authority instead of responding. 13) Beauty, health, and attractiveness are not necessarily permanent; the only permanent thing we have in this life is truth or doctrine. God is permanent, so relate your love life to God! Doctrine is permanent so relate your love life to doctrine! 14) Because the body is related to the soul only the right soul can satisfy the body of the woman or the man. The greatest sexual organ is the soul not any other part of the human anatomy. 15) Beauty is not the basis for recognition of the mate God has for you! Recognition signals are not related to the body but to the soul. 1CO 7:9 talks about the burning of the souls wanting to be with each other, not lust, when it says

*"But if they do not have self-control, let them marry; for it is better to marry than to burn with passion."* This is soul compatibility; it has nothing to do with libido. It refers to when two souls have climaxed because the two people are soul compatible, even though they are not yet able to make love and enter into extreme intimacy. No sex can compare with the sex between right man and right woman. Therefore, it is better to marry than to burn in personal love for right man or right woman **after** you have made the soul identification. 16) Recognition signals are revealed in the soul, so how are you ever going to find the right one if you're touching the body and not the soul? Many people today begin their relationship with the touching of the body and not the soul, when in reality the soul must be touched first. In other words men, she has a soul, she thinks, she has a viewpoint and opinion. In the right man right woman relationship that will turn you on as well. There's PRO 18:22; PRO 19:14; GEN 2:22; ECC 9:9; 1CO 7:17, for those of you who doubt right man, right woman. 17) Identification is made in the soul, but there is also a physical attraction to you because God has designed it. For men, your right woman may not be attractive to someone else, but she will be attractive to you, and the same is true for women. 18) The right woman is never shocked by the good or bad points of her right man and vice versa.

So much then for the introduction to a wedding in Gen 11. In GEN 11:29 *And Abram and Nahor took wives for themselves. The name of Abram's wife was Sarai*; The name Sarai is very meaningful; it means contentious, a fighter, domineering. We think of men many times like this, but here is a woman who was a fighter. Ten years younger than Abraham, Sarai (Sarah) was his half sister; they had the same father but different mothers according to GEN 20:12. She was contentious at times, a fighter, and even domineering. However, she was a ravishing and stunning woman because whenever she is described it takes two and sometimes three Hebrew words to describe her beauty. She had maximum beauty, the epitome of feminine magnificence after 65. Many probably would like to know how did she stay that way, and we'll actually take that up in view of the fact that she is famous as being a nag. Abram married a nagging woman, he was carried away by her great beauty, and she was one of the most beautiful women of the ancient world. Living at home under the authority of his father Terah, Abram apparently never had the full impact of her personality until after marriage. Many men have started with a terrible handicap by marrying someone who was totally attractive to him but whose soul turned out to be totally unattractive. However, Sarai was a woman whose beauty did not fade. She was a very petty woman and quite a nag; however we are going she made God's hall of fame as time goes on. She starts very poorly and ends very well.

*GEN 11:29-30, "And Abram and Nahor took wives for themselves. The name of Abram's wife was Sarai; and the name of Nahor's wife was Milcah, the daughter of Haran, the father of Milcah and Iscah. And Sarai was barren; she had no child."*

The barrenness of Sarai is mentioned because it constitutes a test to determine if the circumstances of life are more real than the attributes of God. God has told Abram in Ur that out of him would come many great nations, and yet the first thing he finds is that Sarai is barren. So God says to Abraham in effect, What's more important to you, what I say, My word, My character; or your circumstances? That's what God is saying to you right now. One of the things that Abraham had to overcome through doctrine was that God is more real than the apparent adverse circumstances. God must become more real than adverse circumstances or you will be miserable all of your life. Always remember that the persistence in learning doctrine causes the believer to seek Him who is invisible.

HEB 11:6 *And without doctrine resident in the soul it is impossible to please Him, for he who is occupied with the God must be convinced by resident doctrine that He is, and that He becomes a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.* This is how the invisible becomes more real than the visible. If God is not more real to you than people, through perception of doctrine, you will never discover the true meaning of life. Doctrine has to be real to you; in fact, it has to be more real to you than anything else in life or as HEB 10:35 says *"you will throw it away as trash."* When God becomes more real to you, and



Christ becomes more real to you, and the power of the Holy Spirit becomes more real to you, all of this will be because Bible doctrine has become more real to you than anything else in life.

The more doctrine we **learn** the more **real** become the unseen blessings designed for us from God the Father from eternity past. The more doctrine we learn, the more real becomes the Lord Jesus Christ...we are able to see Him Who is invisible. The more doctrine we learn, the more real becomes the plan of God and the perfect essence of God behind that plan.

So in the first half of his life Abram must face a challenge. Is Bible doctrine more real to me than the circumstances of life, or are adverse circumstances more real than doctrine? It took Abraham about half of his life to work that out. Once he worked that out things worked out a lot better for his life.

All of us have problems in life that take time to work out; they can't be worked out instantaneously. God is not the little fairy god-mother who touches you with the wand and tells you that everything is going to be alright. Work out your problems through the daily intake of doctrine. Don't look for solutions; look to the source of solutions, doctrine resident in your soul. The environment for all solutions to the problems of life is bound up in doctrine resident in your soul.

## THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT. PART 3.

God must remove from our reach the things that hinder our spiritual growth.

03/09/08

We are now ready to study the promises made to Abraham which has to do with the Abrahamic Covenant.

*GEN 11:29-32, Abram and Nahor took wives for themselves. The name of Abram's wife was Sarai; and the name of Nahor's wife was Milcah, the daughter of Haran, the father of Milcah and Iscah. Sarai was barren; she had no child. Terah took Abram his son, and Lot the son of Haran, his grandson, and Sarai his daughter-in-law, his son Abram's wife; and they went out together from Ur of the Chaldeans in order to enter the land of Canaan; and they went as far as Haran, and settled there. The days of Terah were two hundred and five years; and Terah died in Haran.*

So Terah, Abraham's father is dead. This was a great adversity for Abram or Abraham, however, under the plan of grace, great adversities can become great blessings. Abraham is about to receive one the greatest blessings of his life, the Abrahamic Covenant. The death of Terah was a shock which brought about the recovery from reversionism for Abram, and removed Abram from Haran (the dried up place). The principle is that God must remove the things that hinder our spiritual growth. Often what seems to be a demotion in the eyes of the world is actually a promotion in the eyes of God. HEB 12:27 *This expression, "Yet once more," denotes the removing of those things which can be shaken, as of created things, so that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.* Many times the Lord will take people or things away from us so that we will learn the value of the eternal things which we possess. HEB 12:28 *Therefore, since we receive a kingdom which cannot be shaken, let us show gratitude, by which we may offer to God an acceptable service with reverence and awe;* We have an unshakable kingdom! We should not only be thankful, but also overflowing with worship, and deep reverence before God, for God is not an indifferent bystander. HEB 12:29 *for our God is a consuming fire.* He's actively cleaning house, and He won't quit until it's all cleansed. ROM 8:29 tells us, *"For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the first-born among many brethren;"* This message is designed for the soul and the human spirit to feed on Christ, not just on His teachings, He is the One to be truly worshipped. PHI 2:9 *"Therefore also the God has highly exalted Him to the maximum, and bestowed on Him the name or rank which is above every name, and that every tongue should acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord, resulting in the glory of God the Father."* When you think in this manner, then passages like PSA 45:11 become a reality; *"Then the King will greatly desire your beauty; Because He is your Lord, bow down to Him."* Accept your thoughts of despair and of faith, your doubts and their solutions, your moments of madness and their passing away. Become a part of the solution not the problem. Remember that the only opportunity you have to glorify Him and live His plan for your life is in time. Like Job, be determined only to cling to God, even if He slays you, even if He challenges your faith (JOB 13:15). If you lose your faith, then remain faithlessly His. Paul said in 2TI 3:1 *"But realize this, that in the last days difficult times will come."* As the end approaches, people are going to be self-absorbed, self-promoting, slanderers, addicted to lust, and allergic to God. The Bible says stay clear of these people. Peter said in 1PE 4:12 *"Beloved, do not be surprised at the fiery ordeal among you, which comes upon you for your testing, as though some strange thing were happening to you;"* When life gets really difficult, don't jump to the conclusion that God isn't on the job. Be glad that you have the opportunity to taste a little bit of what the Lord Jesus Christ experienced. This is a spiritual refining process, with glory just around the corner (1PE 4:14-17). Remember, people are watching how you handle sacrificing your life, death or eternity. MAT 5:16 *"Let your light shine before men in such a way that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven."* Be generous with your lives. Open up to others, you'll prompt people to open up

with God, the generous Father in heaven. The point is that we all need to go through situations when we are alone with God and get down into solitary confinement with Him.

*MAT 11:28-30, "Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My load is light."*

He brings gifts into our lives, things like affection for others, exuberance about life, and serenity. Life has its share of trials and adversities, but as JOH 16:33 says, *"These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world."*

So, we now go back and review the Divine command given to Abram when he was in Ur of the Chaldees, and this is the Abrahamic covenant. GEN 12:1-3, *Now the Lord had said to Abram, "Go forth from your country, And from your relatives And from your father's house, To the land which I will show you; And I will make you a great nation, And I will bless you, And make your name great; And so you shall be a blessing; And I will bless those who bless you, And the one who curses you I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed."*

Abram not only needs to be separated from certain people, but he also must be in the environment of freedom for spiritual growth to occur. That's why the doctrine of privacy is so important,, we are to let others grow at their own pace not ours. So in GEN 12:1 the Lord said to Abram, *"Go forth from your country, And from your relatives And from your father's house, To the land which I will show you;"* This is the breaking up of a family, always remember that God has the right to make up and break up families. God broke up Abram's family, but a new family will be made from which will come a great race and a great nation, the Jewish race or the nation of Israel. After salvation the believer has two obligations to God: The first of these obligations is a negative, responsibility to separate from the distractions to the intake of Bible doctrine. This is the only way you will ever remain faithful to doctrine and acquire spiritual growth. The second of these obligations is positive, the responsibility of executing God's will under the principle of Divine guidance. This always calls for maximum doctrine resident in the soul.

In GEN 12:1 the term *"to the land"* which in the Hebrew phrase *el-ha'arets* means literally *the land of God*. There is only one land and simply leaving Ur is not getting into the land. That's the story of a lot of believers, they leavethe world and the bad habits that they have developed, but they never go forward to the promise land, the land of doctrine and glorification of God. Not only is Abraham going to see the land, but he is going to enjoy the land. So the whole verse says GEN 12:1 *Now the Lord had said to Abram, "Go forth from your country, And from your relatives And from your father's house, To the land which I will cause you to see and to enjoy;"*

Notice something very interesting about the Divine command. The specifics are all on the part of certain things you have to do, the negatives. For example, Get out of Ur, get away from your family, and your father. Then there are the positives, *"go to the land which the Lord will show you."* While the land is specified as to direction, there is certainly no detail here that encourages obedience. Abram is not given all of the Divine promises that he will receive if he goes to the promise land, he is just giving the direction to go in, as God does to us at times. There are many commands in the Bible that we are told to obey without God telling us what type of blessings we will receive if we fulfill them. This requires faith in the character and nature of God. Therefore you have to have faith that if you do what God wants you to do, that you will get blessed. However, that is not to be your motivation, your motivation should be PHI 1:21 *"For me, living is Christ, likewise dying is profit."* Or PHI 3:7-8, *"But whatever quality of things were gains to me, those things[gains] I have concluded as an expert as loss for the sake of Christ. Not only this but more than this, I conclude as an expert all things [Paul's pre-salvation human achievement] to be loss because of the surpassing greatness of the knowledge of Christ*

*Jesus my Lord, for whom I have forfeited all things, also, I keep on concluding as an expert them to be piles of dung in order that I may win for Christ."*

When someone in authority over you gives you an order, you don't have to know the whys all the time, just do it. Until Abram becomes a good recruit, where he will go ahead and obey an order without questioning it, he's not any good to God. You have to learn to obey God and do it whether you feel like it or not. Once you do, you continue your spiritual growth. For Abram, not much is said about the land he is to go to, but to receive the land, Abraham will have to fulfill: HEB 11:8 *By means of doctrine resident in the soul, Abraham, when he was called, obeyed by going out to a place which he was to receive for an inheritance; and he went out, not knowing where he was going.* This is the way in which faith is tested. What God does not make clear to us through personal revelation of His word to us, He intends for us to operate in by means of faith, trusting in the object of faith, God Almighty.

So, details are not given on the land yet, that will come later. In the spiritual realm there must be a relationship between your personal motivation and your spiritual life, the Bible calls this doing it as unto the Lord (PRO 16:2). So to believe the promises of God before you see the results of those promises is the greatest demonstration of growing up spiritually.

So, what is the Abrahamic Covenant? First of all, let's describe the word covenant. A covenant is an agreement between two parties. There are two types of covenants: conditional and unconditional. A conditional (bilateral) covenant is an agreement that is binding on both parties for its fulfillment. Both parties agree to fulfill certain conditions. If either party fails to meet their responsibilities, the covenant is broken and neither party has to fulfill the expectations of the covenant. An unconditional (unilateral) covenant is an agreement between two parties, but only one party has to do something. The Abrahamic Covenant is an unconditional or unilateral covenant. God made promises to Abraham that required nothing of Abraham.

GEN 15:18-21 describes a part of the Abrahamic Covenant, specifically dealing with the dimensions of the land God promised to Abraham and his descendants. *On that day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying, "To your descendants I have given this land, From the river of Egypt as far as the great river, the river Euphrates: the Kenite and the Kenizzite and the Kadmonite and the Hittite and the Perizzite and the Rephaim and the Amorite and the Canaanite and the Girgashite and the Jebusite."* The actual Abrahamic Covenant is found in Genesis 12:1-3. The ceremony recorded in Genesis 15 indicates the unconditional nature of the covenant, to understand this unilateral covenants, you need to understand the unconditional promises.

*GEN 15:1-7, After these things the word of the Lord came to Abram in a vision, saying, "Do not fear, Abram, I am a shield to you; Your reward shall be very great." And Abram said, "O Lord God, what wilt Thou give me, since I am childless, and the heir of my house is Eliezer of Damascus?" And Abram said, "Since Thou hast given no offspring to me, one born in my house is my heir." Then behold, the word of the Lord came to him, saying, "This man will not be your heir; but one who shall come forth from your own body, he shall be your heir." And He took him outside and said, "Now look toward the heavens, and count the stars, if you are able to count them." And He said to him, "So shall your descendants be." Then he believed in the Lord; and He reckoned it to him as righteousness. And He said to him, "I am the Lord who brought you out of Ur of the Chaldeans, to give you this land to possess it."*

Here we see three pictures, all of which serves to illustrate the point that the One who made the covenant or the promises has the ability to keep them. The first one is the stars. You see, God has solved greater problems than Abraham's. There are millions and millions of stars in space all moving at unbelievable rates of speed. They do not collide, but hold their orbit. God has established a traffic pattern in the universe, this requires knowledge, and God has omniscience. It also requires power and God has the omnipotence to accomplish it. Immutability is also required, God cannot change, if He weakens, the universe collides!

COL 1:16-17, *“For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities all things have been created by Him and for Him. And He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together.”*

No matter how you look at it, if God has the power to hold the universe together, God has the power to handle any problem you or Abraham, or anyone ever had, or ever will have. So, not only has Abraham been promised an heir from his own loins but also he is told that even as the stars are innumerable, so will his seed be.

Then there is the promise of salvation (verse 6). This points back to a decision that Abraham had already made, he believed in the Lord, in fact Abraham had been saved for over twenty-five years, he had salvation. God is simply saying to Abraham “you trusted Me and at the time you believed, and I credited to your account My righteousness. I provided everything. I did the most for you at the point of salvation, providing eternal life and justification. You did not earn or deserve it, just as with the stars, I do the work.” This passage also brings out faithfulness (verse 7). GEN 15:7 *And He said to him, “I am the Lord who brought you out of Ur of the Chaldeans, to give you this land to possess it.”* In other words, “I been faithful to you in the past Abram, and I will continue to be faithful to you in the future.” Has God been faithful to you in the past? As a part of God's faithfulness, He always provides the doctrine or the opportunity to get the doctrine necessary to pass each test before it comes. Bible doctrine is your way of escape from each test, and that doctrine is provided by the faithfulness of God. God will never give you something for which you do not have the capacity, be it blessing or testing. God is faithful to the Royal Family of God, this is why HEB 10:23 says *“Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for He who promised is faithful;”* You have the most fantastic escrow blessings on deposit for you protected by the faithfulness of God. The more doctrine you have in your soul, the more you see God's perfect character, and the more you advance to spiritual maturity. This results in the things around you which was formerly distracting to your spiritual growth becoming less and less important. All of these illustrations point to One Person, and that Person is not only God, but also God the Son. God the Son is the One who went to the Cross, and God the Son is the One who provides for us in time. Understanding these illustrations and hearing the promises and the unconditional or unilateral covenants, there is no excuse for Abram, or any other believer, to worry about anything. Another cure for Abram's doubts and fears is the doctrine of the word of God, suggested in verses 8-11. Many believers are often filled with doubts, fears and anxieties because they are ignorant of certain parts of doctrine. Abram expresses ignorance of doctrine in verse 8, *And he said, “O Lord God, how may I know that I shall possess it?”* He entertained anxieties about the possibility of inheriting the land which God had promised him. Abram saw the land occupied by the Amorites, as well as many giants. Not only that, Chedorlaomer and his forces had been moving back and forth throughout the land, threatening to envelop it. Abram wondered how he could ever hope to inherit this land. Although it was humanly hopeless, it was not hopeless to God. Remember the words of our Lord in MAT 17:20 *“If you have faith as a mustard seed, you shall say to this mountain [a huge obstacle in your life], ‘Move from here to there,’ and it shall move; and nothing shall be impossible to you.”* Abram will learn a little bit later, the truth behind GEN 18:14 *“Is anything too difficult for the Lord?”* Abram was simply ignorant of or had rejected certain doctrines that would have given him assurance. The Lord said in effect, the biggest problem we have to deal with is the sin of worry and fear (ROM 14:23). The first thing Abram needs to do is to get back in fellowship with God under the enabling power of God the Holy Spirit. Therefore in GEN 15:9, *The Lord said to him, “Bring Me a three year old heifer, and a three year old female goat, and a three year old ram, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon.”* This was not new or strange to Abram, because he knew how to chart the stars. Remember that before the scriptural record there was the Stellar record, the record or the witness of the stars. Abram knew about the witness of the stars. So, the first thing Abram needed to do was to rebound and confess his fear mentioned in verse 1, he also needed to confess his doubt in verse 2, his arrogance in blaming

God in verse 3, and his lack of faith in God in verse 8. Then next, the Lord said *"Bring Me a three year old heifer, and a three year old female goat, and a three year old ram, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon."* The she-goat and the ram both spoke of the work of Christ in salvation. Specifically, the she-goat was the reconciliation offering, while the ram depicted propitiation. The turtle dove and the young pigeon spoke of the Person of Christ and His heavenly origin, the turtle dove portraying His deity and the pigeon His resurrected humanity. Neither bird was divided, because deity cannot be divided or killed. Furthermore, the Lord Jesus Christ is never subject to death again, having risen, and therefore, there will be no dividing or killing of the young pigeon. Now, what was the Lord saying to Abram by bringing these doctrines of Christ before him? Through the heifer, or the rebound offering, He was saying, "Abram, you need have no worries with regard to your sins because by confessing them you are forgiven and your sins are blotted out." The dumbest thing in the world is to try and cover our sins and conceal them. If you have an ounce of character, integrity or virtue, it bothers you. You're only lying to yourself. Therefore, there is no place for a guilt complex or for anxiety about past failures. If you are going to have any discipline in the future it will be over future sins. But be sure you offer the heifer, for it is absolutely necessary to rebound before you can get rid of your fears, worries, doubts and lack of faith in God. You see, up to now Abram was still worried. God had given him a promise and is about to give him a covenant, but he was still worried. He will keep on worrying, no matter if he has a thousand promises, because he has not used rebound. He has not confessed his sin of worry, and he is therefore out of fellowship. You cannot claim the promises of God and appropriate them when you're out of fellowship. You must first confess your sin of fear, worry, doubts and lack of faith in God.

Thus, Abraham offered the heifer, which is the rebound offering, because it was necessary to get back in fellowship before he could even claim the promises of God. So first of all Abraham had to confess his sins. Now, in GEN 15:10 we read, *Then he brought all these to Him and cut them in two, and laid each half opposite the other; but he did not cut the birds.* Abram first divided the heifer, then the she-goat. The point is, if Jesus Christ provided reconciliation (the heifer or the rebound offering, the removal of the barrier between God and man), can He not meet our problems in time? He can, therefore, stop worrying. Then he divided the ram, the ram was the propitiation offering. The point is that if God the Son, hanging on the Cross, satisfied God the Father, and all of the Father's claims against us, can He not handle our problems in time? He can - therefore, stop worrying! The turtle dove spoke of the deity of Christ. Jesus Christ is God - deity. He is always faithful (immutable), He always keeps His Word (veracity), He keeps on loving us and He is eternal in nature. Can a Person like that solve my problems? He can, therefore, stop worrying. The young pigeon represented the resurrected humanity of Christ, which is seated at the right hand of the Father making intercession for us. If the humanity of Christ is thus engaged on our behalf, He can certainly meet our needs in time. Therefore, stop worrying.

As soon as Abraham divided, or cut the heifer in half, we know he had rebounded. When he walked between the pieces of the heifer, he was saying in effect, "I have confessed my sins." When he killed the other animals, it was analogous to being under the blood of Christ trusting in Him as his Lord and Savior. Doctrine is vitally important in our lives, as believers, and when we are worried, it is because we are not using doctrine.

# THE PALESTINIAN COVENANT.

The mystery and truth behind the Palestinian Covenant.

03/16/08

Our main verse is ROM 9:4, where the apostle Paul is talking about the importance and the significance of the nation Israel and the born again Jew. Rom 9:4 *“who are Israelites, to whom belongs the adoption as sons, and the glory [Shekinah glory] and the covenants and the giving of the Law and the temple service and the promises.”* This leads us to the second unconditional and unfulfilled covenant: **The Palestinian Covenant**. The Abrahamic covenant defines the **race** for client nation Israel when Abraham became a Jew at age 99; circumcision was the sign (GEN 12:1-3; GEN 13:15-16; GEN 15:18; GEN 22:15-18; GEN 26:3-4; EXO 6:2-8). The Palestinian covenant defines the **land** for client nation Israel (GEN 15:18; NUM 34:1-12; DEU 30:1-9).

JOS 1:3-4, *Now it came about after the death of Moses the servant of the Lord that the Lord spoke to Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' servant, saying, “Moses My servant is dead; now therefore arise, cross this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which I am giving to them, to the sons of Israel.”*

Notice that the Lord says *“Moses my servant is dead.”* In other words, get going, stop dwelling about the death of Moses. In JOS 1:3 *“Every place [Joshua] on which the sole of your foot treads, I have given it to you, just as I spoke to Moses.”* I'm giving you every square inch of the land you set your foot on, just as I promised Moses. Then the reiteration or repetition of the promise land is given along with its dimensions. JOS 1:4 *“From the wilderness and this Lebanon, even as far as the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and as far as the Great Sea toward the setting of the sun, will be your territory.”* The place that God called them to live in was Canaan, the promise land, for you, the Church-age believer, the place that God has called you to live in is the PPOG, which is far greater than Canaan. JOS 1:5-6, *“No man will be able to stand before you all the days of your life. Just as I have been with Moses, I will be with you; I will not fail you or forsake you. Be strong and courageous, for you shall give this people possession of the land which I swore to their fathers to give them.”*

Then God repeats what is needed to stick with His plan; mental strength and toughness. JOS 1:7 *“Only be strong and very courageous; be careful to do according to all the law which Moses My servant commanded you; do not turn from it to the right or to the left, so that you may have success wherever you go.”* Paul said to the early Church in 1CO 16:13 *“Be on the alert, stand firm in the faith, act like men, be strong.”* EPH 6:10 *Finally, be strong in the Lord, and in the strength of His might.* So, God says to Joshua, give it everything you have, heart and soul. Make sure you carry out the revelation that Moses commanded you, every bit of it. Don't get off track. JOS 1:8 *“This book of the law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do according to all that is written in it, for then you will make your way prosperous, and then you will have success.”* Ponder and meditate on it day and night, making sure you practice everything written in it. JOS 1:9 *“Have I not commanded you? Be strong and courageous! Do not tremble or be dismayed, for the Lord your God is with you wherever you go.”* Your God is with you every step you take.

Now, in the closing chapters of the book of Deuteronomy, the children of Israel are facing a crisis in their national existence. They are about to pass from the proven leadership of Moses into the unproven leadership of Joshua. Secondly, they are standing at the entrance to the land that was promised to them by God. At the time, this land was possessed by Israel's enemies who have shown they will resist any attempt by Israel to enter in the land. Remember that under the principle of typology, Israel is a picture of the believer's soul. We all have to learn to face the giants that are trying to stop us from going into our promise land, be it Canaan or the PPOG. To us the giants are things like fear, worry, lusts, involvement with the details of life. The giants of success, approbation, materialism and most of all, the great evil spoken of in 1TI 6:10 *“For you see the love of money keeps on being a root*

*of all sorts of evil through which [love for money] certain ones by intensively desiring it [money] have gone astray from the doctrine and pierced themselves with many types of pain."*

Lust for money brings trouble and nothing but trouble. Going down that path, some lose their footing in the faith completely, and live to regret it. For the love of **money** Achan brought defeat on Israel's army and death to himself and to his family. Baalim sinned against doctrine and tried to curse the living God. Delaiah betrayed Samson and ultimately slaughtered thousands. Ananias and Sapphires became the first hypocrites in the Church and God executed them as a testimony against their misuse of money and deceit. Judas betrayed and sold out Jesus. Not very good company for money lovers! All because of the love of money.

Remember 2TI 2:4 *No soldier in active service entangles himself in the affairs of everyday life, so that he may please the one who enlisted him as a soldier.* A soldier on duty doesn't get caught up in making deals at the marketplace. He concentrates on carrying out orders. Some of you are slaves to those who give you money, who also take you away from your very own Canaan or promise land, the place that God has called you to live, the PPOG. 1CO 7:23 *"You were bought with a price; do not become slaves of men."* All of you were once held hostage in the sinful society of the cosmic system.

However, huge sum was paid out for your ransom. So please don't, out of old habit, slip back into being or doing what everyone else tells you.

So, at this time, the promise land was possessed by Israel's enemies who have shown they will resist any attempt by Israel to enter in the land. As a result, certain important considerations must be faced by the nation of Israel. Is the land of Palestine still their possession? (Faith says yes, sight says no). Did the Mosaic covenant, which was a conditional covenant, set aside the unconditional Abrahamic covenant? The Mosaic covenant is a conditional covenant based upon the Jews fulfilling certain laws and receiving the consequences of their positive or negative decisions. So many of them, like many of God's people today, were wondering, will they still be blessed by God or will they reap what they sow from their negative decisions? Could Israel hope to enter into permanent possession of their land in the face of such opposition?

To answer these important questions God stated again His covenant promise concerning Israel's possession of the land in DEU 30:1-10. DEU 30:1 *"So it shall be when all of these things have come upon you, the blessing and the curse which I have set before you, and you call them to mind in all nations where the Lord your God has banished you,"* Now, God foresaw or looked down the corridors of time and saw the negative decisions that these people would make with their free will in resisting the Holy Spirit. He is speaking of their sin and punishment as being certain; yet, at the same time, shows how they may turn to Him and live, even while he was pouring out his indignation upon them because of their transgressions. The unconditional covenants or promises are there just as God said, but not where the Jews are, they are in the cosmic system. So, in spite of the promises of God and the unconditional or unilateral covenants, you still must be in the place where the covenant or the promises reside.

Under the Palestinian covenant all of the middle East and part of Africa and Europe is promised to the Jews, but not all the land in the world. If they are in the wrong place, they won't receive the unconditional covenant of the promise land.

DEU 30:2 *"and you return to the Lord your God and obey Him with all your heart and soul according to all that I command you today, you and your sons,"* While they are out among the nations where God has dispersed them and the blessings and curses come in just the way God has set them. If they take them seriously and come back to GOD, and obey Him, then something will happen. DEU 30:3 *"then the Lord your God will restore you from captivity, and have compassion on you, and will gather you again from all the peoples where the Lord your God has scattered you."* God will restore everything, and He'll have compassion on them; He'll come back and pick up the pieces from all the places where you were scattered.



This means that the rejection of Israel, and the desolation of the promised inheritance was not to be the end of God's dealings with them. The closing words of this passage therefore are words of comfort and promise. This is why Moses wrote in DEU 4:29-30, *"But from there you will seek the Lord your God, and you will find Him if you search for Him with all your heart and all your soul. When you are in distress and all these things have come upon you [by the way, for your sake]."* In HOS 5:15 the Lord says, *"I will go away and return to My place Until they acknowledge their guilt and seek My face; In their affliction they will earnestly seek Me, in the latter days, you will return to the Lord your God and listen to His voice."*

DEU 4:31 *"For the Lord your God is a compassionate God; He will not fail you nor destroy you nor forget the covenant with your fathers which He swore to them."*

Your God, is above all a compassionate God. In the end He will not abandon you, He won't bring you to ruin, He won't forget the covenant with your ancestors which He swore to them. DEU 4:32 *"Indeed, ask now concerning the former days which were before you, since the day that God created man on the earth, and inquire from one end of the heavens to the other. Has anything been done like this great thing, or has anything been heard like it?"*

From the day God created man and woman on this Earth, and from the horizon in the east to the horizon in the west--as far back as you can imagine and as far away as you can imagine, has as great a thing as this ever happened? God loves to reveal and accomplish something more than merely preserving the people from apostasy by the threat of punishment. He desires to secure a more faithful attachment and continued obedience to His doctrines by awakening the conscience of man to His unconditional love.

So Moses reminds them again of the glorious miracles of Divine grace performed in connection with the election and deliverance of Israel, such as had never been heard of from the beginning of the world; and with this strong practical proof of the love of the true God, he brings his first message to a close. Therefore, he says DEU 4:33-34, *"Has any people heard the voice of God speaking from the midst of the fire, as you have heard it, and survived? Or has a god tried to go to take for himself a nation from within another nation by trials, by signs and wonders and by war and by a mighty hand and by an outstretched arm and by great terrors, as the Lord your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes?"*

God used trials, miracles, and war, and revealed a glimpse of His awesome and staggering ways. Verse 34 says that He did it for you in Egypt while you stood right there and watched. Remember that Egypt represents the world system, so we could say, God revealed His power in the midst of all the cosmic odds against us (ROM 8:31).

DEU 4:35 *"To you it was shown that you might know that the Lord, He is God; there is no other besides Him."* They were shown all this so that they would know that He's the only God there is. Think of it with me for a moment, the comfort of the unconditional or unilateral covenants. God endeavored and accomplished to go and take for Himself a nation of people (the Jews, or Israel) from the midst of another nation (Egypt), by temptations, signs, wonders, war, and by a mighty hand, and an a stretched out arm, and by great terrors. This was a most extraordinary thing, that an entire people, consisting of upwards of 600,000 effective men, besides women and children should, without striking a blow, be brought out of the midst of a very powerful nation. They were brought out in such an open and public a manner, that the sea itself should be supernaturally divided to sustain this mighty act of God. It was in a desert utterly unfriendly to human life that they would also be sustained for forty years. These were such instances of the power and goodness of God that they could be forgotten.

Notice in this verse, verse 34, Moses enumerates seven different means used by the Lord in bringing about Israel's deliverance. 1) Trials is the Hebrew word *macot* which means to try or prove. The miracles which God performed tried and tested the faith and prove the obedience of the children of Israel. 2) Signs is the Hebrew word *'otot* which means to come near; such signs as God gave them of His continual presence and providence. Particularly the pillar of cloud and pillar of fire, keeping near to them night and day, and always directing their journeys, showing them when and where to pitch

their tents. 3) Wonders means to persuade; persuasive facts and events. Whether strictly miraculous, and exceeding the powers of nature or not. It means typical representations of His presence. It also refers to typical men, raised up by God as types of Christ, and proofs that God would bring His servant. All the dealings of God with these people, and even the people themselves, were types of distant facts and future occurrences. 4) War, *milchaamaah* - hostile engagements; such as those with the Amalekites, the Amorites, and the Bashanites, in which the hand of God was seen rather than the hand of man. 5) A mighty hand, the Hebrew word *yaad* - one that is strong to deal its blows, irresistible in its operations, and grasps its enemies hard so that they cannot escape, and protects its friends so powerfully that they cannot be injured. Neither tactics, deceptions nor policy was used in this business, but the openly displayed power of God. 6) An outstretched arm *uwbizrowa* means a series of almighty operations, following each other in quick astonishing succession. 7) Great terrors, the Hebrew word *mowraa'iyim* means such terror, dismay, as were produced by the ten plagues.

*DEU 4:36-37, "Out of the heavens He let you hear His voice [doctrines] to discipline you; and on earth He let you see His great fire, and you heard His words from the midst of the fire. Because He loved your fathers, therefore He chose their descendants after them. And He personally brought you from Egypt by His great power,"*

He loved your ancestors and chose to work with their children. He personally and powerfully brought you out of Egypt. DEU 4:38 *"driving out from before you nations greater and mightier than you, to bring you in and to give you their land for an inheritance, as it is today."* In order to displace bigger and stronger and older nations with you, bringing you out and turning their land over to you as an inheritance.

It's happening, says Moses, this very day.

DEU 4:39-40, *"Know therefore today, and take it to your heart, that the Lord, He is God in heaven above and on the earth below; there is no other. So you shall keep His statutes and His commandments which I am giving you today, that it may go well with you and with your children after you, and that you may live long on the land which the Lord your God is giving you for all time."* Obediently live by His ways and doctrines which the Lord is giving you today so that you'll live well and your children after you. You'll live a long time in the land that GOD, your God, is giving you.

Now, these were all reminders of the Abrahamic Covenant, therefore the Palestinian covenant is the reassurance that the Jews would possess the real estate that God promised Abraham.

So, back in DEU 30:1 *"So it shall be when all of these things have come upon you, the blessing and the curse which I have set before you,"*

The blessing in this connection can be explained on the ground that Moses was surveying the future generally, in which not only a curse, but a blessing also would come upon the nation, according to its attitude towards the Lord as a whole and in its pivot of mature believers. Remember in ROM 11:2-4, we are told the story of how Elijah was agonizing over Israel and cried out in prayer, *"God, they murdered your prophets, They trashed your altars; I'm the only one left and now they're after me!"* Remember God's answer? ROM 11:4 *But what is the divine response to him? "I have kept for Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal."* Even in times of great apostasy, there would always be a pivot which could not die out.

DEU 30:1-6, *"So it shall be when all of these things have come upon you, the blessing and the curse which I have set before you, and you call them to mind in all nations where the Lord your God has banished you, and you return to the Lord your God and obey Him with all your heart and soul according to all that I command you today, you and your sons, then the Lord your God will restore you from captivity, and have compassion on you, and will gather you again from all the peoples where the Lord your God has scattered you. If your outcasts are at the ends of the earth, from there the Lord your God will gather you, and from there He will bring you back. And the Lord your God will bring you into the land which your fathers possessed, and you shall possess it; and He will prosper*

*you and multiply you more than your fathers. Moreover the Lord your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your descendants, to love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul, in order that you may live."*

*JER 32:38-39 says, "And they shall be My people, and I will be their God; and I will give them one heart and one way, that they may fear Me always, for their own good, and for {the good of} their children after them."*

And how will the Lord do this?

Answer, EZE 11:19 *"And I shall give them one heart, and shall put a new spirit within them. And I shall take the heart of stone out of their flesh and give them a heart of flesh,"* This is not a violation of their free will because they have literally asked for help from the Lord.

*DEU 30:7-10, "And the Lord your God will inflict all these curses on your enemies and on those who hate you, who persecuted you. And you shall again obey the Lord, and observe all His commandments which I command you today. Then the Lord your God will prosper you abundantly in all the work of your hand, in the offspring of your body and in the offspring of your cattle and in the produce of your ground, for the Lord will again rejoice over you for good, just as He rejoiced over your fathers; if you obey the Lord your God to keep His commandments and His statutes which are written in this book of the law, if you turn to the Lord your God with all your heart and soul."*

So, we call this the Palestinian covenant because it answers the questions concerning Israel's relation to the land promises of the Abrahamic covenant. So, the Palestinian covenant reaffirms to Israel their title deed to the land of promise. In spite of their unfaithfulness and unbelief, the Palestinian covenant confirms their promised land. An analysis of Deu 30 will show that there are seven main features in the covenant.

1. The nation will be plucked off the land for its unfaithfulness, DEU 28:63-68; DEU 30:1-3.
2. There will be a future repentance of Israel, DEU 28:63-68; 30:1-3.
3. Their Messiah will return, DEU 30:3-6.
4. Israel will be restored to the land, DEU 30:5.
5. Israel will be converted as a nation, DEU 30:4-8; ROM 11:26-27.
6. Israel's enemies will be judged, DEU 30:7.
7. The nation will then receive her full blessing, DEU 30:9.

God takes Israel's relation to the land as a matter of extreme importance. God not only guarantees its possession to them but obligates Himself to judge and remove all Israel's enemies. He will give the nation a new heart, a conversion, before He places them in the land.

# THE DAVIDIC COVENANT.

The relationship between Abraham, David and the believer in the Church-age.

03/23/08

We are ready for the third covenant, the next of Israel's unconditional or unilateral covenants: The Davidic covenant which emphasizes the **seed** for client nation Israel. Within the covenants we have God's promise of the **Jewish race** - Abrahamic covenant. The **land for Israel** - Palestinian covenant, the promise seed - or client nation Israel.

The Davidic Covenant refers to God's promises to David through Nathan the prophet. It is found in 2Sa chapter 7 and later summarized in 1CH 17:11-14 and 2CH 6:16. This unconditional covenant, made between God and David, promises David, and Israel, that the Messiah would come from the lineage of David and the tribe of Judah, and would establish a kingdom that would endure forever. The Davidic Covenant is unconditional, meaning that God does not place any conditions of obedience upon its fulfillment. The promises are made on God's faithfulness, and do not depend on David or Israel's faithfulness.

The Davidic Covenant centers on key promises that are made to David:

1. God reaffirms the promise of the land that He made in the first two covenants with Israel. 2SA 7:10 *"I will also appoint a place for My people Israel and will plant them, that they may live in their own place and not be disturbed again, nor will the wicked afflict them any more as formerly,"*
2. God promises that David's descendant, or seed, will succeed Him as king of Israel and that David's throne will be established forever. This promise is seen in 2 Sa 7:12-13, *"When your days are complete and you lie down with your fathers, I will raise up your descendant after you, who will come forth from you, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build a house for My name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever."*

The provisions of the covenant are summarized in 2SA 7:16 *"And your house and your kingdom shall endure before Me forever; your throne shall be established forever."* The promise that David's house, kingdom and throne will be established forever are significant because they show that the Messiah will come from the lineage of David, and that He will establish a kingdom from which He will reign. The covenant is summarized by the words *house*, promising a dynasty in the lineage of David; *kingdom*, referring to a people who are governed by a king; *throne*, emphasizing the authority of the king's rule; and *forever*, emphasizing the eternal and unconditional nature of this promise to David and Israel.

Therefore, in spite of all the demonic and religious attacks made upon Israel, they will still prevail. If this is true about Israel, it is true about the Church, the bride of Jesus Christ. It doesn't matter how many attacks are made upon God's people, upon you, inevitably the attacks will not prevail. We all need to realize this as never before, we are a part of an eternal dynasty. You are a part of the Davidic dynasty because through faith alone in Christ alone, you are a spiritual child of Abraham.

In GAL 3:6-7, the apostle Paul writes: *Even so Abraham believed God, and it was reckoned to him as righteousness. Therefore, be sure that it is those who are of faith who are sons of Abraham.* Those who put their trust in Christ (not in the law) are like Abraham: Children of faith.

GAL 3:8 *And the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles [the non-Jew] by faith, preached the gospel beforehand to Abraham, saying, "All the nations shall be blessed in you."* In other words, it was all laid out beforehand in Scripture that God would set things right with non-Jews by faith. The Apostle is saying that people were saved hundreds of years before the Mosaic Law or the Ten Commandments were given. Therefore, following the Mosaic Law or the Ten Commandments cannot save you, as many teach.

GAL 3:9-10, *So then those who are of faith are blessed with Abraham, the believer. For as many as are of the works of the Law are under a curse; for it is written, "Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all things written in the book of the law, to perform them."* Paul is saying being saved by your faith alone in Christ alone is not a new doctrine. Anyone who tries to live by his own effort, independent of God, is doomed to failure.

GAL 3:11 *"Now that no one is justified by the Law before God is evident; for, The righteous man shall live by faith."* The obvious impossibility of carrying out such a program with the Law, and not being able to be perfect, should make it plain that no one can sustain a relationship with God that way. The person who lives in right relationship with God does it by embracing what God arranges for him, such as the unconditional or unilateral covenants, which is what God did for the Jews. Doing things for God is the opposite of entering into what God does for you. Man's soul is empty unless he is in right standing with God, it is then that he is fully alive, really alive (HAB 2:4). Our Lord came so that we could have real and eternal life, more and better life than they we ever dreamed of.

GAL 3:12 *However, the Law is not of faith; on the contrary, "He who practices them shall live by them."* Keeping rules does not naturally evolve into living by faith, but only perpetuates itself in more and more rules.

GAL 3:13 *Christ redeemed us from the curse of the Law, having become a curse for us, for it is written, "Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree."* Christ redeemed us from that self-defeating, cursed life by absorbing it completely into Himself. When our Lord was nailed to the Cross: He became a curse, and at the same time dissolved the curse.

GAL 3:14 *in order that in Christ Jesus the blessing of Abraham might come to the Gentiles, so that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.* Because of that, we can see that Abraham's blessing is present and available for non-Jews also. We are all able to receive God's life, His Spirit, in and with us by believing, just the way Abraham received it.

GAL 3:15-16, *"Brethren, I speak in terms of human relations: even though it is only a man's covenant, yet when it has been ratified, no one sets it aside or adds conditions to it. Now the promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. He does not say, 'And to seeds,' as referring to many, but rather to one, 'And to your seed,' that is, Christ."*

The promises were made to Abraham and to his descendant. The Scripture, written in the careful language of a legal document, says *to your descendant*, (singular), referring to Christ. Therefore in GAL 3:26-27, *"For you are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized into Christ [a reference to the baptism of the Spirit not water baptism] have clothed yourselves with Christ."* Your baptism in Christ was not washing you up for a fresh start. It involved dressing you in an adult faith wardrobe, the life of Christ, the fulfillment of God's original promise and the fulfillment of the Davidic covenant referring to David's descendant, the Lord Jesus Christ.

GAL 3:28 *"There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus."*

In Christ's family there can be no division between Jew and non-Jew, slave and free, male and female. That is, we are all in a common relationship with Jesus Christ.

GAL 3:29 *"And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's offspring, heirs according to promise."* Because of the fact that the Jews or the nation of Israel would bring forth the promise seed, the Lord Jesus Christ, they have always been the target of attacks from Satan and the kingdom of darkness, but as we have noted, these attacks will not prevail.

So, the Davidic covenant is another unconditional or unilateral covenant taught in the word of God. This is the promise again given to David concerning his descendant, the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan tried his best to stop this, starting with GEN 3:15. The lineage of David came down to only one person in the entire world left alive whom the Lord could come through. This brings us to what is known as the Coniah curse. So, again some background: The Davidic Covenant says that the seed of the woman, the

humanity of Christ, will descend from the tribe of Judah through the family of David (2SA 7:8-17; PSA 89:20-37). The two lineages of our Lord originate from David and Bathsheba. Their son Solomon's line, which is traced in Matthew. This line ends with Joseph, the legal, but not real father, of our Lord's humanity. That's another reason for the virgin birth for it is this line that has the curse on it because of one of His descendants named Jeconiah, also called Jehoiachin and eventually called Coniah. His kingship lasted for only 3 months and 10 days before he surrendered to Nebuchadnezzar who took him to Babylon and imprisoned him for 36 years. He was a coward and had negative toward doctrine. Because of that, there is the Coniah Curse. The Coniah curse is when our Lord said that Coniah would never have a son that will rule in fulfillment of the Davidic dynasty's great covenant, the Davidic covenant. So one of the linages of our Lord's humanity is through Solomon's line, which is traced in Matthew. Again, this line ends with Joseph, the legal, but not real father, of our Lord's humanity. The other lineage, Nathan's line, is found in Luke and ends with Mary, the source of the true humanity of Christ. Joseph again is not the real father of the humanity of Jesus Christ. This was an amazing way in which God fulfilled His word. Once again, Satan thought he had defeated God by perverting the line of David, but Satan had no idea how the virgin birth would fit into the plan of God magnificently and bring glory to God.

Coniah was 18 when he succeeded his father, and was king of Judah for three months and ten days; the 20th king from David. Because of a young and weak leader and because the Jews had become negative toward doctrine, Jerusalem was an easy prey to Nebuchadnezzar. Judah was invaded and judged for their negative volition toward Bible doctrine for three or four years by the Chaldaean, the Ammonites, and the Moabite armies sent by Nebuchadnezzar (as Jehovah's executioner of judgment) in consequence of Jehoiakim's, Coniah's father, and later Coniah's for their rebellion toward God. If there is no response to the first four cycles of discipline, put on a client nation, God eventually removes that client nation from history. Rev 17-18 teaches this under the principle of evil one destroying evil two. Negative volition, apostasy, and passive arrogance or indifference creates the vacuum which attracts the persecution of active arrogance and historical disaster. Evil demands evil and cruelty demands cruelty, and therefore arrogance demands the function of active arrogance against it. This has always been the pattern of history and therefore, part of the historical trend, which explains the Jewish holocausts and the rise and fall of nations and empires. If a client nation reaches the point of religious degeneracy, then some other nation will wipe it out. This is a part of God's plan to preserve the human race so that it will not self destruct. Political degeneracy persecutes and destroys religious degeneracy. However, when Divine judgment falls on a nation, and the nation has a pivot of mature believers, that pivot is secure. The pivot is always preserved, even though it also shares in the difficulties of the disaster. While the pivot is secure, the spinoff, or the apostate believers, is always destroyed by historical catastrophe. This is how God administers the sin unto death to apostates. Historical disaster separates the pivot from the spinoff. If the pivot is too small and the spinoff is too large, then the nation is destroyed. But if the nation is destroyed, the pivot is preserved through the disaster (ISA 28:5-6). In fact, the book of laments is a book written by a believer who was a part of the pivot in Israel and who observed as his people were being taken in to slavery! When the establishment means of deliverance fail, response to Bible teaching is the last hope. If the pivot is large enough, not only is the client nation delivered from historical disaster, but a large pivot of mature believers means great blessing by association to the client nation and to all nations around it.

Back to the Davidic covenant which is another unconditional or unilateral covenant taught in the word of God that we are noting. In Psa 89 we read, *"I will sing of the lovingkindness of the Lord forever; To all generations I will make known Thy faithfulness with my mouth."* Through the word of God which abides forever in 1PE 1:25, and shall not pass away in MAT 24:35, David is forever telling everyone how faithful God is. David says, I'll never quit telling the story of your love, how you built the cosmos

and guaranteed everything in it. Your love has always been our lives' foundation. Then David quotes what the Lord said in 2Sa 7 in [PSA 89:3-4](#), *"I have made a covenant with My chosen; I have sworn to David My servant, I will establish your seed forever, And build up your throne to all generations. Selah."* This is the promise again given to David concerning his descendant, the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan has tried his best to stop this. Ever since [GEN 3:15](#), Satan has had his eye on what God was doing. [GEN 3:15](#) is when God said to Satan *"And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her seed; He shall bruise you on the head, And you shall bruise him on the heel."*

The Davidic Covenant says that the seed of the woman, the humanity of Christ, will descend from the tribe of Judah through the family of David ([2SA 7:8-17](#); [PSA 89:20-37](#)). So, the two lineages of our Lord originate from David and Bathsheba. Their son Solomon's line, given in Matthew, which ends with Joseph, the legal but not real father of our Lord's humanity.

*In [JER 22:28-30](#), "Is this man Coniah a despised, shattered jar? Or is he an undesirable vessel? Why have he and his descendants been hurled out And cast into a land that they had not known? O land, land, land, Hear the word of the Lord! Thus says the Lord, 'Write this man down childless [meaning none of Coniah's sons will ever sit on the Davidic throne], A man who will not prosper in his days; For no man of his descendants will prosper Sitting on the throne of David Or ruling again in Judah."*

First of all, Josiah was king; his second son, Jehoiakim, was made what they called a vassal to Nebuchadnezzar after the fourth cycle of discipline at the battle of Carchemish. He was actually like a slave to a rich man. As a reversionist, Jehoiakim destroyed copies of Scripture, and so in [JER 36:29-31](#) his death was prophesied. His son was Coniah, who in 597 BC ruled for three months and ten days. He was made a prisoner for thirty-six years. So the curse of Coniah is that Coniah would never have a son to sit on David's throne in fulfillment of the Davidic Covenant. Yet he was in the line of David. This curse was fulfilled with the virgin birth, when Joseph (from Solomon and Coniah's line) became the legal, but not the real father. Another reason Matthew traces Solomon's line of the genealogy of Christ through Joseph and Luke traces Nathan's line of genealogy of Christ through Mary.

Again, this is a remarkable account of how God's grace provided for us a Savior, Jesus Christ our Lord, and this is why two genealogies are listed in the New Testament. If Jesus had been the real son of Joseph, He never could have sat on the throne of David. He would be under the curse, and yet He had to be the legal son of Joseph to have the right.

God had to devise a plan by which He would be the legal heir of the throne but that He would not be in the line of David descending through Jeconiah or Coniah. So we have Jehoiakim, and then his son Coniah, called Jeconiah, called Jehoiachin, and the Lord said Coniah will never have a son that will rule in fulfillment of the Davidic dynasty's great covenant, the Davidic covenant. Coniah did have several sons, Shealtiel is the one who becomes pertinent, but Shealtiel never ruled. He was born in Babylon. He would never go back and rule in Jerusalem. However, Shealtiel would have an adopt son called Zerubbabel ([HAG 2:21-23](#)). Now, Zerubbabel would go back as a great leader, but he would never sit on David's throne.

Shealtiel, son of Coniah, king of Judah, is said to be the father of Zerubbabel, according to [1CH 3:17-19](#) and [MAT 1:12](#); but son of Neri and father of Zerubbabel, according to Luke 3:27. Now, no genealogy would assign inferior ancestry to the true son and heir of a king and, we may assert with the utmost confidence that Luke gives us the true state of the case when he informs us that Shealtiel was the son of Neri and a descendant of Nathan the son of David. From the insertion of Shealtiel in the Royal lineage, after the childless Coniah, we can say with confidence that Solomon's line was next to the throne of David.

So, since Zerubbabel's true line comes down from Nathan, Zerubbabel would have a son who would reign forever, and that son would be the product of the virgin Mary, our Lord Jesus Christ. But the line of Coniah, Shealtiel and before him Jehoiakim; they are cut off! They are under the three generation curse.

# THE NEW COVENANT WITH ISRAEL.

03/30/08

We have noted the first three Covenants to Israel:

1. The Abrahamic covenant which emphasizes the Jewish **race**.
2. The Palestinian covenant emphasizes the **land** for Israel.
3. The Davidic covenant emphasizes the **promise seed**.

The fourth unconditional Covenant which God entered into with Israel (not the Church), is called **The New Covenant**. It guarantees Israel a converted heart as the foundation of all her blessings. The New Covenant promised to Israel is stated in JER 31:31-32, "*Behold, days are coming,*" declares the Lord, "*when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah [the two kingdoms of Israel]. Not like the covenant which I made with their fathers in the day I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt [Mosaic Law], My covenant which they broke, although I was a husband to them,*" declares the Lord. It won't be a repeat of the Covenant they broke, even though God did His part as their Master. JER 31:33 "*But this is the covenant which I will make with the house of Israel after those days,*" declares the Lord, "*I will put My law within them, and on their heart I will write it; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.*" This is the New Covenant that God makes with Israel when the time comes. He will put His doctrine within them, write it on their hearts, and be their God, and they will be His people. JER 31:34 "*And they shall not teach again, each man his neighbor and each man his brother, saying, 'Know the Lord,' for they shall all know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them,*" declares the Lord, "*for I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more.*" They will know God first-hand; He will wipe the slate clean for each one of them. Notice that He'll forget that they ever sinned.

These are provisions for Israel; they are the people of the New Covenant who have believed in Christ alone, by faith alone. The provisions of this covenant are as follows: a) It is an unconditional-grace covenant resting on the five *I will's* of God. The five *I will's* of Satan, in Isa 14, all had to do with self-exaltation. These are the five *I will's* of God, all having to do with the grace of God. Five times (the number for grace), the Phrase *I will* is used in JER 31:31-34.

EZE 16:60-62 teaches the same, "*Nevertheless, I will remember My covenant with you in the days of your youth, and I will establish an everlasting covenant with you. Then you will remember your ways and be ashamed when you receive your sisters, {both} your older and your younger; and I will give them to you as daughters, but not because of your covenant. Thus I will establish My covenant with you, and you shall know that I am the Lord,*"

Who was this said to? Look at EZE 16:1-7, where God affirms His love for Israel in her infant stage. EZE 16:1-4, "*Then the word of the Lord came to me saying, 'Son of man, make known to Jerusalem her abominations, and say, 'Thus says the Lord God to Jerusalem, Your origin and your birth are from the land of the Canaanite, your father was an Amorite and your mother a Hittite. As for your birth, on the day you were born your navel cord was not cut, nor were you washed with water for cleansing; you were not rubbed with salt or even wrapped in cloths.'*" In other words, there was nothing good and clean about you.

EZE 16:5-7, "*No eye looked with pity on you to do any of these things for you, to have compassion on you. Rather you were thrown out into the open field, for you were abhorred on the day you were born. When I passed by you and saw you squirming in your blood, I said to you {while you were} in your blood, 'Live!' I said to you while you were in your blood, 'Live!' 'I made you numerous like plants of the field. Then you grew up, became tall, and reached the age for fine ornaments; {your} breasts were formed and your hair had grown. Yet you were naked and bare.'*"



In EZE 16:8-14, God reminds Israel that she was chosen and related to Jehovah by marriage, *“Then I passed by you and saw you, and behold, you were at the time for love [you needed to be loved and wanted]; so I spread My skirt over you and covered your nakedness. I also swore to you and entered into a covenant with you so that you became Mine,” declares the Lord God. “Then I bathed you with water, washed off your blood from you, and anointed you with oil. [He cleansed them (salvation) and anointed them with oil referring to the ministry of God the Holy Spirit]. I also clothed you with embroidered cloth, and put sandals of porpoise skin [leather sandals] on your feet; and I wrapped you with fine linen and covered you with silk, And I adorned you with ornaments, put bracelets on your hands, and a necklace around your neck. I also put a ring in your nostril, earrings in your ears, and a beautiful crown on your head. Thus you were adorned with gold and silver, and your dress was of fine linen, silk, and embroidered cloth. You ate fine flour, honey, and oil; so you were exceedingly beautiful and advanced to royalty. Then your fame went forth among the nations on account of your beauty, for it was perfect because of **My splendor** which I bestowed on you,” declares the Lord God.*

But in EZE 16:15, she (Israel) played the harlot. EZE 16:9-15, *“But you trusted in your beauty [became arrogant] and played the harlot because of your fame, and you poured out your harlotries on every passer-by who might be {willing.}”*

Their beauty went to their head and they became a common whore, grabbing anyone or anything coming down the street and taking them into their bed or their place of intimacy.

EZE 16:20-34, *“Moreover, you took your sons and daughters whom you had borne to Me, and you sacrificed them to idols to be devoured. Were your harlotries so small a matter? You slaughtered My children, and offered them up to idols by causing them to pass through {the fire.} And besides all your abominations and harlotries you did not remember the days of your youth, when you were naked and bare and squirming in your blood. Then it came about after all your wickedness (‘Woe, woe to you!’ declares the Lord God), that you built yourself a shrine and made yourself a high place in every square. You built yourself a high place at the top of every street, and made your beauty abominable; and you spread your legs to every passer-by to multiply your harlotry. You also played the harlot with the Egyptians, your lustful neighbors, and multiplied your harlotry to make Me angry. Behold now, I have stretched out My hand against you and diminished your rations. And I delivered you up to the desire of those who hate you, the daughters of the Philistines, who are ashamed of your lewd conduct. Moreover, you played the harlot with the Assyrians because you were not satisfied; you even played the harlot with them and still were not satisfied. You also multiplied your harlotry with the land of merchants, Chaldea, yet even with this you were not satisfied. How languishing is your heart,” declares the Lord God, “while you do all these things, the actions of a bold-faced harlot. When you built your shrine at the beginning of every street and made your high place in every square, in disdain of money, you were not like a harlot. You adulteress wife, who takes strangers instead of her husband! Men give gifts to all harlots, but you give your gifts to all your lovers to bribe them to come to you from every direction for your harlotries. Thus you are different from those women in your harlotries, in that no one plays the harlot as you do, because you give money and no money is given you; thus you are different.”*

**Therefore, the punishment of dispersion was dealt to Israel in EZE 16:35-52.**

However, this is not the final setting of Israel since there will be restoration (EZE 16:53-63). EZE 16:53 *“Nevertheless, I will restore their captivity, the captivity of Sodom and her daughters, the captivity of Samaria and her daughters, and along with them your own captivity,”* God is going to reverse their fortunes, the fortunes of Sodom and her daughters and the fortunes of Samaria and her daughters. After all of their sin, shame, and guilt God says this in EZE 16:60-63, *“Nevertheless, I will remember My covenant with you in the days of your youth, and I will establish an everlasting covenant with you. Then you will remember your ways and be ashamed when you receive your sisters, {both} your older and your younger; and I will give them to you as daughters, but not because of your covenant. Thus I will establish*

*My covenant with you, and you shall know that I am the Lord, in order that you may remember and be ashamed, and never open your mouth anymore because of your humiliation, when I have forgiven you for all that you have done," the Lord God declares.*

It is any wonder that Paul wrote in ROM 2:4 "Or do you think lightly of the riches of His kindness and forbearance and patience, not knowing that the kindness of God leads you to repentance?" We have learned about this many times. We have learned how important it is to keep persevering until the end, and how the Lord gives positive believers incredible gifts along the way to keep us properly motivated. One of those incredible gifts is the insight into our sorrows and difficulties and trials and how all divine discipline is administered in grace.

So the New Covenant is an unconditional-grace Covenant resting on the five *I will's* of God.

The New Covenant is also an everlasting covenant meaning that it is eternal.

The New Covenant also promises the impartation of a renewed mind and heart which may be called regeneration (JER 31:33; ISA 59:21).

The New Covenant provides for restoration to the favor and blessing of God (HOS 2:19-20; ISA 61:9). Forgiveness of sin is also included in the covenant (JER 31:32).

The indwelling of the Holy Spirit is also included in the New Covenant. Not permanent indwelling, like the Church-age believer, who has God the Father, Son, and H.S. within, but the indwelling of the Holy Spirit to teach the believer (JER 31:33-34; EZE 36:27). There will be materialistic blessings for Israel in the land according to the provisions of the New Covenant (JER 32:41; ISA 61:8; EZE 34:25-27). The sanctuary will be rebuilt in Jerusalem (EZE 37:26-27). War shall cease and peace shall reign according to (HOS 2:18). The fact that this is also a definite characteristic of the Millennium (ISA 2:4). The blood of The Lord Jesus Christ is the foundation of all the blessings of the New Covenant (ZEC 9:11). The New Covenant then was made with the Jewish people. Confirmation of this Covenant is given in the statement in ISA 61:8-9, where it is called everlasting, and again in EZE 37:21-28. The following points are to be observed: a) Israel is to be re-gathered. b) Israel is to be one nation ruled by one king. c) Israel is no longer to be idolatrous but to be cleansed and forgiven. d) Israel is to dwell forever in the land after the re-gathering. e) The covenant of peace is to be everlasting. f) God's tabernacle is to be with them; He will be present with them in a visible way. g) Israel is to be known among the Gentiles as a nation blessed of God.

This covenant then has to do with the regeneration, forgiveness, and justification of Israel. Also there will be the outpouring of the Holy Spirit with His subsequent ministries, and Israel's re-gathering and restoration to the place of blessing.

This covenant is a gracious Covenant that depends entirely upon the five *I will's* of God for its fulfillment (JER 31:31-34). This Covenant does not depend upon man. This covenant amplifies the third great area of the original Abrahamic covenant, the area of blessing.

You see, first we have the Abrahamic covenant with its main three promises: land, seed, and blessing. The land is then emphasized in the Palestinian covenant, the seed is emphasized in the Davidic covenant, and the blessing is emphasized in the New Covenant.

This covenant is largely occupied with the question of salvation and the impartation of the new heart. Covenant theologians and the Amillennial view teaches that the reference to the New covenant in the New Testament is proof that the Church is the New Israel. Therefore they teach that there is no need for a future earthly Millennium since the Church is the kingdom now.

They use HEB 8:8-12 to justify their erroneous position.

*HEB 8:8-13, For finding fault with them, He says, "Behold, days are coming, says the Lord, When I will effect a new covenant With the house of Israel and with the house of Judah; Not like the covenant which I made with their fathers On the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; For they did not continue in My covenant, And I did not care for them, says the Lord. For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel After those days, says the Lord: I will put My*

*laws into their minds, And I will write them upon their hearts. And I will be their God, And they shall be My people. And they shall not teach everyone his fellow citizen, And everyone his brother, saying, 'Know the Lord,' For all shall know Me, From the least to the greatest of them. For I will be merciful to their iniquities, And I will remember their sins no more. When He said, 'A new covenant,' He has made the first obsolete. But whatever is becoming obsolete and growing old is ready to disappear."*

In reply to this position, it is necessary to observe certain important facts about the New covenant. First of all it should be clear that this Covenant was made with Israel, the physical seed of Abraham according to the flesh, and with them alone (JER 31:31; ISA 59:20-21; JER 32:37-40; JER 50:4-5; EZE 16:60-63; EZE 34:25-26; EZE 37:21-28). It is called the New Covenant because it replaces the old covenant. As we have seen the scripture clearly teaches that the Mosaic Covenant or the Law was made with the nation Israel only (ROM 2:14, GAL 3:24-25, LEV 26:46, DEU 4:8). There can be no question that the Law pertains to Israel only, and since this old Covenant was made with Israel, the new Covenant is made with the same people (JER 31:35-37).

The sequence of events set up by the prophet Jeremiah in JER 32:37-41 is that Israel will first be re-gathered and restored to the land, and then will experience the blessings of the New Covenant in the land. God cannot fulfill the Covenant until Israel is re-gathered as a nation. Her complete restoration is demanded by the New Covenant and this has not taken place yet.

Principle, fulfillment of the prophecies requires:

- 1) The regathering of Israel.
- 2) Their spiritual rebirth.
- 3) The return of Christ, ROM 11:26-27.

This New covenant then will be realized in the Millennial age, JER 31:34; EZE 32:25; ISA 11:6-9. The covenant can only be fulfilled literally by those with whom it was made and since the Church is not Israel, the Church can not fulfill that covenant.

These four covenants with the nation Israel have been surveyed to show that they are unconditional and eternal Covenants. They are to be fulfilled because of the faithfulness of the One making the Covenants, not the ones to whom the covenant is made!

When the Covenants are studied we find seven great features which need to be understood: 1) A nation forever. 2) A land forever. 3) A king forever. 4) A throne forever. 5) A kingdom forever. 6) A new covenant. 7) Abiding blessings.

Back to our main passage in our corrected translation of Rom 9.

*So far, ROM 9:1-4, "I am communicating doctrine, I am not lying, my conscience bearing joint testimony with me in the Holy Spirit, that I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my right lobe, for I could wish, that I, myself would be accursed, consequently separated from the Christ, but it cannot be, for the sake of my brethren [the racial Jews], my fellow countrymen [the national Jews], according to earthly descent [descent from Abraham, Isaac and Jacob,], who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption, and the Shekinah glory, and the covenants [we have just completed studying those covenants in detail], and the giving of the Law and the temple service and the promises,"*

# THE MOSAIC LAW. WHY BELIEVERS ARE NOT UNDER THE LAW.

04/06/08

We have been noting the Doctrine of the Mosaic Law and we have noted the following points so far: 1) Definition. 2) Who are the recipients of the Mosaic Law? 3) Limitations of the Mosaic Law.

**Point 4 in our study is Legalism and the Mosaic Law.** There are three basic categories of salvation by works: 1) Salvation by works alone. 2) Salvation by faith plus works which includes such things as faith plus commitment, lordship, repentance, baptism, emotion, or psychological activity. 3) Salvation by works without faith, such as inviting Christ into your heart, when JER 17:9 says, *the heart is hopelessly dark and deceitful, a puzzle that no one can figure out.* Then there is inviting Christ into your life, you are spiritually dead; therefore that is inviting Christ into a tomb. In GAL 1:1-6, Paul is rebuking the Galatians for compromising with legalism when presenting the Gospel, *Paul, an apostle (not sent from men, nor through the agency of man, but through Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised Him from the dead), and all the brethren who are with me, to the churches of Galatia: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us out of this present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father, to whom be the glory forevermore. Amen. I am amazed that you are so quickly deserting Him who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; He can't believe how easily they have turned on the One who called them by the grace of Christ! Remember that Galatians is the book that deals with legalism at Salvation, and in the Christian way of life. The Galatians had become legalistic, self-righteous, pious, and inflexible in their moral degeneracy. Satan and the kingdom of darkness know that the only thing that matters is the extent to which they can separate the believer from God. It does not matter how small the sins, or the distractions are, so long as the effect keeps the individual away from the Light. The surest road to carnality, and eventually reversionism is the gradual one, the gentle slope without signposts. In many cases, Satan will even use the Church itself as a weapon against the Christian faith. Today, all the average believer sees is the erection of a new building, or a place of programs and gimmicks instead of a consistent teaching of grace and truth. They see a nice choir, programs of human altruism and human good, feeding the homeless, clothing the naked, but without executing the spiritual life. A life without knowing 1PE 3:15 "but sanctify Christ as Lord in your hearts, always being ready to make a defense to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope that is in you, yet with gentleness and reverence;"*

Through thick and thin, keep your hearts at attention, in adoration before Christ, your Master. Be ready to tell anyone who asks why you're living the way you are, and always with the utmost courtesy. Sadly, the average Christian today is full of hazy thoughts, many times actually disappointed in his own Christian walk. Add in a few negative thoughts about others, mix in some legalism from the Mosaic Law, and you have a defeated believer. One who does not fit into JOH 8:32 *and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.* You must learn to distinguish between the truth and the lie.

**Point 5. The Principle of Precedence Related to the Mosaic Law.**

The Christian way of life or the PPOG takes its precedence from the Lord Jesus Christ during the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union rather than from the Mosaic Law in the dispensation of Israel. This means that precedence for the PPOG is not taken from any of the commandments of the Mosaic Law, whether tithing, Sabbath observance, or learning the Ten Commandments. The PPOG is classified as mystery doctrine, defined as never being revealed to Old Testament writers. Not one word regarding the uniqueness of the Church-age is found in the Old Testament (ROM 16:25). All of our

praise rises to the One who is strong enough to make you strong, exactly as preached in Jesus Christ, precisely as revealed in the mystery kept secret for so long.

Paul would say to the Ephesians in EPH 3:1-6, *“For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles, if indeed you have heard of the stewardship of God's grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. And by referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ, which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets in the Spirit; to be specific, that the Gentiles are fellow heirs and fellow members of the body, and fellow partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel,”* In COL 1:25-27, *“of this church I was made a minister according to the dispensation from God bestowed on me for your benefit that I might fully carry out the preaching of the word of God, that is the mystery which has been hidden from the past ages and generations; but has now been manifested to his saints, to whom God willed to make known what is the glorious riches of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the confidence of the glory.”*

We are now under a new set of commands. The Mosaic Law has been completely fulfilled by our Lord, therefore it can, and has been abrogated (abolished, cancelled or terminated). Therefore, the lifestyle of the PPOG for the Church-age can never take its precedence from something that has been totally abrogated. No precedence for the Church-age is taken from Israel. This means that the Mosaic Law has nothing to do with the Christian way of life. God provided establishment principles for Gentiles long before He provided the Mosaic Law. God also provided establishment principles for the Church after He abrogated the Mosaic Law. But when it comes to spiritual life, the PPOG for the Church-age supersedes the ritual plan of God for Israel. Precedence for the PPOG is derived from the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union only. Most reformed denominations include the Mosaic Law as a part of the Christian way of life. The book of Romans and Galatians repudiate the Law as part of the Christian way of life. Neither Salvation or spirituality are related to keeping the Law. The substitutionary spiritual death of Christ on the Cross fulfilled in detail Codex Two of the Mosaic Law, which is the spiritual part found in the book of Leviticus in the animal sacrifices. However, the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead is the basis for a New Spiritual Species, a Royal Family of God, and the PPOG. The PPOG and the Mosaic Law are mutually exclusive. All precedence for the PPOG is based on the power or the omnipotence that raised Christ from the dead. This excludes the Mosaic Law because it (the Law) cannot provide spirituality, and neither can it provide resurrection. All doctrine related to the way of life for the Church-age is classified as mystery doctrine which was hidden from the Old Testament writers. The sooner you get straight on this point, the sooner you start glorifying the Lord. God calls the human works done without the power of the Holy Spirit, filthy garments in ISA 64:6 *For all of us have become like one who is unclean, And all our righteous deeds are like a filthy garment; And all of us wither like a leaf.* You can work hard, but the disappointment or anticlimax which is certainly coming your way will wear you out. Desiring our freedom, God refuses to bless us when we perform human good. Any of the goals which God sets for us, He leaves us with a choice of doing it our way or with His help using the power of God (ACT 1:8; HEB 4:12). But, how can you use this power when you don't know a thing about it? How can you use this power when you think that the spiritual life is quitting sin rather than rebound, the filling of the Holy Spirit, and the PMA of Bible doctrine, all based upon the grace of God? Those who are under the influence of legalism and self-righteousness misunderstand the grace of God and sometimes even state that grace a license to sin. TIT 2:11-12 says, *For the grace of God has appeared, bringing salvation to all men, instructing us to deny ungodliness and worldly desires and to live sensibly, righteously and godly in the present age,* There lies our opportunity, but also our danger, if we abuse the grace of God. Satan knows that once we understand these principles and get through the initial state of spiritual dryness successfully, we will become much less dependent on emotion, and therefore much harder to tempt. This is why he uses **the**

**Strategy of Diversion.** He knows that if a believer can't be cured or diverted from his PVTD, the next best thing is to send him all over the place looking for a church that suits him. The reasons are obvious. In the first place, doctrinal churches will always be attacked, because being a place where truth concerning the spiritual life, is really taught it brings people of different classes together in the kind of unity that God desires. On the other hand, those churches involved with religion, following the Ten commandments and the Mosaic Law turn into a kind of club, and finally into a place for fellowship rather than doctrine. The search for a suitable church makes the believer a critic where God wants him to be a pupil. What God desires for believers in church is an attitude which may, indeed be critical in the sense of rejecting what is false, but which is wholly uncritical in the sense of judging the one who teaches. This is why you are to pray for them and support them (EPH 6:19-20).

**Point 6. The Present Purpose of the Mosaic Law in the Church Age.**

The Mosaic Law was abrogated as a total code for the Church-age, but there are some principles in the New Testament repeated from the Mosaic Law. So while the Jews of the Old Testament lived by the Mosaic Law, Church-age believers live by the PPOG. The dispensation of the Hypostatic-union stands as a permanent line of demarcation between Israel and the Church. Therefore, during the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union, Jesus Christ fulfilled the Mosaic Law on the one hand, and through life in the PPOG, established the precedence for the Church-age on the other. This is why the Lord said in MAT 5:17 *"Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill."* In ROM 10:1-4, *"Brethren, my heart's desire and my prayer to God for them is for their salvation. For I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God, but not in accordance with knowledge. For not knowing about God's righteousness, and seeking to establish their own, they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone who believes."* The Mosaic Law is a particular expression of God's eternal and Holy character (Exo 19). While the Law regulated the life of the Jews in the dispensation of Israel, its primary purpose was to anticipate the First Advent of Christ. After the Law was fulfilled by Christ, this code no longer governs any people or any nation. However, the abrogation of the Law does not leave either unbelievers or believers in a state of lawlessness, ROM 6:15 *What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? May it never be!*

**Point 7. Dr. Charles E. Feinberg's Seventeen Points on Why the Believer is not under the Law.**

1) A believer under the Law makes Christ a minister of sin, GAL 2:17 *"But if, while seeking to be justified in Christ, we ourselves have also been found sinners, is Christ then a minister of sin? May it never be!"* It's no great surprise that some of you noticed that we are not yet perfect. Are you ready to make the accusation that since people like you and I, who go through Christ in order to get things right with God, aren't perfectly virtuous, Christ must therefore be an accessory to sin? The accusation is silly, and as GAL 2:17 says *May it never be!* So a believer who puts himself under the Law makes the Lord Jesus Christ a partner with his guilt or as Paul says a minister of sin.

2) The believer has died to the Law, GAL 2:19 *"For through the Law I died to the Law, that I might live to God."* Paul is saying that he tried keeping rules and working hard to please God, and it didn't work. So he quit being a law man so that he could be God's man. Under the operation of the curse of the Law, Paul died to the Law and all the Law's demands upon him.

3) A believer has received all the benefits of the Holy Spirit through faith. GAL 3:1 *"You foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ was publicly portrayed as crucified?"* Paul is saying that something crazy has happened, for it's obvious that you no longer have the crucified Jesus in clear focus in your lives. His sacrifice on the Cross was certainly set before you clearly enough. GAL 3:2 *"This is the only thing I want to find out from you: did you receive the Spirit by the works of the Law, or by hearing with faith?"* Did you receive the [Holy] Spirit as the result of obeying the Law and doing its works, or was it by hearing [the message of the Gospel] and believing [it]? Was it from observing a law of rituals or from a message of faith? GAL 3:3 *"Are you so foolish?"*

*Having begun by the Spirit, are you now being perfected by the flesh?" Only crazy people would think they could complete by their own efforts what was begun by God. If you weren't smart enough or strong enough to begin it, how do you suppose you could perfect it or make it any better than God did? You can see the arrogance behind self-righteousness and legalism. GAL 3:4 "Did you suffer so many things in vain, if indeed it was in vain?" Did you go through this whole painful learning process for nothing? GAL 3:5 "Does He then, who provides you with the Spirit and works miracles among you, do it by the works of the Law, or by hearing with faith?" Does the God who lavishly provides you with His own presence, His Holy Spirit, working things in your lives you could never do for yourselves, does he do these things because of your strenuous moral striving, or because you trust Him to do them in you? Well, I think you know the answer to that question by now.*

4) The Law brings nothing but condemnation (GAL 3:10-14). All who depend on the Law, who are seeking to be justified by obedience to the Law of rituals are under a curse and doomed to disappointment and destruction. Anyone who tries to live by his own effort, independent of God, is doomed to failure. Scripture backs this up. The Scripture says in HAB 2:4 *The man in right standing with God [the just, the righteous] shall live by and out of faith and he who through and by faith is declared righteous and in right standing with God shall live.* The obvious impossibility of carrying out such a moral program should make it plain that no one can sustain a relationship with God that way. Doing things for God is the opposite of entering into what God does for you. Rule-keeping does not naturally evolve into living by faith, but only perpetuates itself in more rule-keeping. Christ purchased our freedom, redeeming us from the curse or doom of the Law and its condemnation by Himself becoming a curse for us. The Lord Jesus Christ redeemed us from that self-defeating, cursed life by absorbing it completely into Himself. That is what happened when Jesus was nailed to the Cross: He became a curse, and at the same time dissolved the curse. Through believing on the Lord Jesus Christ, the blessing promised to Abraham comes upon the Gentiles, so that through faith, we all might receive the realization of the promise of the Holy Spirit. We are all able to receive God's life, His Spirit, in and with us by believing, just the way Abraham received it.

5) God's promised blessings to Abraham, of which Abrahamic root all believers partake of, (Rom 11), preceded or came before the giving of the Law, therefore, the law cannot be a prior claim. GAL 3:15 *"Brethren, I speak in terms of human relations: even though it is only a man's covenant, yet when it has been ratified, no one sets it aside or adds conditions to it."* If a man makes a last will and testament, no one sets it aside or makes it void or adds to it when once it has been drawn up and signed ratified, or confirmed. Once a person's will has been ratified, no one else can annul it or add to it. GAL 3:16 *"Now the promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. He does not say, "And to seeds," as referring to many, but rather to one, "And to your seed," that is, Christ."* Observe that Scripture, in the careful language of a legal document, does not say "to descendants," referring to everybody in general, but "to your descendant" (singular), referring to Christ. GAL 3:17 *"What I am saying is this: the Law, which came four hundred and thirty years later, does not invalidate a covenant previously ratified by God, so as to nullify the promise."* The Law, which began 430 years after the covenant [concerning the coming Messiah], does not and cannot annul the covenant previously established (ratified) by God, so as to abolish the promise and make it void. 6) The Law has no power to give life or to sustain life, GAL 3:21 *"Is the Law then contrary to the promises of God? May it never be! For if a law had been given which was able to impart life, then righteousness would indeed have been based on law."* As we have noted in this doctrine, the laws purpose was to make obvious to everyone that we are, in ourselves, out of right relationship with God. Therefore, the Law was given to show us the futility of devising religious systems for getting by on our own efforts what we can only get by waiting in faith for God to complete His promise. If any rule-keeping had power to create life in us, we would certainly have gotten it by this time.

7) The Law is intended only for the immature, while positionally, believers are full-grown sons (GAL 3:23-4:7). Before the faith or doctrine came, the truth that set us free, we were perpetually guarded under the Law, kept in custody in preparation for the faith that was destined to be revealed unveiled, or disclosed. Until the time when we were mature enough to respond freely in faith to the living God, we were carefully surrounded and protected by the Mosaic law. The Law served to the Jews as their trainer, or guardian, or guide to Christ, to lead them until Christ came, that they might be justified (declared righteous, put in right standing with God) through faith. The Law was like those Greek tutors, with which the Galatians were familiar with, who escort children to school and protect them from danger or distraction, making sure the children will really get to the place they set out for. We are no longer under a trainer but now have arrived at the destination. Your baptism in Christ was not just washing you up for a fresh start. It also involved dressing you in an adult faith wardrobe, Christ's life, the fulfillment of God's original promise. In Christ's family there can be no division into Jew and non-Jew, slave and free, male and female. We are all in a common relationship with Jesus Christ. If you are in Him Who is Abraham's Seed, then you are Abraham's offspring and spiritual heirs according to promise. God sent His Son, born of a woman, born subject to the regulations of the Law, born under the conditions of the Law so that He might redeem those who had been kidnapped by the law (GAL 4:5). You are no longer a slave bond servant but a son; and if a son, then it follows that you are an heir by the aid of God, through Christ. Your privilege of being able to have an intimate conversation with God makes it plain that you are not a slave, but a child.

8) The Law is a bondage to the believer, GAL 4:9 *"But now that you have come to know God, or rather to be known by God, how is it that you turn back again to the weak and worthless elemental things, to which you desire to be enslaved all over again?"* Now that you have come to be acquainted with and understand and know the true God, or rather to be understood and known by God, how can you turn back again to the weak and worthless elementary things of self-righteousness and legalism and religion. How can you possibly subject yourselves again to those elementary principles of the law.

9) Law and grace are mutually exclusive principles; therefore, choose one or the other. GAL 4:21-31. GAL 4:21 *"Tell me, you who want to be under law, do you not listen to the law? Have you paid close attention to that law? GAL 4:22-23, "For it is written that Abraham had two sons, one by the bondwoman and one by the free woman. But the son by the bondwoman [Ishmael] was born according to the flesh [human plans and ingenuity], and the son by the free woman [Isaac] through the promise [of God or divine ingenuity or power]." The child of the slave woman, Hagar, was born according to the flesh and had an ordinary birth, the son of the free woman, Sarah, was born in fulfillment of the promise. GAL 4:24 *"This is allegorically speaking: for these women are two covenants, one proceeding from Mount Sinai bearing children who are to be slaves; she is Hagar."* The two births represent two ways of being in relationship with God. One is from Mount Sinai in Arabia. These two women represent two covenants. One covenant originated from Mount Sinai, where the Law was given, and bears children destined for slavery; this is Hagar. GAL 4:25-26, *"Now this Hagar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and corresponds to the present Jerusalem, for she is in slavery with her children." But the Jerusalem above is free; she is our mother."* The Jerusalem above refers to the Messianic kingdom of Christ. There is an invisible Jerusalem, a free Jerusalem, and she is our mother, this is the way of Sarah.*

GAL 4:27-29, *For it is written, "Rejoice, barren woman who does not bear; Break forth and shout, you who are not in labor; For more are the children of the desolate Than of the one who has a husband. And you brethren, like Isaac, are children of promise. We are children, not by physical descent, as was Ishmael, but like Isaac, born in virtue of promise. But as at that time he who was born according to the flesh persecuted him who was born according to the Spirit, so it is now also."*

Just as at that time the child of ordinary birth (Ishmael), born according to the flesh despised and persecuted him who was born remarkably according to the promise and the working of the Holy



Spirit, so it is now also. [GEN 21:9.] In the days of Hagar and Sarah, the child who came from faithless connivance (Ishmael) harassed the child who came empowered by the Spirit from the faithful promise (Isaac). So, the apostle Paul is saying to the Galatians: Isn't it clear that the harassment you are now experiencing from the Jerusalem heretics follows that old pattern? Those under legalism will never enjoy the inheritance that those under grace experience and enjoy.

10) The believer has an abiding freedom in Christ, GAL 5:1 *It was for freedom that Christ set us free; therefore keep standing firm and do not be subject again to a yoke of slavery.* In this freedom Christ has made us free and completely liberated us. So, we are to stand fast then, and do not be hampered and held or ensnared and submit again to a yoke of slavery which you have once put off. Christ has set us free to live a free life. So take your stand! Never again let anyone put a harness of slavery on you.

11) The believer must keep all the law if he would attempt to keep even part of it, and that is an impossibility, GAL 5:2 *Behold I, Paul, say to you that if you receive circumcision, Christ will be of no benefit to you.* Paul says that the moment any believer submits to any other rule-keeping system, Christ's hard won gift of freedom is wasted. GAL 5:3 *And I testify again to every man who receives circumcision, that he is under obligation to keep the whole Law.* The person who accepts the ways of the Law trades all the advantages of the free life in Christ for the obligations of the slave life of the law. GAL 5:4 *You have been severed from Christ, you who are seeking to be justified by law; you have fallen from grace.* When you attempt to live by your own religious plans and programs, you are cut off from Christ and you fall out of grace. If you seek to be justified and declared righteous and to be given a right standing with God through the Law, you are brought to nothing and separated or severed from Christ. You have fallen away from grace or from God's gracious favor and unmerited blessing.

12) The persuasion to put the believer under the Law is not from God. GAL 5:8 *This persuasion did not come from Him who calls you.* It is a detour from Satan and the kingdom of darkness that doesn't come from the One who called you into the race in the first place.

13) Legalism of the believer does away with the offense of the Cross, GAL 5:11 *But I, brethren, if I still preach circumcision, why am I still persecuted? Then the stumbling block of the cross has been abolished.* If Paul still preached circumcision as some accuse him of doing, as necessary to salvation, why was he still suffering persecution? The rumor was that he continued to preach the ways of circumcision as he did in those pre-Damascus Road days. He says if I were preaching that old message, no one would be offended if I mentioned the Cross now and then, it would be so watered down it wouldn't matter. But he wasn't teaching circumcision or the Mosaic Law, he was teaching the grace of God.

14) All the Mosaic Law is fulfilled by the Holy Spirit (GAL 5:16-24). GAL 5:16 *But I say, walk by the Spirit, and you will not carry out the desire of the flesh.* If you walk and live habitually in the Holy Spirit, being responsive to and controlled and guided by the Spirit; then you will certainly not gratify the cravings and desires of the flesh which is the human nature without God. Paul says my counsel is this: Live freely, motivated by God's Spirit and then you won't feed the compulsions of selfishness. GAL 5:17 *For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please.* The desires of the flesh are opposed to the Holy Spirit, and the desires of the Spirit are opposed to the flesh, the godless human nature. These are antagonistic to each other, continually withstanding and in conflict with each other, so that you are not free but are prevented from doing what you desire to do. This is why you should never get shocked with mankind. These two ways of life are antithetical, so that you cannot live at times one way and at times another way according to how you feel on any given day. GAL 5:18 *But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the Law.* Why don't you choose to be led by the Spirit and so escape the erratic compulsions of a law dominated existence in the flesh? GAL 5:19 *Now the deeds of the flesh are evident, which are: immorality, impurity, sensuality,* It is obvious what kind of life develops out of trying to get your own way all the time: repetitive, loveless, a stinking

accumulation of mental and emotional garbage; frenzied and vain grabs for happiness. GAL 5:20 "idolatry, sorcery, enmities, strife, jealousy, outbursts of anger, disputes, dissensions, factions," Factions are party spirits with their own self-righteous and legalistic opinions. GAL 5:21-22, "envying, drunkenness, carousing, and things like these, of which I forewarn you just as I have forewarned you that those who practice such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness," The fruit of the Holy Spirit is the work which His presence within accomplishes in our lives. What happens when we live God's way? He brings gifts into our lives, much the same way that fruit appears in an orchard, things like affection for others, and exuberance about life. We develop a willingness to stick with things, a sense of compassion in the heart, and a conviction that a basic dedication and devotion to the spiritual life permeates things and people. Legalism is helpless in bringing this about; in fact it only gets in the way. Those who belong to the Messiah have crucified the godless human nature with its passions and appetites and desires.

15) The life of the believer must be sustained on the same principle as his new birth or regeneration. GAL 5:25 "If we live by the Spirit, let us also walk by the Spirit." If by the Holy Spirit we have our life in God, let us go forward walking in line, our conduct controlled by the Spirit. Since this is the kind of life we have chosen, the life of the Spirit, let us make sure that we do not just hold it as an idea in our heads or a sentiment in our hearts, but work out its implications in every detail of our lives.

16) The believer's proneness to sin calls for his dealing with grace, not dealing according to the Law, GAL 6:1-5.

GAL 6:1 "Brethren, even if a man is caught in any trespass, you who are spiritual, restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness; each one looking to yourself, lest you too be tempted." If any person is overtaken in misconduct or sin of any sort, you who are spiritual, who are responsive to and controlled by the Spirit, should set him right and restore and reinstate him. You might be needing forgiveness before the day's out. GAL 6:2 "Bear one another's burdens, and thus fulfill the law of Christ." Notice, you are to fulfill the Law of Christ. What is the Law of Christ? GAL 5:14 "For the whole Law is fulfilled in one word, in the {statement}, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself."

GAL 6:3-4, "For if anyone thinks he is something when he is nothing, he deceives himself. But let each one examine his own work, and then he will have reason for boasting in regard to himself alone, and not in regard to another." Let every person carefully scrutinize and examine and test his own conduct and his own work. He can then have the personal satisfaction and joy of doing something commendable in itself alone without resorting to boastful comparison with his neighbor. Don't be impressed with yourself. Don't compare yourself with others.

GAL 6:5 "For each one shall bear his own load." Every person will have to bear his own load of oppressive faults.

17) All who advocate the law for the believer cannot keep it themselves, and their intention is ultimate glory in the flesh. GAL 6:13 "For those who are circumcised do not even keep the Law themselves, but they desire to have you circumcised, that they may boast in your flesh." Even the circumcised Jews themselves did not really keep the Law, but they want to have others circumcised in order that they may glory in the flesh, their subjection to external rites. Paul says they only want you to be circumcised so they can boast of their success in recruiting you to their side. That is contemptible!

#### **Point 8. The Basic Law the Church Age Believer Is under.**

There are four laws in the Christian life when it comes to methods of procedure: a. The perfect law of liberty. You are free as a child of God. By now you know you are not under a the Law. You have been delivered from every aspect of the law. So the law of liberty is the law that all believers operate in when they are filled with the Holy Spirit. The law of liberty is a reference to the freedom we have to serve the Lord not the freedom we have to sin. There is no freedom in sin, rather there is just the guarantee of bondage and death. The law of liberty and freedom is the freedom to serve the Lord and

the freedom to produce Divine good. It is a law based upon the filling of the Spirit. The law of liberty means that no one else has the right to tell you how to live your life. The word of God is your authority and under the word of God you are to live your life as unto the Lord, without any outside interference or harassing or intimidation from others. The word liberty is defined as the state of being exempt from the dominion of others or from restricting circumstances. It is freedom to do according to ones own preference and choice. Grace glories in true liberty and freedom. Grace is not a way of escaping obedience to God; it is the only way in which true obedience can be achieved.

b) The law of love. There comes a time when the law of love will take precedence over the law of liberty. The law of liberty is directed toward self, the law of love is directed toward others. This means that there are times when you will impose upon yourself certain standards that you don't normally observe. You refrain from certain things that are legitimate in order to be of help to other believers in their spiritual growth. The liberty and the freedom that believers have is revealed by the love that they have for others. The law of love allows the conscience of the weak to determine action.

*1CO 8:8-13, But food will not commend us to God; we are neither the worse if we do not eat, nor the better if we do eat. But take care lest this liberty of yours somehow become a stumbling block to the weak. For if someone sees you, who have knowledge, dining in an idol's temple, will not his conscience, if he is weak, be strengthened to eat things sacrificed to idols? For through your knowledge he who is weak is ruined, the brother for whose sake Christ died. And thus, by sinning against the brethren and wounding their conscience when it is weak, you sin against Christ. Therefore, if food causes my brother to stumble, I will never eat meat again, that I might not cause my brother to stumble.*

c) The law of expediency. This law is directed toward unbelievers. The law of expediency says in effect that in order for the Gospel to be made clear, and that false issues do not come in and sidetrack the Gospel, it is expedient that certain types of procedure be followed. The law of expediency says make the issue the Gospel. 1CO 6:12 *"All things are lawful for me, but not all things are profitable. All things are lawful for me, but I will not be mastered by anything."* This law takes into consideration the danger to the believers own life in the matter of personal habits or trends and the responsibility to others in the matter of edification. When considering the law of expediency we do not ask what harm is there in this or that? But rather what is the good in that which I am doing? This is why EPH 5:15 teaches that in our liberty we are to walk accurately, *Therefore be careful how you walk, not as unwise men, but as wise.*

d) Then there is the law of supreme sacrifice. This is the law where the believer sets aside normal and legitimate functions of life to progress in the Plan of God. Paul in 1CO 9:12 illustrated this when he said he couldn't get married because of the nature of his ministry. 1CO 9:12 *"If others share the right over you, do we not more? Nevertheless, we did not use this right, but we endure all things, that we may cause no hindrance to the gospel of Christ."*

# THE DOCTRINE OF THE SABBATH.

04/13/08

Our main passage is ROM 9:4 *Who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption and as sons and the glory [that is the Shekinah glory], and the unconditional covenants, and the deposit of the law, [Mosaic Law], and the temple service [the service of God] and the promises.*

The service of God refers to the worship of God and it's a reference to the manner of operation of the Levitical priesthood, the Levitical offerings, the articles of furniture in the tabernacle, in the temple, the Holy days, the feasts, etc. You are here for a reason and your life is to have definition and purpose. We have five purposes: 1. Worship. 2. Discipleship. 3. Fellowship. 4. Ministry. 5. Evangelism. We have begun to note the first one, worship. For example, in giving the Law for His people, God set several appointed "**feasts of the Lord**" for Israel to observe at specific times during the year (Lev 23). The first holy day God set aside is the Sabbath day, which was to be observed every week. The Sabbath is the seventh day of the week or Saturday. The Jews rested every Saturday, and it was to remind the Jews of the principle of grace. It reminded them that there was nothing you could do for Salvation, and that there was nothing you could do to gain the approbation and the blessing of God. This has led us to the Doctrine of the Sabbath.

Point 1. Introduction. Freedom demands rest and rest demands freedom. You can never have freedom when you stop thinking. The Sabbath was a thinking day when you didn't work physically, but instead you sat somewhere, rested, and thought. There are two kinds of Sabbath: The temporal Sabbath is the faith-rest technique of the believer, this is the moment-by-moment Sabbath (HEB 3:11; HEB 4:1-7). Then there is the eternal Sabbath (MAT 11:28).

Point 2. Salvation rest (MAT 11:28).

Point 3. Supergrace rest and test.

DEU 6:10-13, *"Then it shall come about when the Lord your God brings you into the land which He swore to your fathers, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, to give you, great and splendid cities which you did not build, and [given you] houses or homes full of all good things which you did not fill, and hewn cisterns which you did not dig, vineyards and olive trees which you did not plant, and you shall eat and be satisfied, then watch yourself, lest you forget the Lord who brought you from the land of Egypt out of the house of slavery. You shall respect only the Lord your God; and you shall worship Him, and swear by His name. You shall not follow other gods, any of the gods of the peoples who surround you,"*

This literally means back up your promises with His name only or with His character. This also means not follow other god's such as money, materialism, pleasure, etc.

In DEU 8:10 *"When you have eaten and are satisfied, you shall bless the Lord your God for the good land which He has given you."* This is part of the Biblical premise of praying after a meal, because your satisfied and so you bless GOD, your God, for the good place He has given you, and for the good family and friends He has provided. DEU 8:11 *"Beware lest you forget the Lord your God by not keeping His commandments and His ordinances and His statutes which I am commanding you today;"* DEU 8:13-14, *and when your herds and your flocks multiply, and your silver and gold multiply, and all that you have multiplies, then beware that your heart becomes proud, and that you forget the Lord your God who brought you out from the land of Egypt [the cosmic system], out of the house of slavery [bondage to the devil, the flesh or the OSN and the world." We forget to remember grace and Divine blessings, so, the commandment said to remember grace. The commandment was a ritual, and has to do with what you think.*

Let's look at a passage where the importance of the Sabbath is really brought out, HEB 3:7-10, *Therefore, just as the Holy Spirit says, "Today if you hear His voice, Do not harden your hearts [your way of thinking] as when they provoked Me, As in the day of trial or testing in the wilderness, Where your*

*fathers tried Me by testing Me, And saw My works for forty years. Therefore I was angry with this generation, And said, "They always go astray in their heart [system of thinking]; And they did not know My ways."* Even though they watched God at work for forty years, they refused to accept God's way of doing things.

You are the beneficiary of many wonderful blessings from God. Yet, many of you don't even know a thing about those blessings. The Sabbath or rest that God has for you is completely neglected because of ignorance. The modern tendency of apostasy today stresses the works and production of the believer. Just like the Jews distorted the ritual Sabbath, most Christians distort the real one.

**HEB 3:11** *"As I swore in My wrath, They shall not enter My rest."* This rest is a state in which the believer has a relaxed mental attitude no matter what the situation may look like. It is a complete trust in the character and nature of God working for you. God knew in eternity past every problem you would ever face, and He made a provision for those problems.

**HEB 3:12** *Take care, brethren, lest there should be in any one of you an evil, unbelieving heart, in falling away from the living God.* This heart of unbelief is a heart without rest. Having no faith-rest is to say God is a liar. One of the greatest problems the Christian faces is fear. Fear, worry, anxiety, stress, always takes away your rest.

**HEB 4:1** *Therefore, let us fear lest, while a promise remains of entering His rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it.* Refusing to enter into His rest will not stop God from being glorified, but it will surely rob us. **JOH 10:9-10**, *"I am the door; if anyone enters through Me, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief comes only to steal, and kill, and destroy; I came that they might have life, and might have {it} abundantly."* The Lord is constantly pouring out His grace on His people while His people are constantly pouring out complaints.

**HEB 4:2** *For indeed we have had good news preached to us, just as they also; but the word they heard did not profit them, because it was not united by faith in those who heard.* The prerequisite for entering into rest is being filled with the Holy Spirit for the believer (rebound), but it's not enough, we need the daily intake of Bible doctrine. **HEB 4:4-6**, *For He has thus said somewhere concerning the seventh day, "And God rested on the seventh day from all His works;" and again in this passage, "They shall not enter My rest." Since therefore it remains for some to enter it, and those who formerly had good news preached to them failed to enter because of disobedience,* This rest depends upon the faithfulness of God and not the faithfulness of man. The Lord's invitation for rest has always been available to every believer. His rest consists of specific instructions and directions, and must be accompanied with the hearing of Bible Doctrine. Faith is not blind, it is the greatest vision in the world.

**HEB 4:9-12**, *There remains therefore a Sabbath rest for the people of God. For the one who has entered His rest has himself also rested from his works, as God did from His. Let us therefore be diligent to enter that rest, lest anyone fall through following the same example of disobedience. For the word of God is alive and powerful, sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a critic of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

#### **Point 4. The origin of the Sabbath rest.**

**GEN 2:1-3**, *Thus the heavens and the earth were completed, and all their hosts. And by the seventh day God completed His work which He had done; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done. Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made.*

On the seventh day of the earth's restoration, everything was provided for man, and God rested in the sense that nothing else could possibly be provided for man in grace. Everything man needed at that point was provided. The principle: Since there was nothing God could add, obviously there is nothing that man can add.

#### **Point 5. The Sabbath is given to Israel as a command from God.**

*EXO 20:8-11, "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath of the Lord your God; in it you shall not do any work, you or your son or your daughter, your male or your female servant or your cattle or your sojourner who stays with you. For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea and all that is in them, and rested on the seventh day; therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and made it holy [set it apart as a holy day] for Him."*

This very change of pace was not only beneficial to them physically and mentally, but it had ultimate benefit to them in the spiritual realm because it was a reminder of grace. Also, by maintaining good health with periodic rest, this contributed to the full, free function of the mind. With loss of health, your mind becomes a slave to certain preoccupations, like pain. In Exo 16 the Sabbath was taught to the Jews in a special way.

*EXO 16:22-30, Now it came about on the sixth day they gathered twice as much bread, two omers for each one. When all the leaders of the congregation came and told Moses, then he said to them, "This is what the Lord meant: Tomorrow is a Sabbath observance, a holy Sabbath to the Lord. Bake what you will bake and boil what you will boil, and all that is left over put aside to be kept until morning." So they put it aside until morning, as Moses had ordered, and it did not become foul, nor was there any worm in it. And Moses said, "Eat it today, for today is a Sabbath to the Lord; today you will not find it in the field. Six days you shall gather it, but on the seventh day, the Sabbath, there will be none." And it came about on the seventh day that some of the people went out to gather, but they found none. Then the Lord said to Moses, "How long do you refuse to keep My commandments and My instructions? See, the Lord has given you the Sabbath; therefore He gives you bread for two days on the sixth day. Remain every man in his place; let no man go out of his place on the seventh day."*

So the people rested on the seventh day. They had received manna from heaven which represented Divine provision for the believer in time. In verse 22 on the 6th day (Friday) they were told to gather a double portion because on day 7 God wouldn't provide manna and they were not to try and gather it. This was the first specific reference to the Sabbath since GEN 2:2, when God rested. You go at from GEN 2:2 to Exo 16 and all of that time man understood the principle of the Sabbath without being forced to.

*EXO 20:9-10, "Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath of the Lord your God; {in it} you shall not do any work, you or your son or your daughter, your male or your female servant or your cattle or your sojourner who stays with you." All work was to stop on the Sabbath for the purpose of orienting to the grace of God. The basis for this commandment is given in EXO 20:11 "for in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea and all that is in them, and rested on the seventh day; therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and made it holy." This one day of rest each week is not only a principle of blessing, it is also a principle of freedom.*

#### **Point 6. The Sabbatical Year of Israel.**

The Sabbatical year is tied to the Biblical concept of the Sabbath, the seventh day of the week and a time of rest. The Sabbatical years provided a form of regular debt release to stabilize social and economic gaps in society. According to the Bible, during the seventh year all land had to be left untilled and unplanted, and debts from close neighbors that had been unpaid during the previous six years were to be cancelled. This command can be divided into three different concerns: First, the environmental concerns that overuse of the land would make it unusable. Secondly, some of the commands covered debt concerns. Because of drought and other cyclical crop failures, the poor needed to be allowed to start over and not languish in poverty. Thirdly, land ownership and management concerns affected families in inter-generational settings. The Sabbatical year was intended to be not simply a year of leisure, but also one of religious instruction and exercises. EXO 23:10-11 we read, "And you shall sow your land for six years and gather in its yield or crops, but on the seventh year you shall let it rest and lie fallow, so that the needy of your people may eat; [in the seventh

year leave it alone and give it a rest so that your poor may eat from it] *and whatever they leave the beast of the field may eat. You are to do the same with your vineyard and your olive grove.*" A release of debts owed by Israelite to Israelite was made. Then look at LEV 25:3-4, "*Six years you shall sow your field, and six years you shall prune your vineyard and gather in its crop, but during the seventh year the land shall have a sabbath rest, a sabbath to the Lord; you shall not sow your field nor prune your vineyard.*" However, as usual, they did not obey God. So, In LEV 26:33-37 we read "*You, however, I will scatter among the nations and will draw out a sword after you, as your land becomes desolate and your cities become waste. Then the land will enjoy its sabbaths all the days of the desolation, while you are in your enemies' land; then the land will rest and enjoy its sabbaths. All the days of its desolation it will observe the rest which it did not observe on your sabbaths, while you were living on it. As for those of you who may be left, I will also bring weakness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies. And the sound of a driven leaf will chase them and even when no one is pursuing, they will flee as though from the sword, and they will fall. They will therefore stumble over each other as if running from the sword, although no one is pursuing; and you will have no strength to stand up before your enemies.*" Every seven years, the Jews were supposed to stop work. If they had been functioning properly under supergrace, then this was really a year's vacation in which they didn't have to work. This was a great test to see if they had entered supergrace or not. Could they trust God to provide everything for them? If so, it was no problem. If not, they were like squirrels who hadn't gathered nuts for the winter.

Now, it is very interesting that the failure of the Jews to observe the sabbatical year was the basis for determining how long they would stay under the fifth cycle of discipline. From the Exodus until the first administration of the fifth cycle of discipline to the southern kingdom, they had accumulated 490 years in which they had not observed even one sabbatical year as a nation. Over a period of 490 years they had accumulated seventy lost sabbatical years. God told the southern kingdom in 586 B.C. that since they had missed seventy sabbatical years, therefore He would give them those seventy years (that's 490) in slavery. Therefore, the first administration of the fifth cycle of discipline lasted for seventy years (LEV 26:33-36; 2CH 36:20-21; DAN 9:2; JER 25:11-12; JER 29:10). 2CH 36:20-21, *And those who had escaped from the sword he carried away to Babylon; and they were servants to him and to his sons until the rule of the kingdom of Persia, to fulfill the word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed its sabbaths. All the days of its desolation it kept sabbath until seventy years were complete.*

What was the word of the Lord by the prophet Jeremiah? Look at it in JER 25:11-12, "*And this whole land shall be a desolation and a horror, and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years. Then it will be when seventy years are completed I will punish the king of Babylon and that nation, declares the Lord, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldeans; and I will make it an everlasting desolation.*" Then look at JER 29:10 "*For thus says the Lord, 'When seventy years have been completed for Babylon, I will visit you and fulfill My good word to you, to bring you back to this place.'*" So the Jews had to be reminded about the sabbath. For 6 years they planted as much as they wanted to and operated under the principle of free enterprise, but on the 7th year they were to stop. However, the Jews would not do that. They completely rationalized the 7th year sabbath away. In reality, the sabbath never meant a thing to most of the Jews. So when the first 7 year sabbath came they didn't observe it, 14 years later they again did not observe it, and this went on until finally in a period of 490 years in Jewish history they had missed 70 sabbath years. So because they didn't want to rest when God told them to rest, He would bring about the rest Himself. So they went into 70 years of captivity in Chaldea and Persia. They have actually served 69 of those and God still owes 1 more (7 years) according to DAN 9:24-25.

#### **Point 7. The year of Jubilee.**

LEV 25:8 "*You are also to count off seven sabbaths of years for yourself, seven times seven years, so that you have the time of the seven sabbaths of years, {namely,} forty-nine years.*" This could be called a

super sabbatical year. After forty-nine years (in which there were seven sabbatical years), the fiftieth year was called the year of Jubilee; it was a sabbath year also. During the year of Jubilee, all the real estate in the land went back to its original owners, all the businesses went back to their original owners; everything reverted back to how it was in year one. All slaves were to be freed, and whatever was their portion of land allotted to them by tribe and by the system was given back to them. So, no matter what you ever owned, it was all, always on a lease basis, and you were never to keep any of it past the year of Jubilee. This same principle applies to all of us, everything that we have or own is only on lease. Now, of course if the Jews wouldn't even keep the sabbath once a week, you can be sure that the Jews violated this one also. So, the Lord knew that they were not going to observe the Sabbath year. He gave them another chance. He gave them what was called the year of jubilee (yobel).

**Point 8. Profaning the Sabbath was Associated with Idolatry and the Apostasy of the Jews (EZE 23:37-39).** EZE 23:38 *“Again, they have done this to Me: they have defiled My sanctuary on the same day and have profaned My sabbaths.”*

**Point 9. Sabbath Violation Occurred even after the Restoration or the Jews were Restored Back to Their Promise Land.** NEH 13:15 *In those days I saw in Judah some who were treading wine presses on the sabbath, and bringing in sacks of grain and loading them on donkeys, as well as wine, grapes, figs, and all kinds of loads, and they brought them into Jerusalem on the sabbath day. So I admonished them on the day they sold food.* Jeremiah taught the Jews in JER 17:21 *‘Thus says the Lord, “Take heed for yourselves, and do not carry any load on the sabbath day or bring anything in through the gates of Jerusalem. They rejected this command concerning the Sabbath, just like many believers today reject the command to rest. Nehemiah found the people not only doing business on the Sabbath, but also doing their daily work and carrying unnecessary burdens.*

NEH 13:16-21, *Also men of Tyre were living there who imported fish and all kinds of merchandise, and sold them to the sons of Judah on the sabbath, even in Jerusalem. Then I reprimanded the nobles of Judah and said to them, “What is this evil thing you are doing, by profaning the sabbath day? Did not your fathers do the same so that our God brought on us, and on this city, all this trouble? Yet you are adding to the wrath on Israel by profaning the sabbath.” And it came about that just as it grew dark at the gates of Jerusalem before the sabbath, I commanded that the doors should be shut and that they should not open them until after the sabbath. Then I stationed some of my servants at the gates that no load should enter on the sabbath day. Once or twice the traders and merchants of every kind of merchandise spent the night outside Jerusalem. Then I warned them and said to them, “Why do you spend the night in front of the wall? If you do so again, I will use force against you.” From that time on they did not come on the sabbath.*

Nehemiah took three steps toward changing the situation. First, he rebuked the Jews who were working and selling on the Sabbath and made them stop. Secondly, he rebuked the nobles for allowing business on the Sabbath Day, reminding them that the nation's violation of the Sabbath was one cause for their captivity. Thirdly, he ordered the gates of the city to be shut on the Sabbath Day. The guards had been willing to open the gates to the Gentile merchants, possibly because they were bribed; so Nehemiah put some of his own servants on duty. He also ordered the Levites to set a good example on the Sabbath and minister to the people.



# THE DOCTRINE OF REST. FROM THE PROMISES OF GOD.

04/20/08

## **The Doctrine of Rest.**

**Point 1. Definition.** Rest is having peace in soul which means that you are free from worrying, from anxiety, and from frustration. However, there is also another side to rest. It also means to remain confident. If you're at rest, you'll remain confident. The Church-age believer does not have a Saturday Sabbath. It didn't work too well for the Jews. So, for the Church-age, God increased it, and gave us a moment-by-moment Sabbath, that is the faith-rest technique taught in HEB 4:1-3. This is the principle by which the believer enters into the supergrace life.

Your moment-by-moment Sabbath means your spiritual advance, and your annual sabbatical is comparable to the supergrace life.

## **Illustrations of this moment-by-moment Sabbath, or the dynamics of faith-rest.**

Abraham. ROM 4:19-20, *and without becoming weak in faith he contemplated his own body, now as good as dead since he was about a hundred years old, and the deadness of Sarah's womb; yet, with respect to the promise of God, he did not waver in unbelief, but grew strong in faith, giving glory to God.*

Moses at the Red sea (EXO 14:10-14). This is when Moses said to the people, *"Do not fear! Stand by and see the deliverance of the Lord which He will accomplish for you today; the Lord will fight for you while you keep silent."*

Caleb and the giants (Num 13-14), this is an illustration of the supergrace life and the moment by moment rest.

So, it is inevitable that the daily perception of Bible doctrine and the function of the faith-rest technique will eventually lead to the supergrace life. Rest also means to trust under extreme pressure. The most popular Hebrew word for *rest* is the word *nuwach* which means to settle down, something many people need to do. It means to be at rest from troubles and anxieties. *Loipoi*, the most popular New Testament word for *rest* and it means rest and recreation. God wants you to have recreation in the your life and this includes the spiritual realm. Another Greek word in the New Testament for rest is *anapauo*, which means to cease from work in order to receive strength. So, we will translate *rest* as the state of mind in which there is complete and total peace being free from worries, anxieties and fears. That's the definition.

## **Point 2. Introduction. The manifestation of the glory of God within.**

There is a manifestation of the glory of God in you. HEB 4:3 *For we who have believed enter that rest, just as He has said, "As I swore in My wrath, They shall not enter My rest," although His works were finished from the foundation of the world.* If you have believed in Jesus Christ, then you are at the beginning of entering into God's rest. It is beginning of the manifestation of the glory of God in you. When a believer reveals the glory of God, there will be one basic characteristic that follows them around, and that is rest. This is why HEB 3:19 tells us *And so we see that they were not able to enter because of unbelief.* The reason why many believers are anxious, worried, and living in fear is because of unbelief. Because of this they become very critical, judgmental, and have no relaxation toward the details of life at all. This is because they refuse to enter into the rest that God has for their lives. As HEB 4:10 says *For the one who has entered His rest has himself also rested from his works, as God did from His.* In other words, you are to enter into a New Testament Sabbath, which requires you to learn how to rest. This is what a lot of believers do not know how to do. If the believer does not rest, and tries to accomplish things on his own then he enters into a temporal death which is a separation from God. This is because they are trying to make certain things happen when God has given them rest. What is the day that God has given you for rest? The answer is every day that you wake up is another

opportunity for you to enter into His rest. Many people do not understand God's rest. They struggle with restlessness, and they usually blame others. However, your resting place starts in your very own altar. You have an altar that starts in your soul. Your altar goes way beyond prayer, although prayer is a part of your altar, but so is learning, serving, giving, etc. Therefore, as a believer you should ask yourself where do all these struggles, fears, insecurities, worries, anxieties, concerns come from? They come from a great enemy that we all have which is **fear**.

What is the Sabbath, or this rest that God has for us, based upon? EXO 33:12-16, *Then Moses said to the Lord, "See, Thou dost say to me 'Bring up this people!' But Thou Thyself hast not let me know whom Thou wilt send with me. Moreover, Thou hast said, 'I have known you by name, and you have also found favor in My sight.' Now therefore, I pray Thee, if I have found favor in Thy sight, let me know Thy ways, that I may know Thee, so that I may find favor in Thy sight. Consider too, that this nation is Thy people. And He said, "My presence shall go with you, and I will give you **rest**." Then he said to Him, "If Thy presence does not go with us, do not lead us up from here. For how then can it be known that I have found favor in Thy sight, I and Thy people? Is it not by Thy going with us, so that we, I and Thy people, may be distinguished from all the other people who are upon the face of the earth?"* How else will it be known that You're with me and Your people? How else will we know that we're special among all other people on this planet Earth?

EXO 33:17-19, *And the Lord said to Moses, "I will also do this thing of which you have spoken; for you have found favor in My sight, and I have known you by name." Then Moses said, "I pray Thee, show me Thy glory!" And He said, "I Myself will make all My goodness pass before you, and will proclaim the name of the Lord before you; and I will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show compassion on whom I will show compassion."*

God's glory is revealed by His grace, and by His mercy. God says He will be gracious to whom He will be gracious, and will be compassionate to whom He will be compassionate. Mercy, or compassion, is that which deals with the past in our lives, our mistakes and our failures. Grace gives us the power in the present and the power for the future. You have to understand these two specific principles of grace and mercy if you are ever going to have rest with God. If you don't have rest with God you won't have rest with yourself. If you don't have rest with yourself you won't have rest with others. Remember that the Bible says, *"You shall love your neighbor as or while you love yourself."* Before you can ever love others, you have to learn how to love yourself. Arrogance, guilt, condemnation, and fear, torments a person's soul unless the individual discovers what real biblical rest is all about. Why should you have rest as a believer? Well there is only one reason; because God promised that He will be gracious and merciful (compassionate) to you. Therefore, no matter how bad you fail, how bad you've fallen, the promise is still grace and mercy to you as a child of God. Even Divine discipline is a revelation of His grace.

When Moses asked to see the glory of God, that manifestation of God's glory was grace and mercy. The manifestations of the glory of God **from** God, is His grace and mercy, but the manifestation of the Glory of God **in us**, is rest. If we have rest within us, we manifest His glory. His glory from Him is the manifestation of His grace and mercy. His glory in us is different. It's you and I manifesting to Him, and to the world that we are at rest no matter what the situation may be. We are at rest because as the Lord Jesus Christ has said, *He has finished the work*.

### **Point 3. Rest is also a fulfillment of the promises of God.**

The Lord has promised you rest. In fact, God has promised rest for all those who come to Him. However, if you don't live in God's promises, which are based upon His character and nature, you won't have rest. The writer of Hebrews says that if you want to live in fear of something, live in fear that you don't live in the promises of God (HEB 4:1). The Lord Jesus Christ made a promise to everyone of us that come unto Him. MAT 11:28-29, *"Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart;*

*and you shall find rest for your souls.*" The problem is that most individuals do not want to learn. Rest comes first from going to Him, that's His promise, and secondly, if you learn from Him, you will find rest for your souls. The second time rest is used here, it means to refresh yourself. The Christian life is to be one of refreshment. Every day the things of this world are designed to take away your freshness; to make you stale, dull, passive and slothful. That's why LAM 3:23 says, *Every morning He is waiting to meet you and His grace and His mercy and His faithfulness are there.* In ISA 30:18 *He's is tapping His foot waiting to be gracious to you.* Rest for your life does not depend upon you striving to produce it, but rest depends upon you resting in His promise that He will give you rest. Not one word of His promise has ever failed.

Let's look at the Hebrew word for *rest* in this passage. *Menuwchah* means a marriage with rest or a resting place, it means to settle in a particular place. The Lord hasn't just given you a moment-by-moment rest, but He has given you a marriage with rest. It is a life-time guarantee, that's what a marriage means to the Lord. *Menuwchah* also means a condition of rest, a place of rest, and a habitation of rest. This tells us that the Lord has not only promised you rest daily, He has promised you rest for all eternity. Some of you have been waiting for a proposal, well here it is: Rest is asking for you to marry it, waiting for you to say, yes. Many believers are trying to reach a goal that they have already been graciously promised, which is rest and peace. We all have the opportunity for what we are secretly searching for and it's within ourselves because of the life of Christ. Again, here is the promise that the Lord Jesus Christ made: *"If you come to Me, I will give you rest."* But we can't stop there because He says in the next verse, *"Take My yoke upon you [walk with Me and work with Me] for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls."* This seems to be a strange paradox in light of the fact that the average believer, already weary and overloaded must take a new weight upon him in order to find rest. But this advice is based upon two passages, PSA 55:22 *Cast your burden upon the Lord, and He will sustain you [Pile your troubles on God's shoulders]; He will never allow the righteous to be shaken.* 1PE 5:7 *casting all your anxiety upon Him, because He cares for you.* If you think that your problems are overwhelming, think of what our Lord went through for others. For the prophet Isaiah wrote that our Lord *was despised and forsaken of men, A man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief (ISA 53:3).* The writer of Hebrews said *"For we do not have a high priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but One who has been tempted in all things as we are, yet without sin."* We don't have a priest who is out of touch with our reality. Think of it, you who think you have problems that are so intense and no one really seems to care or understand. What kind of yoke did our Lord endure? He endured the mocking by leaders and others in LUK 23:35. They also tried to stone Him to death in JOH 8:59. In PSA 22:16 *they pierced His hands and His feet.* People that He loved, and that He died for, stood up and began to give false testimony about Him in MAR 14:57. In LUK 22:48, His close friend, whom He trusted betrayed Him. People spat in His face, and beat Him with their fists; and others slapped Him in MAT 26:67. Still in LUK 23:34 we read *But Jesus was saying, "Father, forgive them; for they do not know what they are doing."* (See also ZEC 13:6; JOH 1:11; MAT 9:34; MAT 11:19; MAT 26:65-66; MAR 3:21-22; MAR 3:30;) In addition to all that, He went through an experience that was the worst experience of all, having God the Father forsake Him in MAT 27:46. So, our Lord says, *"Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My load is light."* Why did our Lord say that after knowing all that He would go through? HEB 12:2-3 answers this, *Be concentrating our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider Him who has endured such hostility by sinners against Himself, so that you may not grow weary and lose heart [become discouraged].*

Continuing on from MAT 11:30 (there are no breaks in the original) MAT 12:1 *At that time [after He had just taught them about rest] Jesus went on the Sabbath through the grainfields, and His disciples*

became hungry and began to pick the heads {of grain} and eat. But when the Pharisees saw it, they said to Him, "Behold, Your disciples do what is not lawful to do on a Sabbath." Once again the Pharisees were sticking their collective noses into other peoples affairs.

#### **Point 4. The purpose of rest.**

Why is it that God wants to give you rest? Rest is given because it's the only cure for sorrows, fears, and bondage. However, rest is the medicine to heal you from sorrows, difficulties and fears (2TI 1:7). You must have a sound mind or else you can forget about the power and love that you need. The Apostle John tells us in 1JO 4:18 that fear has torment. ROM 8:15 says, *For you have not received the spirit of bondage [there is your promise again], but you have received the spirit of adoption.* In ISA 14:3-7 we see that the purpose of rest is to deliver you from your fears, your sorrows, and your bondages. ISA 14:3-7, *And it will be in the day when the Lord gives you rest from your pain and turmoil and harsh service in which you have been enslaved, that you will take up this taunt against the king of Babylon, and say, "How the oppressor has ceased, {And how} fury has ceased! The Lord has broken the staff of the wicked, The scepter of rulers Which used to strike the peoples in fury with unceasing strokes, Which subdued the nations in anger with unrestrained persecution. The whole earth is at rest {and} is quiet;" They break forth into shouts of joy.*

The Hebrew word for *rest* here is *nuwach*, which is a special kind of rest, it means to replace your sorrows, fears, and bondage with the comfort of rest and peace. Many believers are enslaved to their troubles and the details of life. Every day things take place that feed this sorrow and bondage (JER 49:23). Many are ridden with guilt and condemnation which determines how they are going to live that day. But, God's rest will give you comfort. It will give you freedom from guilt and condemnation. It will replace your fears, sorrows and bondages with His comfort and peace. There is only one thing stopping you from receiving that rest and that is your very own unbelief. It's not what your spouse did to you, or what your parents did to you, or anything else, the one and only thing stopping you is what you are doing to yourself. The purpose of rest is to give us confidence and to give us Divine deliverance. No matter how good, moral, or sweet we are, no matter how much we pray, serve, honor, or give, if we are not at rest, we are not operating in proper motivation. When you are not at rest, it's time for you to change your system of thinking. It is in repentance or changing your mind and resting that you will be delivered.

#### **Point 5. Bible Doctrine Is the Guide to Lead God's People to Rest.**

Bible doctrine is the Lord's way of leading you to rest. Without it (Bible doctrine) you'll will never have rest.

ISA 28:9-16, *To whom would He teach knowledge, And to whom would He interpret the message? Those just weaned from milk? Those just taken from the breast? For He says, 'Order on order, order on order, Line on line, line on line, A little here, a little there. Indeed, He will speak to this people Through stammering lips and a foreign tongue, He who said to them, "Here is rest, give rest to the weary," And, "Here is repose," but they would not listen. So the word of the Lord to them will be, "Order on order, order on order, Line on line, line on line, A little here, a little there," That they may go and stumble backward, be broken, snared and taken captive. Therefore, hear the word of the Lord, O scoffers, Who rule this people who are in Jerusalem, Because you have said, "We have made a covenant with death, And with Sheol we have made a pact. The overwhelming scourge will not reach us when it passes by. For we have made falsehood our refuge and we have concealed ourselves with deception." Therefore thus says the Lord God, "Behold, I am laying in Zion a stone, a tested stone, A costly cornerstone for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes in it will not be disturbed."*

The first rest is the Hebrew word *menuwachach*, this is the rest, or the condition of rest, the marriage of rest. The second rest is *nuwach*, to give comfort and rest from troubles and anxieties. So, it is saying that doctrine is making a proposal for you to marry it so that it will give you rest from your sorrows and heartaches and from your guilt. Doctrine is the object of your unbelief or that which you are

unbelieving towards. Once you have doctrine, it will cause you to rest. Doctrine leads you to the person of Christ and to reject doctrine is to reject the rest that God has for your life.

**Point 6. Rest is said to be the inheritance of people of God.**

Have you ever stopped and thought that you are an heir to the throne? You're not just some inconsequential member of the human race merely existing. You are said to be an heir to the throne of God, God loves you, and you're an heir, you're a king, you're a priest. In Deu 12, rest is said to be the inheritance of the people of God. DEU 12:9 *"for you have not as yet come to the resting place and the inheritance which the Lord your God is giving you."* Until now you haven't arrived at the goal, the resting place, the inheritance that your God is giving you. DEU 12:10 *"When you cross the Jordan and live in the land which the Lord your God is giving you to inherit, and He gives you rest from all your enemies around you so that you live in security,"* He'll give you rest from all your surrounding enemies. You'll be able to settle down and live in safety.

DEU 12:11-12, *"then it shall come about that the place in which the Lord your God shall choose for His name to dwell, there you shall bring all that I command you: your burnt offerings and your sacrifices, your tithes and the contribution of your hand, and all your choice votive offerings which you will vow to the Lord. And you shall rejoice before the Lord your God, [celebrate in the presence of GOD] you and your sons and daughters, your male and female servants, and the Levite who is within your gates, since he [the Levite] has no portion or inheritance with you."*

PSA 37:7 says *"Rest in the Lord and wait patiently for Him; Do not fret because of him who prospers in his way, Because of the man who carries out wicked schemes."* This time the word for rest is the Hebrew word *damam* to stop everything you're doing and be astonished at Him, occupied with Him. It means if you have problems right now, just stop everything you're doing and be astonished at Him. What happens with most believers is that the problem comes and they immediately freak out, and all they do is concentrate on the problem. They don't stop everything that they are doing, rather they start doing more than they have ever done before. They should have stop everything they're doing and rest in the Lord. In His time, He has a purpose, He has a reason for everything that happens in your life, He even knows even the numbers of hairs upon your head (MAT 10:30). He will come through for you.

**Point 7. The Opposition to Rest.**

In Deu 25, the opposition to God's rest is the believers flesh. You have an enemy that goes with you wherever you go, and its job is to try and see to it that you are not at rest, that enemy is your flesh your old sin nature (OSN). The duty of the OSN is to fight against the rest that God has for you. IOH 6:63 *"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life."*

Remember that in EPH 2:1-2, there are three enemies that you face; *"And you were dead in your trespasses and sins [your flesh], in which you formerly walked according to the course of this world [the cosmic system], according to the prince of the power of the air [the devil],"*

# THE DOCTRINE OF REST. PART 2.

04/27/08

**We are noting the Doctrine of Rest.**

**Point 7 in our study: The Opposition to Rest.**

In Deu 25, the opposition to God's rest is the believers flesh. You have an enemy that goes with you wherever you go, and it is trying make sure that you are not at rest; that enemy is your flesh. In DEU 25:17-19, the Lord told Moses to teach the children of Israel, *"Remember what Amalek did to you along the way when you came out from Egypt, [Amalek is a type of the flesh] how he met you along the way and attacked among you all the stragglers at your rear [the ones not moving forward at the proper speed] when you were faint and weary; and he did not respect God. Therefore it shall come about when the Lord your God has given you rest from all your surrounding enemies, in the land which the Lord your God gives you as an inheritance to possess, you shall blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven; you must not forget."*

*Amalek* is a type of the flesh that tries to make you weary. You are most vulnerable at times when you have just had a victory, that's when your rest is in danger of being taken away. In verse 19 the word for rest is *nuach* which is the rest that gives us comfort and freedom from worrying, so it is a refreshing rest. There's another principle to note concerning opposition to rest, and that is sin, David said in PSA 38:3 that he had *no rest because of his sin*. Sin takes away your rest, your pleasure and deprives you of rest. Sin condemns us, accuses, and destroys us. That's why the believer must come to a place to learn how to receive the rest of God. LAM 1:3 teaches that the believer can find no rest among the heathen or those who live in the cosmic system. They couldn't find a resting place in the world, because only God can provide that. They couldn't find a marriage with rest because they had entered into spiritual adultery. JAM 4:4 says, *You adulteresses, do you not know that friendship with the world is hostility toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.*

Unrest is also described as the inevitable result of the unbeliever, REV 14:11 *"And the smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever; and they have no rest day and night, those who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name."* Pretty serious words from a God who has fulfilled over 300 prophecies perfectly and completely and has proven over and over again that what He says will happen, happens. Although this verse speaks of the eternal lake of fire, it also speaks temporarily of those that are involved with the cosmic system. Your greatest enemy taking away your rest is your very own flesh.

Rest is also related to the home. In Ruth 1:9, Naomi had told her two daughters-in-law to go and find rest in the house of their own husbands, RUT 1:9 *"May the Lord grant that you may find rest, each in the house of her husband."* Again we have the Hebrew word for a marriage with rest. Many women find no rest in life because they are not at rest at home with their husbands, this is because of the principle of 1PE 3:1-7, and of course vice-versa is true as well. They are in constant struggle with each other, and so they never have any rest. 1PE 3:7 tells us that this is why prayers are not answered in many marriages. Certain prayers are not answered because they are hindered on account of domestic problems. So rest has a tremendous relationship to the home. Rest at home is where rest really begins. For example, PRO 29:17 tells us that if we correct our children, they will give us rest, a household that has discipline, has rest. This is why God's love and God's word will solve any domestic problem that you will ever have. It may not work out as some people want it to, but it will work out for those who operate in God's word with Divine viewpoint.

ISA 11:10 tells us that His rest is said to be glorious, *Then it will come about in that day That the nations will resort to the root of Jesse, Who will stand as a signal for the peoples; And His resting place*

*will be glorious.* God's word is glorious and will give you rest. God will give you the rest that you need to handle the situations in life. If you let God give you rest, no matter how difficult things at home may be, His rest is so glorious that He will come through for you.

Now, all of this truly begins, and becomes easier to attain, when you understand that the power on the inside of the believer is greater than any attacks from the cosmic system. The Power that you possess is greater than worries, anxieties, fears, distress, troubles, phobias, panic, shock, tensions, etc. 1JO 4:4 *You are from God, little children, and have overcome all the things of this world them; because greater is He who is in you than he who is in the world.* The Spirit in you is far stronger than anything in the world. The power of the Holy Spirit dwells in us, and Bible doctrine is a greater power than anything in the world. Whatever comes against you from the outside can't stand up to what is on the inside of you, because the Greater One lives inside of you. You have already won the victory! Satan's strategy is to try and deflate you; to stop you from reaching your goal. However, God has the final say, and He has already spoken. We fall down, we get up, over and over again. Remember that the saints are just the sinners, who fall down, and get up. The Lord Jesus Christ defeated Satan and the kingdom of darkness at the Cross once and for all, that means for all time.

*COL 2:14-15, having cancelled out the certificate of debt which was against us by means of the decrees, and which [certificate of debt] was hostile to us and He [by means of the decrees] has taken it out of the way having nailed it to the Cross]. When He had disarmed the rulers and authorities, He made a public display of them, having triumphed over them through Him.*

**Point 8. Rest Is Also the Result of Submitting to a Local Assembly.**

This means we are to truly submit to a local assembly, and the authority of the pastor-teacher. Whenever we mention authority we must back it up scripturally, because of all the attacks made against the pastor's authority. Satan knows the value of authority, so he attacks it especially in the spiritual realm. No believer can attain spiritual maturity, and become an invisible hero or glorify God, apart from perception, metabolization and application of Bible doctrine. This means that no believer can simply read the Bible and attain spiritual maturity. The Bible is our textbook, but the gift of pastor-teacher is designed to communicate the specifics of the mystery doctrine that cause spiritual growth (EPH 4:11-13). Doctrine must be learned under authority, and that authority is vested in the spiritual gift of pastor-teacher. Pastors don't rule over you in the sense of telling you what to do, but in the sense of teaching you what God expects from you and how to execute His plan. You submit to the pastors' authority in listening to their communication of doctrine.

There is a tremendous form of Divine protection given the pastor because of his office. The pastor's authority is established on the basis of the teaching of Bible doctrine. Hence, the issue is not the man, but always the message (1PE 5:2; 2TI 4:2). The man who is willing to accept all the pressure that comes from his calling, such as double discipline and undeserved suffering, better be prepared for the calling. 1TI 4:10 *For because of this [communication of Bible doctrine], we work hard to the point of exhaustion, and we hang in there tough because we have confidence in the living God who is the Savior of all men.* The pastor's authority is documented many places throughout the scripture (ACT 20:28; 1PE 5:2). So without a local assembly the believer is without rest. Of course there are some exceptions to this rule, but this is the basic principle. David gave us a spiritual principle concerning this in 1CH 23:25 *For David said, "The Lord God of Israel has given rest to His people, and He dwells in Jerusalem forever."*

Jerusalem is said to be the mother of us all. Jerusalem is the type of Church in GAL 4:25, and a church can certainly become your resting place. Things can be bad in the home, or on the job, but when you come to the local assembly you should receive edification (EPH 1:22-23). Therefore, when you are a part of a local assembly where people love and serve God; a place where the word of God is being spoken accurately, you will end up being benefited by it and you'll receive all the rest that you need.

When you walk out of the doors of the local assembly you are free to have the rest and peace needed in confronting the situations that life brings.

*ACT 9:31 So the church throughout all Judea and Galilee and Samaria enjoyed peace, being built up; and, going on in the respect for the Lord and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, it continued to increase.*

The Greek word *oikodomeo* means to build a house, here it refers to building a soul structure. So notice a church with rest is edified (that's the soul structure), because of this they walked in reverent respect or occupation with the Lord. They enjoyed and experienced the comforting ministry of God the Holy Spirit (GAL 5:22), who manifests His fruit in us, and they are increased or multiplied. The rest in a local assembly causes the believers to be a soul winners, they want loved ones to have the same thing that they do. The rest comes from the wisdom that is to rest in the believers soul. PRO 14:33 *Wisdom rests in the heart of one who has understanding, but in the bosom of fools it is made known.* Whatever rests in the heart of the believer will determine the mental attitude and your overt behavior. Is it guilt, fear, condemnation, or is it the word of God dwelling richly within? It either going to be stress or rest. Each of us has within ourselves the power to decide how to interpret stressful events. We can do it with humor; we can do it with wisdom. Sometimes we can use compassion, sometimes we can use patience and sometimes we can just accept the situation for what it is. But, you always remain humble and at rest.

When you have a servant's heart, you're humble and at rest within yourself. You respect those in charge, you serve faithfully and quietly without concern over who gets the credit. That was just how King David was, and God looked at David, out in the fields in the foothills surrounding Bethlehem, keeping his father's sheep, faithfully doing his father's bidding, and God put His approval on him. A true servant doesn't care who gets the glory. A servant has one great goal, and that is to make the person he serves look better, to make that person even more successful. A servant does not want the person he serves to fail. A servant doesn't care who thinks what, just as long as the job gets done. So while David's brothers were off in the army making rank and fighting big, impressive battles, David was all alone keeping the sheep. God loved His servant's heart.

#### **Point 9. God's Attitude of Rest Toward the Believer.**

God's attitude toward the believer is a vital principle for you to understand concerning the doctrine of rest. One of the problems most believers face is talking too much and listening too little. This is why the Bible says that when you come into the house of the Lord your God be not rash with your mouth to utter anything before God (ECC 5:1-2). There are going to be some difficulties you will have to face when you go to the house of God. Everything is not going to be perfect. You can very easily get your eyes stuck on people. In fact, many people withdraw from a local assembly because of personality conflicts with others. But, if you're on the way to the house of God, the place where doctrine is being taught, and the word of God can do all things, then you can bet that the kingdom of darkness has designed a plan to try and distract you from hearing the word of God. If the kingdom of darkness is not successful in hindering you from coming to Bible class, then it will try to hinder you from receiving the word of God once you are in Bible class. That results in cramming your mind with your problems instead of the Divine mental attitude of rest. Remember the kingdom of darkness can hinder you from being at the place you ought to be, 1TH 2:18 *"For we wanted to come to you I, Paul, more than once, and yet Satan hindered us.* Not only can you be hindered from coming to the house of God, you can also be distracted while you're on your way! It may be the children acting up and fighting in the back seat making you miserable. It might be an argument between the passengers, a disagreement between husband and wife, or amongst friends. The point is that you need to be careful of anything that can distract you and get you involved with the mental attitude sins which will disturb your concentration on the word of God. You may even be all alone, and suddenly these terrible thoughts begin to come to your mind. You don't know where they're coming from, but they are designed to take



your mind off the real purpose from coming, which is concentration on the word of God. Remember that the word of God is alive and powerful.

So, Solomon puts it this way in ECC 5:1 *"Guard your steps as you go to the house of God, and draw near to listen rather than to offer the sacrifice of fools;*

This means that when people go to the house of God, they are to be involved in true worship which is listening. Listening to the communication of the word of God, hearing what God's word has to say. Worship is a very interesting word and many people do not know what it really means. The ultimate form of worship is the communication of Bible doctrine. That's why our Lord said in MAT 15:9 *"But in vain do they worship Me, Teaching as doctrines the precepts of men."* Note that our Lord equated teaching with worship. In JOH 4:23-24 He said *"But an hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. God is spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."* Truth is needed in true worship, and it is truth that must be taught! In ACT 18:13 Paul was accused of *"persuading men to worship God contrary to the law,"* meaning that worship in the Old Testament had to do with the doctrine found in the Law, but now the New Testament form of worship is found in learning the mystery doctrine of the Church-age.

The highest form of worship is either teaching Bible doctrine or receiving Bible doctrine. All of the nonsense that you see today with excessive singing and raising hands, and clapping and yelling out pious "amens" is not worship. True worship is either teaching or listening to Bible Doctrine. You do more worshipping by sitting and listening and concentrating under the filling of the Spirit then you could ever do while doing anything else. PSA 138:2 says *"I will bow down toward Your holy temple and will praise Your name for Your love and Your faithfulness, for You have exalted above all things Your name and Your word."* In fact, we should never forget that all of us will be judged and evaluated based upon our love and desire for God's word. In JOH 12:48, the Lord said *"He who rejects Me, and does not receive My doctrines, has one who judges him; the word I spoke is what will judge him at the last day."*

So in ECC 5:1 *"Guard your steps as you go to the house of God, and draw near to listen rather than to offer the sacrifice of fools for they do not know they are doing evil."* Solomon is saying that true worship is listening to the word of God or your perception of Bible doctrine! The sacrifice of fools is referring to meaningless rituals! The sacrifice of fools is religion! God is not interested in any of these things, He is interested in His word, which is *active and living, alive and powerful* always changing your life for the better, and giving you the information you need to be at rest in your souls. Knowledge learned and then applied is what gives you rest.

Sadly today, worldly problems and human plans are brought not only to the very door, but even into the house of God itself. That's why the house of the Lord is not to sell things. No restaurant or a book store or the selling of tickets etc. And if you say, it's alright if it's for the Lord, JOH 2:16 says *"And to those who were selling the doves [the doves were for the sacrifice to the Lord]away; stop making My Father's house a house of merchandise."*

Just think of all the people going through various types of ritual and tradition and the Bible says they do not know they are doing evil! HEB 3:10-11; *They always go astray in their heart; And they did not know My ways, therefore, as I swore in My wrath, "They shall not enter My rest."*

#### **Point 10. The Believers Responsibility and The Means to Rest.**

The Lord said through the prophet Ezekiel that He was going to feed the flock and cause them to lie down. EZE 34:15 *"I will feed My flock and I will lead them to rest," declares the Lord God.*

Again it is spiritual food which causes us to rest. Now when the Lord gives you rest it's for a specific purpose. What is one of the reasons?

*2Ch 14:6-7, And he built fortified cities in Judah, since the land was undisturbed, and there was no one at war with him during those years, because the Lord had given him rest, because we have sought the Lord our God; He has given us rest on every side.*

*So they built and prospered.* So because the Lord gave them rest on every side, they took that opportunity to build and prosper. When the Lord gives you rest it's for you to build. No matter what kind of enemy you're faced with, He is our peace and rest. When He gives you rest, it's not a time for you to get lazy and slothful, impassive doctrinally. It's a time to build up your soul with more doctrine! You are the beneficiary of many wonderful blessings from God. Yet like many people if you do not know these things you will lose out. Many people live as paupers on earth when they are related to a God who controls the entire universe. The modern tendency today of apostasy stresses the works of the believer and the production of the believer rather than the rest of God, which is why many people have been denied these blessings. The problem today is the believers ignorance of Bible doctrine. Your biggest enemy is your own ignorance. People constantly live in their relationship to God rather than God's relationship to them. This is why they make so many mistakes. The tendency today in these times of apostasy, is to put all the pressure on you as a believer to get you to work and to get you to perform.

*HEB 3:7-10, Therefore, just as the Holy Spirit says, "Today if you hear His voice, Do not harden your hearts as when they provoked Me, As in the day of trial in the wilderness, Where your fathers tried Me by testing Me, And saw My works for forty years. "Therefore I was angry with this generation, And said, "They always go astray in their heart; And they did not know My ways;"*

When God gets down to indicting you He doesn't mention your failures to do this or that, He mentions that you have erred in your heart and you have not known His ways. When God gets down to indicting you, He does so for your stupidity and your ignorance. This is because you are living on earth as a loser when He has given you the equipment and artillery to make you an overcomer and a winner. Serving, giving, loving, and praying all happens after learning Bible doctrine. So, the main problem in the life of most believers is no doctrine. The reason why most believers cannot be distinguished from unbelievers: No doctrine. Ignorance of Bible doctrine means a breakdown with the faith-rest life.

# THE DOCTRINE OF THE DEITY OF JESUS CHRIST.

05/04/08

*ROM 9:1-5, "I am communicating doctrine, I am not lying, my conscious bearing joint testimony with me in the Holy Spirit, but I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my right lobe, so I could wish that I myself would be accursed. Consequently, separated from Christ, but it cannot be, for the sake of, or on behalf of my brethren, the racial Jews. My fellow countrymen, national Jews. According to earthly descent, Who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption and as sons and the glory [the Shekinah glory], and the covenants [the unconditional covenants], and the deposit of the law, and the temple service [which means the service of God in the temples] and the promises, whose are the fathers, and from whom is the Christ according to the flesh, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen."*

In ROM 9:5, the phrase *the fathers* is the Greek plural noun *pateres* which is a reference to the regenerate ancestry of Israel. Abraham, Isaac and Jacob are the line of the Jewish race, the line of the seed of Abraham, because each one was born again, and eventually each one reached maturity. The emphasis is on the origin of the Jew, and this separates the Jew from the Gentile forever. However, no Jew can ever be a true Jew until he becomes a vessel of honor once having believed in the Lord Jesus Christ.

The secret to the foundation of the Jewish race is regeneration. Therefore, it was very difficult for Paul to see his fellow countrymen reject Christ as Savior. They have not followed the pattern of Abraham in GEN 15:6 *who believed in the Lord and it was credited to his account for righteousness*. While Isaac had a stepbrother, Ishmael, Isaac is the chosen one through regeneration. The omniscience of God knew of the decision Isaac would make, and he was the elected one.

So, ROM 9:5 *whose are the fathers*, [the regenerate ancestors, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob] *and from whom is the Christ according to the flesh, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen*. Jesus Christ, although true humanity forever, continues to be eternal God forever, and as God, He still has all of the attributes of God as well as the attributes of perfect humanity, He is then the last Adam. The word for *blessed* is *eulogeetos* which means being praised, or being blessed referring to the eternal glory of the Lord Jesus Christ. Of course this refers to the Deity of the Lord Jesus Christ and His equality with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. With that we have begun a short review of the **Doctrine of the Deity of Jesus Christ**.

## **Point 1. Definition.**

Deity is defined as the essential nature or condition of being God. Jesus Christ is eternal God. As a member of the Trinity, He always existed. There never was a time when He did not exist. He is co-equal and co-eternal with the Father and the Spirit. To prove that Jesus Christ is God, you can begin with GEN 1:1 *"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."* In JOH 1:1 we read, *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God [the Deity of Christ always existed]. All things came into being by Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being."* In eternity past, Jesus Christ had the same essence as the Father and Spirit. In time, He still had the same functions of Deity, but He also became true humanity. He is now different than the Father, and the Holy Spirit because He is also true humanity, therefore, He is unique!

COL 1:15 *"And He [Jesus Christ] keeps on being the exact image of the invisible God, the privileged first-born with reference to all creation."*

When it says that He is *the privileged first-born*, it doesn't mean that He was born, because in His Deity He always existed. The word *first-born* is *prototokos* which refers to the privileged one of a new creation. The humanity of Christ was born as taught in ISA 7:14, *"Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign: Behold, a virgin will be with child and bear a son, and she will call His name Immanuel."* This

is fulfilled in MAT 1:20-23. The phrase *first-born* not only indicates the first-born of a new creation, but also indicates special privilege. There were 3 privileges of the first-born sons in Israel:

The first-born had the privilege of rulership.

The first-born in the Levitical tribe had the priesthood of the family.

The first-born had the privilege of heirship.

In REV 5:5 we are told that *sitting on the throne is the Lion that is from the tribe of Judah, the Root of David*. We read that the elders say to Him in REV 4:11 *“Worthy art Thou, our Lord and our God, to receive glory and honor and power; for Thou didst create all things, and because of Thy will they existed, and were created.”* So again in COL 1:15 *“And He [Jesus Christ] keeps on being the exact image of the invisible God, the privileged first-born with reference to all creation.”* The word *creature* is *ktiseos*, which means creature or the original creation, and this includes angels. Please note that Jesus Christ was not created, but He is the first-born of every creature. We do not know what type of redemption angels had, but verses like this leave a door open for some eternal mystery concerning angelic redemption. The Lord Jesus Christ is God, and He created all humanity. Jesus Christ is unique! Everything that you will ever possess, and ever have possessed depends upon the uniqueness of Jesus Christ!

COL 1:16-18, *For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities, all things have been created by Him and for Him. And He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. He is also head of the body, the church; and He is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; so that He Himself might come to have first place in everything.*

So Jesus Christ is the ruler of the Church. The first-born in the Levitical tribe had the priesthood of the family. Jesus Christ is also the High Priest forever after the order of Melchizedek. HEB 5:6 *Thou art a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek*. The first-born also had the privilege of heirship. Christ is also the Heir of all things. HEB 1:2 *“in these last days has spoken to us in His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the world.”* This heirship included the double portion, and Christ has the double portion in eternity of both Israel and the Church.

Why is understanding and mastering this doctrine so important? Because 1JO 2:22-23 says, *“Who is the liar but the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist [ones against the real Christ], the one who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father; the one who confesses the Son has the Father also.”*

#### **Point 2. The Syllogism of Deity.**

A syllogism is a logical formula consisting of two premises and then a conclusion; a major and minor premise, plus a conclusion derived from deductive reasoning. For example: Every virtue is admirable (major premise). Kindness is a virtue (minor premise). Therefore, kindness is admirable (conclusion). Following this formula: The Trinity is eternal. Christ is a member of the Trinity. Therefore, Christ is eternal. There are at least three verses of scripture where the Deity of Christ is presented as a syllogism. First in 1PE 1:1; *“Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who reside as aliens, scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, who are chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by the sanctifying work of the Spirit, that you may obey Jesus Christ and be sprinkled with His blood: May grace and peace be yours in fullest measure.”* Notice, for those who deny the existence of the Trinity, we have God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit all mentioned in this verse. We have the omniscience of God the Father mentioned by the word foreknowledge. We have the omnipotence of God the Holy Spirit sanctifying the believer. We have the obedience to the Lord Jesus Christ.

Secondly, 2CO 13:14 *“The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.”*

Thirdly, MAT 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit,"

The syllogism is that the Trinity is eternal, Christ is the member of the trinity; therefore, Christ is eternal.

### Point 3. Scriptural Documentation Regarding the Deity of Christ.

MIC 5:2 says during the incarnation, that Jesus Christ is eternal God, "But as for you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, {Too} little to be among the clans of Judah, From you One will go forth for Me to be ruler in Israel. His goings forth are from long ago, From the days of eternity." Our Lord fulfilled this in MAT 2:5-6. Notice the phrase, "His goings forth are from long ago, From the days of eternity. The Hebrew word for eternity, here is *olam*, and is used to affirm the eternal existence of the Father in many passages (GEN 21:33; PSA 41:13; 90:2; 103:17; ISA 40:28). What this proves for the Father, it also proves for the Son.

JOH 1:1 "In a beginning [which was not a beginning] there existed the Word [Jesus Christ]. In JOH 8:56-58, "Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw {it} and was glad." The Jews therefore said to Him, "You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham?" Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I am." The phrase "I am" means "I had always existed."

EXO 3:13-14, Then Moses said to God, "Behold, I am going to the sons of Israel, and I shall say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you.' Now they may say to me, 'What is His name?' What shall I say to them?" And God said to Moses, "I AM WHO I AM" and He said, "Thus you shall say to the sons of Israel, 'I AM has sent me to you.'"

Our Lord used the same terminology that the Father used to describe Himself "ego eimi" - "I am." The Jews understood His use of *ego eimi* to be the same as when used by the Father, as evidenced by the fact that they sought to kill him, when He said it (JOH 8:59).

On a number of occasions, Jesus refers to Himself by using "I am."

In JOH 6:35 "I am the bread of life"

In JOH 6:41 "I am the bread that came down out of heaven."

In JOH 6:51 "I am the living bread."

In JOH 8:12 "I am the light of the world;"

In JOH 8:18 "I am He who bears witness of Myself,"

In JOH 10:7 "I am the door of the sheep."

In JOH 10:14 "I am the good shepherd;"

In JOH 11:25 "I am the resurrection and the life;"

In JOH 14:6 "I am the way, and the truth, and the life;"

In JOH 15:1 "I am the true vine,"

Those are the ten I AM's of the Gospel of John. Ten represents the number of completion of the Divine order. The Lord Jesus Christ was completely identifying Himself as the great I AM! Many people say that Jesus Christ never claimed to be God, but that is not true. At the time of His trial, the High Priest asked Jesus about His Messiahship. MAR 14:62 And Jesus said, "I am; and you shall see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of Power, and coming with the clouds of heaven." There are many other roles or titles of Jehovah from the Old Testament used of and by Jesus: Author of Eternal Law; Bridegroom; Redeemer; Light; Shepherd; Savior; Rock; Forgiver of Sins; Judge. In ISA 45:22-23, God says of Himself (through the prophet); "Turn to Me, and be saved, all the ends of the earth; For I am God, and there is no other. I have sworn by Myself, The word has gone forth from My mouth in righteousness And will not turn back, That to Me every knee will bow, every tongue will swear {allegiance.}"

In PHI 2:10-11 Paul says, "that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those who are in heaven, and on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father." JOH 5:18 For this cause therefore the Jews were seeking all the more to kill Him,

because He not only was breaking the Sabbath, but also was calling God His own Father, making Himself equal with God. Jesus was indeed making Himself equal with God. He was beginning to teach that the unity of God involved a true uniting of three persons in the Godhead, or in the Divine nature; and He was claiming to be one of them. In COL 2:9 Paul writes, "in Christ all the fullness of the Deity lives in bodily form," In TIT 2:13 Jesus Christ is called God: *looking for the blessed hope and the appearing of the glory of our great God and Savior, Christ Jesus*; You will note that the Bible clearly teaches the Deity of Jesus Christ.

You will recall Thomas who at first could not believe in the resurrection of Jesus, then the Lord Jesus Christ appeared to him. JOH 20:27-28, *Then He said to Thomas, "Reach here your finger, and see My hands; and reach here your hand, and put it into My side; and be not unbelieving, but believing." Thomas answered and said to Him, "My Lord and my God!"* It was Paul who said in ROM 10:9 *"If you confess with your lips that Jesus is Lord [Jehovah], and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved."*

Let's look at this from the perspective of a Q and A Session to further prove the Deity of Christ:

1. Who is omnipotent (all powerful)? The answer according to the Scriptures is God (1CH 29:11). In PHI 3:21, Jesus Christ is all-powerful; He exerts "the power that He has even to subject all things to Himself."
2. Who is omniscient (all knowing)? 1JO 3:20 says "God knows all things." COL 2:2-3. Jesus Christ has "all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge."
3. Who is Lord of the Sabbath? In GEN 2:3 God is! MAT 12:8; "For the Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath."
4. Who is the great I AM? EXO 3:14 says God is! JOH 8:58 Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I am."
5. Who is the only Creator? ISA 44:24 "Thus says the Lord, your Redeemer, and the One who formed you from the womb, I, the Lord, am the maker of all things, Stretching out the heavens by Myself, And spreading out the earth all alone," COL 1:16 "For by Him all things were created, {both} in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities, all things have been created by Him and for Him."
6. Who is the only Savior? ISA 43:11 "I, even I, am the Lord; And there is no savior besides Me." ACT 4:12 *And there is salvation in no one else; for there is no other name under heaven that has been given among men, by which we must be saved.*
7. Who will judge mankind? ISA 3:13 says Jehovah will! 2CO 5:10 "For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ,"
8. Who will judge between the sheep and goats? (EZE 34:17; MAT 25:31-34).
9. Who sent the prophets? (JER 7:25; MAT 23:34).
10. Who resurrected Jesus? ACT 4:10 *let it be known to all of you, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead.*
11. Who is coming in glory? ISA 40:5 "Then the glory of the Lord will be revealed, And all flesh will see {it} together; For the mouth of the Lord has spoken." MAT 24:30 "and then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory."
12. Who is our Father? (ISA 63:16; ISA 9:6). REV 1:17 *And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as a dead man. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying, "Do not be afraid; I am the first and the last,"*
14. Who is the Rock of salvation? 2SA 22:32 *For who is God, besides the Lord? And who is a rock, besides our God? 1CO 10:4 and all drank the same spiritual drink, for they were drinking from a spiritual rock which followed them; and the rock was Christ.*
15. Who is the stone of stumbling? (ISA 8:13-15; 1PE 2:8).

16. The *one crying in the wilderness* came to prepare a way for whom? (ISA 40:3). MAT 3:3 *For this is the one referred to by Isaiah the prophet, saying, "The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ready the way of the Lord, Make His paths straight!"*
17. Who is eternal? (GEN 21:33; MIC 5:2).
18. Who is the fountain of living waters? JER 17:13 *"Lord, the hope of Israel, All who forsake Thee will be put to shame. Those who turn away on earth will be written down, Because they have forsaken the fountain of living water, even the Lord."* JOH 4:14 *"but whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life."*
19. Who resurrects the dead? ACT 26:8 *"Why is it considered incredible among you {people} if God does raise the dead?"* JOH 6:40 *"For this is the will of My Father, that everyone who beholds the Son and believes in Him, may have eternal life; and I Myself will raise him up on the last day."*
20. Who gives rewards to man? (ISA 40:10). MAT 16:27 *"For the Son of Man is going to come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and will then recompense every man according to his deeds."*
21. Who has all authority and power? God does (1CH 29:11). MAT 28:18 *And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth."*
22. Who gives power and authority to man? (PSA 68:35). LUK 9:1 *And He called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all the demons, and to heal diseases.*
23. Who forgives sin? 2CH 7:14 *"and My people who are called by My name humble themselves and pray, and seek My face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven, will forgive their sin, and will heal their land."* MAT 9:6 *"But in order that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins" then He said to the paralytic "Rise, take up your bed, and go home."*
24. Who sent the Holy Spirit? God did. (GAL 4:6; JOH 16:7).
25. Who has the greatest name? NEH 9:5 *"Arise, bless the Lord your God forever and ever! O may Thy glorious name be blessed And exalted above all blessing and praise!"* PHI 2:9 *"Therefore also God highly exalted Him, and bestowed on Him the name which is above every name,"*
26. Who are we to worship? (EXO 34:14; REV 4:10-11; REV 5:11-14; REV 19:10).
27. Who is the good Shepherd? GEN 48:15 *And he [Jacob] blessed Joseph, and said, "The God before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac walked, The God who has been my shepherd all my life to this day,"* JOH 10:14 *"I am the good shepherd; and I know My own, and My own know Me,"*
28. Who searches for the lost sheep of Israel? (EZE 34:11; MAT 5:24).
29. Who is the Lord of lords? (DEU 10:17; REV 17:14).
30. To whom shall every knee bow? (ISA 45:22; PHI 2:10).
31. Who is the righteous branch of David? (JER 23:5; JOH 5:27).
32. Who alone is Holy? 1SA 2:2 *"There is no one holy like the Lord, Indeed, there is no one besides Thee, Nor is there any rock like our God."* ACT 3:14 *But you disowned the Holy and Righteous One, and asked for a murderer to be granted to you,*
33. Whose blood cleanses us? ACT 20:28 *Be on guard for yourselves and for all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God which He purchased with His own blood.* 1JO 1:7 *"but if we walk in the light as He Himself is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin."*
34. The world was created for whom? PRO 16:4 *"The Lord has made everything for its own purpose, Even the wicked for the day of evil."* COL 1:16 *"For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities all things have been created by Him and for Him."*
35. Who is above all? (NEH 9:6; ROM 9:5).
36. Who is forever the same? (PSA 102:24-27). This is quoted about our Lord Jesus Christ in HEB 1:8-12.

37. Who is our light? PSA 27:1 *"The Lord is my light and my salvation; Whom shall I fear? The Lord is the defense of my life; Whom shall I dread?"* JOH 8:12 *Again therefore Jesus spoke to them, saying, "I am the light of the world; he who follows Me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life."*

38. Who is the way or path? (PSA 16:11; JOH 14:6).

39. Who is in charge of the angels? (PSA 103:20; 2TH 1:7).

40. Who gives us rest? EXO 33:14 *And He said, "My presence shall go {with you}, and I will give you rest."* MAT 11:28 *"Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest."*

41. Who gives eternal life? God does! ROM 6:23 *"For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord."* In JOH 10:28 *"and I give eternal life to them, and they shall never perish; and no one shall snatch them out of My hand."*

Point 4. **Bible Verses Stating Jesus is God.**

MAT 1:23; LUK 7:12-16; 1JO 5:20; JOH 5:18; JOH 10:30-33; JOH 13:12-13; JOH 14:8-9; JOH 17:4-5; 2CO 4:4; PHI 2:6; 1TI 3:16; 1TI 6:13-15; HEB 1:1-10. There are many more verses that we could note. These are just a few. So I think by now, you have Biblical proof that Jesus Christ is God.



# THE DOCTRINE OF NEGATIVE VOLITION.

05/11/08

We have noted that the Jews rejected their adoption from God as sons, they rejected the Shekinah glory, the unconditional covenants, the Mosaic law, the temple service, the promises of God, and most importantly they rejected their Messiah, the Deity of the Lord Jesus Christ. Because of all of these rejections, we have begun our study of: **The Doctrine of Negative Volition. Point 1. Introduction.**

Negative volition is refusal of Bible doctrine and it is divided into two categories: First, primary negative volition which is refusal to assemble for Bible teaching. This is the rejection of your right pastor teacher and his authority. Secondly, secondary negative volition is refusal to transfer doctrine heard from the left lobe to the right lobe. This is rejection of the message and therefore Bible doctrine. This is the malfunction of perception, metabolization and application of Bible doctrine. This results in no Divine viewpoint and no doctrine resident in the soul. There is also the refusal of the faith rest technique as a part of negative volition. Inconsistent negative volition refers to a person who takes in doctrine only when he is under pressure. He is an occasional hearer of the word. This is the inconsistency that leads to backsliding or reversionism. King Saul wanted to use God when he was in a jam, but God wouldn't answer him. So Saul went to the witch of Endor, and held a séance, and still there was silence, until Samuel came on the scene.

In 1SA 28:1, the Philistines gathered their army for war to fight against Israel. In 1SA 28:5-6, *When Saul saw the camp of the Philistines, he was afraid and his heart trembled greatly. When Saul inquired of the Lord, the Lord did not answer him, either by dreams or by Urim [lights on the Ephod or the breastplate of the high priest] or by prophets.* The Urim was a breastplate on the shoulders of the high priest which had stones that would light up when you were seeking Divine guidance. The Thummin had a checkerboard with 12 squares, one for every tribe of Israel. Urim means lights, and one light would mean no and the other says yes, and the tribe that was to perform the assignment would light up. There are some interesting facts about this passage. One is that the real breastplate or the checkerboard (the Urim and Thummin) is with David. The high priest is the one who carried it. Saul had executed 85 priests (1SA 22:18), and the Ephod (breastplate) went with the one priest who escaped who was Abiathar (1SA 22:22). Saul had made a substitute ephod, but it didn't work. You have to have the real thing, the high priest and the breastplate, and Saul had neither. Saul's negative volition toward doctrine, and his wrong decisions are now catching up with him. Saul couldn't get any answers from God. He had a fake ephod, and a fake high priest. When the backslider or the reversionist needs doctrine the most, he has it is the least. Divine answers and guidance in times of pressure come to those believers who have doctrine stored in their souls. The reversionist will seek miracles, signs and wonders in time of pressure, instead of applying doctrine. A pastor cannot help a reversionist, they must help themselves, and that is done by getting positive towards Bible doctrine. These people had the same chance for doctrine that you had, you took it in faithfully, they did not!

The first sign of a reversionist is their refusal to listen to the word of God. Only believers with doctrine can survive the heartaches, pressures, catastrophes of life. God has designed the believer to operate and function under Bible doctrine and nothing else. Saul lacked the spiritual information to solve the problem. Saul lost the spiritual battle long before he lost the physical or natural battle. In 1SA 28:7 notice Saul's solution, *Then Saul said to his servants [his staff - and this is a command], "Seek for me a woman who is a medium, that I may go to her and inquire of her."* Saul's real objective is to raise his teacher Samuel from paradise. Saul is now accepting necromancy which is the practice of supposedly communicating with the spirits of the dead in order to predict the future. Saul has been taught that necromancy is wrong, he knows it well. He is in the last stages of reversionism, which is hardness of the heart, and blackout of the soul which ends in physical death. Saul knew the warning, LEV 19:31

*"Do not turn to mediums or spiritists; do not seek them out to be defiled by them. I am the Lord your God."* This is a warning for today as well, don't dabble in the occult or traffic with mediums; you'll pollute your souls. You are not to seek information about problems or anything from people who are involved in astrology. To do so is to have contact with demons, and getting your information from Satan which is false information. The believer who has negative volition toward doctrine will end up with the vacuum of the soul opening up and drawing in what 1TI 4:1 calls doctrine from demons. Then demon influence (not demon possession) results. The black-out of the soul plus the hardness of the heart causes the believer not to understand doctrine they have previously understood. As a reversionist they will revert to superstition and human viewpoint.

Saul is now relying on human viewpoint. If Saul had been learning Bible doctrine he would have known the book of Judges and how Gideon handled this same problem. The principle is that you never know when you are studying the word of God, what doctrine you are going to need. There comes a time when some of the seemingly insignificant principles suddenly become extremely important. David warned Solomon about this principle and Solomon passed it along to us (PRO 5:11-12). PRO 5:13 *"And I have not listened to the voice of my teachers, Nor inclined my ear to my instructors!"* Saul is backsliding and seeking counsel. Saul had not been thinking about the Lord for a long time, and now he is in a jam and says "God help me," and the Lord doesn't answer.

*1SA 28:7 Then Saul said to his servants, "Seek for me a woman who is a medium, that I may go to her and inquire of her." And his servants said to him, "Behold, there is a woman who is a medium at Endor."*

Endor was a town filled with numerous caves, and apparently this is where many of the demon possessed crowd were hanging out. Saul had gotten rid of all the wizards and witches, but now he is trying to hook up with one. It's interesting that Saul was the king who had prohibited the practice of divination and necromancy. What has happened to Saul in reversionism explains why many believers begin with doctrine, as Saul did, but then they give lip service to Bible doctrine and reversionism always changes these people. Remember, life is something that continually changes, no one stands still. No believer ever backslides, without destroying himself and everyone connected with him.

1SA 28:8 *Then Saul disguised himself by putting on other clothes, and went, he and two men with him, remember Saul is afraid and fear is what motivates him. Never forget that some of the most dangerous people in the world are cowards. In dangerous situations, cowards are unpredictable. Before we get to the witch of Endor and get into that wild séance, let's look at some principles: 1) Saul's military is weak and limited because Saul has been so busy with personal vengeance, chasing David, that he has neglected the military training of his nation. 2) Saul is a believer, a reversionistic believer. How would you like to be under his command? Saul should be had been listening to doctrine, instead he is creeping from rock to rock, so as not to be seen, going to a séance. 3) It isn't courage that is needed, it is good training and discipline. You don't need hero's, you need good soldiers. Brains, discipline, and recognition of authority equals victory. 4) The Jewish army no longer has discipline. It no longer has motivation or patriotism because of terrible leadership. The Lord will not answer and guide the reversionist. 5) Saul is now under the sin unto death and Divine discipline. When a leader is under Divine discipline or the sin unto death, all of those he leads die with him. 6) Saul is desperate, confused, and filled with human viewpoint. He is under demon influence, he has blackout of the soul, and he has hardness of the heart. Saul, like many of us, should have understood the faith rest life and the different rationales which we have noted. When you do you can say with Zephaniah, ZEP 3:15 *"The king of Israel, the Lord, is in your midst; you will fear disaster no more."* 1SA 28:8 *Then Saul disguised himself by putting on other clothes, and went, he and two men with him, and they came to the woman by night; and he said, "Conjure up for me, please, and bring up for me whom I shall name to you."* In desperation Saul turns to good manners in using people. The Hebrew verb for *conjure up* is *qacam**

meaning to contact the dead. Saul thought that the demon could go down to Hades and bring up Samuel.

Everyone will face at least one major crisis in their life. However, not until God has given you the time to learn the doctrine to face that crisis (1CO 10:13). God will never let you down; He'll never let you be pushed past your limit. God brings every believer to the place where if he doesn't have doctrine he has had it. All the counseling in the world isn't going to change that. You are not here to lean on anyone, you are here to become spiritually self sustaining. You are to walk by means of the Spirit (GAL 4:16). Notice you are to walk not hobble.

Back in our passage we see that the witch of Endor is skeptical, she suspects a trap. This is how witches and mediums were often caught by the request of séances. Saul is going to have his request filled, much to the surprise of both the witch and the demon. They are going to get the shock of their lives. 1SA 28:9 *But the woman said to him, "Behold, you know what Saul has done, how he has cut off those who are mediums and spiritists from the land. Why are you then laying a snare for my life to bring about my death?"* In verse 7 we saw that this woman was demon possessed, but the demon doesn't tell her that's its king Saul. If you are a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ, you are a member of the Royal family of God. In 1JO 4:4, *greater is He who is in you than he who is in the world.* I say that because there are many lies out there about demons. People give demons too much credit. Demons are simply fallen angels with a fallen nature, and they are not always that smart. Notice that the demon inside this woman cannot telegraph to the woman that it is Saul under the disguise. There are some demons that are related to violence and others are related to leadership and rulership. Demons have been in control of rulers of nations (EZE 21:21; DAN 10:13; 2KI 21:1-17). There are some that indwell animals (MAR 5:11-12). Demons (like humans) are not created equal and possess different authority (EPH 6:12). Some demons are related to violence (MAT 8:28). They cause abnormal behavior such as Screaming and crying (MAR 5:5), suicide (MAR 5:5), foaming at the mouth (MAR 9:20). These are the not so smart demons. Then we have the intelligent demons who cause the rise of certain world leaders (2TH 2:9; REV 16:13-14). Demons who cause wars (REV 20:8). So notice while the woman is demon possessed she gives overt recognition to the laws of the land and government. Demon possessed people can obey the law, and operate under the laws of establishment. Satan can have his intelligent demons rule, or his dummy demons freak out. Satan also has something else: his trump cards are the reversionistic believers. As long as Satan has enough trumps, he keeps down demon possession. People ask *"why aren't there many people having demons cast out of them?"* The answer is because Satan has enough believers on his side without needing to possess. Satan keeps his troops hidden for a surprise attack, hidden behind sweet, kind, moral individuals who operate under the laws of divine establishment (2CO 11:3-15). This is the reason why we don't see a lot of people rolling in the aisles, foaming at the mouth, splitting out pea soup. We see demon possession manifested by respectability.

Negative volition also refers to the believer who takes in doctrine until he reaches maturity, but then reacts to disillusion, boredom, discouragement, self-pity, frustration, or some other reactor factors in his soul, which becomes an obsession. This is what happened to Saul. Saul's reactor factor in his life was his jealousy of David. From that he moved into a frantic search for happiness by trying to destroy and discredit David in vengeance. He wound up under reverse process reversionism and finally the sin unto death. Negative emotionalism describes the believer who becomes negative to doctrine. In his emotional revolt, he uses his emotion as the criterion or the standard for everything. Feeling becomes the criteria. If he feels good, everything is all right. If he feels bad, there is something wrong. Therefore, he is a slave to his health, to his emotion, and to everything that has to do with stimuli or lack of stimuli. Whenever demonism or any related subject is discussed unusual things often happen. It's usually more difficult for people to concentrate when we talk about the kingdom of darkness. We must recognize that Satan administers his authority by means of a great invisible host of fallen angels

known as demons. As believers in the Lord Jesus Christ we are the direct enemies of Satan and his fallen angels. In REV 12:4, Satan convinced one-third of the angels in heaven with him and his rebellion. Don't get shocked when the ministry loses some of its members, God lost more than one-third of His. In our passage we will see how demons have been in constant contact with the human race. Ever since the fall, the great unseen forces belonging to Satan rallied together to a very strong fighting force. From that time until the present, demonism is a reality on this earth. Many of the good-deed programs and movements are directly related to demonism. It's interesting to note that in the cases where the demon controls the woman, abnormal behavior is very limited and minor. It is when a demon possesses a man that some obvious, evil comes into the picture. Ever since Gen 6, when demons had sexual intercourse with the women on the earth, certain fallen angels have been placed in a prison as we have studied (2PE 2:4; Jude 6). Today it is impossible for any angelic creature to have sexual relations with a woman. Instead the demons can only control the body or the soul of the members of the human race. Demon influence and or demon possession is now the order of the day. However, free will involvement is the only way demons can operate. Demon possession is definitely a part of our study of the witch of Endor. A demon possessed person is not always someone who has an abnormal behavior. Sometimes it could be someone very beautiful and charming or very strong and handsome. That is the kind of demon possession we face in this chapter.

The witch of Endor lived a long time ago when human sacrifices was offered up to idols. An idol is nothing but a false image backed by a demon. They would teach that the virgin's soul would possess a body in the after-world to have sex with gods, even children were sacrificed because the gods were abnormal and wanted sex with children. Only a weirdo would follow such a weird god. Whether we are talking about the witch of Endor, a very calm and law abiding beautiful woman, or abnormal behavior, there are various forms of demon activity. Demon possession does not always mean abnormal behavior. The witch of Endor is different than most of our demon-possessed concepts. God ordained capital punishment for anyone who was demon possessed in Israel (LEV 20:27). Demon's are also the gods of many nations (PSA 96:5). Nations that follow Buddha, Mohammed, Krishna are really following demons. Demonism is also the source of murder. Many murders are accomplished under demon possession. Satan has the power of death which he has delegated to demons when permitted to do so, this is taught in 1JO 3:8; HEB 2:14-15. Satan was also given the opportunity of executing the sin unto death to a born-again believer in Corinth (1CO 5:5). Remember, his spirit was saved though his body was not. So, Satan is a killer and he has delegated this authority to demons. Satan and his demons are also a source of disease. We have the thorn in the flesh, 2CO 12:7, the skin cancer that came to Job in JOB 2:6-8. many other diseases like deafness, dumbness, and blindness. Those are just some of the concepts of demonism.

In our passage we are dealing with a woman who is called the witch of Endor. A witch simply means a medium and a medium means someone who has a demon. It is never possible for anyone to contact the dead, and there is not a glass sea where loved ones can see you. In this passage we are going to see Saul sitting around a table waiting for the witch of Endor to do her thing, but instead she stands up and screams. She was not a hysterical woman, she screams because something happened that never happened before at a séance. This time, the dead really came back from the dead. She freaks out and meanwhile Saul thinks the whole thing is routine. God in his great sense of humor actually brings Samuel back. In fact, at the end of this chapter the witch of Endor ends up being the woman of Endor. In the battle of Giboea, which was about to take place, Saul will be outsmarted and out-thought by King Achish. There is not a reason in the world why an unbeliever should ever out-smart a believer but Saul is like many believers today totally ignorant of God's word and looking for the supernatural He once had the Spirit of God upon him mightily. 1SA 11:6 He was also very humble (1SA 9:21). The Lord anointed him king over Israel in 1SA 15:17, and Saul was the chosen one of the Lord. However, here Saul, a believer will be defeated by an unbeliever. Saul is a passive, slothful, backslider who has

neglected the word of the Lord. In fact look at 1CH 10:13-14 and let's look at why Saul died. *So Saul died for his trespass which he committed against the Lord, because of the word of the Lord which he did not keep; and also because he asked counsel of a medium, making inquiry of it, and did not inquire of the Lord. Therefore He killed him, and turned the kingdom to David the son of Jesse.* This is a picture of what happens when God's people go to the world for help. When a believer goes negative towards Bible doctrine, he ends up with hardness of the heart and backslide. At this time two things can happen: He can stay a reversionist until he dies the sin unto death, or he can rebound and recover as David did.

This should be taken very seriously as far as you are concerned since this is a solemn warning. The next time you find yourself getting indifferent toward the word of God you remember this principle because you have a choice of going one of two ways: You can reap what you sow or you can reap what God sows. You cannot afford to neglect the word of God even for a moment. Saul was a very honest and noble man when he started his reign, but reversionism turned him into a monster. Jealousy drove Saul crazy.

Samuel had been a leader of Israel all his life. He had been the communicator of Bible doctrine. The priests would communicate the written word and Samuel and the prophets would communicate the spoken word through revelation. Samuel was a prophet and a priest. Death meant to Samuel that his work was finished, he had succeeded and fulfilled his responsibilities that were unto the Lord. Death meant for him rest and relaxation. God never designed dying to be horrible or frightening for the believer in the Lord Jesus Christ. His plan calls for each member of the royal family to have a wonderful death. Something to be anticipated as the final crown of life. Death is designed to be the sweetest and tastiest part of living.

*1SA 28:9-10, But the woman said to him, "Behold, you know what Saul has done, how he has cut off those who are mediums and spiritists from the land. Why are you then laying a snare for my life to bring about my death?" And Saul vowed to her by the Lord, saying, "As the Lord lives, there shall no punishment come upon you for this thing."*

Here is a man about to die the sin unto death and he is making vows to the Lord.

*1SA 28:11-25, Then the woman said, "Whom shall I bring up for you?" And he said, "Bring up Samuel for me." When the woman saw Samuel, she cried out with a loud voice; and the woman spoke to Saul, saying, "Why have you deceived me? For you are Saul." And the king said to her, "Do not be afraid; but what do you see?" And the woman said to Saul, "I see a divine being coming up out of the earth." And he said to her, "What is his form?" And she said, "An old man is coming up, and he is wrapped with a robe." And Saul knew that it was Samuel, and he bowed with his face to the ground and did homage. Then Samuel said to Saul, "Why have you disturbed me by bringing me up?" And Saul answered, "I am greatly distressed; for the Philistines are waging war against me, and God has departed from me and answers me no more, either through prophets or by dreams; therefore I have called you, that you may make known to me what I should do." And Samuel said, "Why then do you ask me, since the Lord has departed from you and has become your adversary? And the Lord has done accordingly as He spoke through me; for the Lord has torn the kingdom out of your hand and given it to your neighbor, to David. As you did not obey the Lord and did not execute His fierce wrath on Amalek, so the Lord has done this thing to you this day. Moreover the Lord will also give over Israel along with you into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons will be with me. Indeed the Lord will give over the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines!" Then Saul immediately fell full length upon the ground and was very afraid because of the words of Samuel; also there was no strength in him, for he had eaten no food all day and all night. And the woman came to Saul and saw that he was terrified, and said to him, "Behold, your maidservant has obeyed you, and I have taken my life in my hand, and have listened to your words which you spoke to me. So now also, please listen to the voice of your maidservant, and let me set a piece of bread before you that you may eat and have strength*

*when you go on your way." But he refused and said, "I will not eat." However, his servants together with the woman urged him, and he listened to them. So he arose from the ground and sat on the bed. And the woman had a fattened calf in the house, and she quickly slaughtered it; and she took flour, kneaded it, and baked unleavened bread from it. And she brought it before Saul and his servants, and they ate. Then they arose and went away that night."*

## THE DOCTRINE OF NEGATIVE VOLITION. PART 2.

05/18/08

Let's get the context once again; 1SA 28:5-10, *When Saul saw the camp of the Philistines, he was afraid and his heart trembled greatly. When Saul inquired of the Lord, the Lord did not answer him, either by dreams or by Urim or by prophets. Then Saul said to his servants, "Seek for me a woman who is a medium, that I may go to her and inquire of her." And his servants said to him, "Behold, there is a woman who is a medium at Endor." Then Saul disguised himself by putting on other clothes, and went, he and two men with him, and they came to the woman by night; and he said, "Conjure up for me, please, and bring up for me whom I shall name to you." But the woman said to him, "Behold, you know what Saul has done, how he has cut off those who are mediums and spiritists from the land. Why are you then laying a snare for my life to bring about my death?" And Saul vowed to her by the Lord, saying, "As the Lord lives, there shall no punishment come upon you for this thing."* Here is a man about to die the sin unto death using the Lord. He used his staff to find the witch, chase David, he used the Lord's name to get to the woman, and uses the woman to get what he wants. Reversionists always use others. Many individuals use the name of the Lord for their own secret goals and ambitions. Just because someone says to you it's the Lord's will, it doesn't mean that what they are saying is true or part of the plan of God.

In verse 10, Saul reveals the impossibility of reversionists to be stable. Saul says, *"As the Lord lives."* This is a violation of the third commandment, EXO 20:7 *"You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain, for the Lord will not leave him unpunished who takes His name in vain."* Saul is using the Lord's name in vain by using God to get his way. It could mean to use the Lord to sponsor your own projects or to gain a false goal. Many use the Lord and His name to cover for a lie, by using the phrase "I swear to God" or "before God." Pastors use the Lord's name to bully their congregation, thereby destroying the function of their privacy.

Let's note some principles: 1) This woman is demon possessed, and for a person to be demon possessed they must surrender their body to demons. 2) You cannot effectively witness to a demon possessed person until the demon is removed. 3) The witch of Endor believes the solemn promise of Saul. 4) The promise of Saul is no greater than the character of Saul. Saul is unstable, jealous, and unreliable. When you are dealing with a carnal believer you can't trust them. They live a lie so they speak a lie.

*1SA 28:11 Then the woman said, "Whom shall I bring up for you?" And he said, "Bring up Samuel for me."*

Now we see the woman living in her lie. She cannot bring someone up for the dead and no one knows that better than her. We have two liars and they both deserve each other. So we have two people deceiving each other. Where demon possession is involved, fakery is the order of the day. Demons have one purpose, and that is to distract the unbeliever from the Gospel, and the believer from Bible doctrine.

Either Saul was asleep in the congregation when Samuel taught about Gideon or absent altogether. In either case, it's a sign of negative volition towards doctrine. As a result, when he needed doctrine the most he didn't have it. The very teachings about Gideon were the very teachings Saul needed for guidance and victory. Saul is standing on the very spot where the story took place. Saul could have thought about how Gideon and 300 men went up against 135,000 Arabs. Remember 2CO 10:3 says, *For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh.* We use our powerful tools from God for smashing warped philosophies, tearing down barriers erected against the truth of God. If Saul had simply remembered the history or the doctrine pertaining to Gideon he would have been victorious.

The witch of Endor knows that she cannot bring anyone back from the dead. Only God's sovereignty can do that. So here is Saul living in a lie, looking for the supernatural experience. Being in reversionism he is about to miss one of the funniest things that ever happened at a séance. The only one that is going to appear calm is Saul because he doesn't realize what is happening.

*1SA 28:12 When the woman saw Samuel, she cried out with a loud voice; and the woman spoke to Saul, saying, "Why have you deceived me? For you are Saul."*

The demon is immobilized, the woman is in shock, and God in His grace, and His sense of humor is answering the last request of King Saul. The demon is now forced out of the woman, she is terrified. She will come out of the shock and be a free unbeliever, something she is not at this point. The king of Israel, Saul, has been frightened all day is not frightened at all. Saul has forgotten his fear, he is totally fascinated by what's going on, it all seems routine to him. Once the demon loses the control of the woman's vocal cords he has lost the control of the séance. The dead has appeared, and remember that only God can bring people back from the dead. God has done so on several occasions, sometimes back in a physical body, sometimes back to give a message. In fact, now that the canon of scripture is completed and we are living in the age of the Royal Family of God, there will be no contact from the dead. However, this does not keep the eggastromuthos demons from finding new homes and therefore, necromancy is still practiced today.

The woman is now angry, and wants an explanation. She specialized in deceiving others, now she is upset that she is being deceived. When a person becomes upset and hysterical their first reaction is to blame others. It is obvious she is no longer in a trance, and it is implied that she is no longer possessed by the demon. Once the demon is gone the woman recognizes that it is Saul. The witch has now penetrated through the disguise of Saul, and he was hard to disguise because he was about 7 feet tall. With the demon gone, the woman recovers her perceptive abilities.

*1SA 28:13 And the king said to her, "Do not be afraid; but what do you see?" And the woman said to Saul, "I see a divine being coming up out of the earth."*

Saul is not aware of the fact that this séance has been interrupted by God. The woman has never seen anything like this before, she logically comes up with the conclusion that it must be God because it is greater than the powers of evil, so at least her logic is going in the right direction. Doctrines of demons, and demon influence in a believer's life will cause the believer to become irrational and illogical. The woman is now thinking. Saul is now thinking. The demon is gone and Satan and all the forces of evil are held back. When God interrupts anything in life it gives those involved the chance to think. Catastrophe is a means to awaken believers out of their spiritual sleep. It gives them the ability and freedom to think, and the ability to learn from Divine viewpoint. (AMO 3:6-7; PRO 16:4; ISA 45:5-7). It is imperative that God interrupts our lives from time to time to wake us up. God the Son does it in REV 3:20 by knocking at the door of our souls. This means that if our life is going to be free from dramatic Divine interruptions, we must stick with Bible doctrine. Nothing is more important for the believer than the inhale of doctrine daily. Otherwise your life will be a series of dramatic interruptions. One thing that the believer minus doctrine is not prepared for, it is sudden disaster.

The woman sees Samuel and she will describe what she sees, and Saul will be able to identify Samuel from her description. Remember that communication with the dead is impossible. The souls and spirits of those who are dead cannot communicate with the living or return from the dead (2SA 12:22-23, LUK 16:27-31). The only exception is the one we are studying. 1SA 28:14 *And she said, "An old man is coming up, and he is wrapped with a robe."* And Saul knew that it was Samuel, and he bowed with his face to the ground and did homage. Notice she doesn't say it is God anymore, she says it is an old man. Saul finally recognizes the authority of Samuel, if he had recognized it in the past and listened to his teaching, he wouldn't be on the road to death. He would have had a wonderful life free from jealousy, vindictiveness and free from implacability. Remember that authority is a creation of God (ROM 13:1-2). Many people can take responsibility for their own decisions and their personal life,



but can never handle having responsibility for others. Authority involves a person who is willing to take responsibility for the lives of others. Most people think of authority in terms of arrogance, the idea of telling others what to do. This is not authority, it is only a form of arrogance. Authority demands moral courage as well as honesty, integrity, and fairness. The honor code demands that we have spiritual authority just as we have authority in the government, business and in all area's of life. However, weak people resent authority. Your attitude toward authority is an index of your character. All of us live under a system of authority, this is especially true in the spiritual realm. The only issue between you and your pastor is whether you are learning doctrine from him or not. His personality is not the issue. You can't read the Bible on your own and become an expert. This is why God gave gifts unto men called the pastor-teacher, so that you could be equipped for the Royal Family. ACT 20:28 teaches that the Holy Spirit assigns a certain pastor to a certain congregation. 1PE 5:3 teaches that there are certain believers who are allotted or assigned to a certain pastor. The communication of doctrine always includes the authority principle. Therefore, as a part of your positive volition toward doctrine, as opposed to negative volition, you need to recognize the principle of spiritual authority in the pastor-teacher. As well as the pastor-teacher needing to recognize his authority over the flock. The pastor is called "your messenger" just as Epaphroditus was called as the right pastor teacher to the Philippians in PHI 2:25. The pastor is given to you from God on "your behalf" just as Epaphras, was as the right pastor teacher of Colosse in COL 1:17. There are many passages that teach that certain believers are called to a certain pastor. The fact that most believers reject this principle is just another stamp of negative volition upon their soul. Christian freedom is like any other kind of freedom, it is always a part of a structure which includes not only the freedom, but privacy, property and authority. Without police and law, you would have chaos. Divine authority is clearly represented in the scripture. The authority of the pastor-teacher is related to his spiritual gift, his Bible teaching, and his policy based on the scriptures. The purpose of his gift is the proper communication and teaching of doctrine, and the protection of the privacy of the congregation. He is responsible to see that the policy of the church is being followed. Having absolute authority does not mean having absolute control. Authority is to be delegated. Absolute authority often means taking responsibility for things which are not your fault. It is not the function of the pastor to act as a referee in squabbles, and that includes marital problems. His job is to insure the privacy, the freedom and the function of the Royal Family honor code in the congregation. The freedom that you have from establishment, plus the freedom you have from being a Royal Priest means that you have equal privilege and equal opportunity to grow in the presence of all the saints. Paul said in EPH 3:18 *That you may be able to comprehend in the presence of all the saints what is the breath and length and height and depth*, it is authority that protects your freedom to grow.

Freedom plus equal privilege and equal opportunity equals inequality. With freedom, you can say no to doctrine, and you can go down into apostasy, or you can say yes to doctrine and you advance toward maturity. Whatever you choose to do, when freedom is present, freedom creates inequality. We are to love each other with impersonal love so that each one of us can use his freedom of the priesthood and his opportunity to create the inequalities in time which are transferred to inequalities in heaven. In heaven some will have great rewards and blessing in their resurrection body, and some will have a resurrection body without rewards. Some will have those decorations which glorify God forever and some will not. However, remember that no one will have any regrets in heaven. A pastors job is to communicate Bible doctrine to those who are positive. Therefore the Royal Family honor code demands authority orientation in your own spiritual life.

*1SA 28:11-19, Then the woman said, "Whom shall I bring up for you?" And he said, "Bring up Samuel for me." When the woman saw Samuel, she cried out with a loud voice; and the woman spoke to Saul, saying, "Why have you deceived me? For you are Saul." And the king said to her, "Do not be afraid; but what do you see?" And the woman said to Saul, "I see a divine being coming up*

*out of the earth." And he said to her, "What is his form?" And she said, "An old man is coming up, and he is wrapped with a robe." And Saul knew that it was Samuel, and he bowed with his face to the ground and did homage. Then Samuel said to Saul, "Why have you disturbed me by bringing me up?" And Saul answered, "I am greatly distressed; for the Philistines are waging war against me, and God has departed from me and answers me no more, either through prophets or by dreams; therefore I have called you, that you may make known to me what I should do." And Samuel said, "Why then do you ask me, since the Lord has departed from you and has become your adversary? And the Lord has done accordingly as He spoke through me; for the Lord has torn the kingdom out of your hand and given it to your neighbor, to David. As you did not obey the Lord and did not execute His fierce wrath on Amalek, so the Lord has done this thing to you this day. Moreover the Lord will also give over Israel along with you into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons will be with me. Indeed the Lord will give over the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines!"*

Samuel was too happy about Saul disturbing him especially since the message that he is going to give has previously been given on many other occasions. However, like so many in the congregation, he simply do not listen, and he just didn't believe it until it happens. Saul is a typical reversionist who has negative volition toward doctrine. He demands the attention of others without consideration. When discipline becomes intensified for the believer who has negative volition toward doctrine, he becomes very selfish and very unpleasant to be around. Life demands struggle, and those who have everything given to them usually become lazy, selfish, and insensitive to the real values of life. The very striving and hard work that we constantly try to avoid is the major building block in the person we are today. The believer who has negative volition toward doctrine also lacks compassion and love for others. He does not share your enthusiasms, he has no capacity for love or friendship. The cure for the believer who has negative volition toward doctrine is three-fold: First, 1JO 1:9 (homologeo). Second, Repent (metanoia), third, EPH 4:23 (soul-breathing). For the believer who has negative volition toward doctrine, repentance and change of mind requires a consistent intake of Bible doctrine, setting aside of the details of life, and a crash diet of Bible doctrine. If Saul had only listened to his Bible teacher, Samuel, he wouldn't be in the jam that he was in. That's why it is important to listen to doctrinal teaching now, not in the future.

In 1SA 28:15 Saul reveals why he is distressed, *"for the Philistines are waging war against me, and God has departed from me and answers me no more, either through prophets or by dreams; therefore I have called you, that you may make known to me what I should do."* This is pressure that Saul manufactured from his poor attitude toward doctrine. Saul is also blasphemous, the Lord hasn't departed from Saul, rather Saul has departed from the Lord. Saul is subtly saying, it's all God's fault. The Lord had stood at the door and knocked for a long time. However, Saul did not open the door to let doctrine, the mind of Christ in. Notice, the inconsistently and instability of Saul as he contradicts himself. If God had deserted Saul and would not answer him by prophets, why is he expecting answers from Samuel who was a prophet? All of a sudden, Saul wants teaching. A believer who has negative volition toward doctrine can cope with pressure. Saul has had 18 years of negative volition and it has all caught up to him.

1SA 28:16 *And Samuel said, "Why then do you ask me, since the Lord has departed from you and has become your adversary?"* Saul's main problem is negative volition toward doctrine, and therefore he has become an enemy of God. Reversionism is not the same as carnality. Carnality is the believer who gets out of fellowship, and rebounds, but is positive toward doctrine. Whereas the believer who has negative volition toward doctrine, lives a lifestyle of reversionism.

There are different stages of negative volition toward doctrine. Lack of interest toward doctrine, then reaction toward doctrine or the communicator. Then there is mental attitude sins which includes arrogance. There is a lifestyle of discouragement, boredom, self-pity, loneliness,

frustration, and insecurity. The killer is arrogance and rejection of spiritual authority. The believer who has negative volition toward doctrine lives in the frantic search for happiness. They try to have some fun in life, or some pleasure, searching for happiness anywhere and everywhere. But, when they lie in bed at night, if they are honest with themselves, they know that they are on a dead end street, and everything is simply "vanity of vanities." Then there is the emotional revolt of the soul. This is when the emotions become the ruler of the soul. The next stage of reversionism is bondage to the details of life, which means you are too busy for Bible teaching. In this stage, the believer allows the details of life to destroy his positive volition. The next stage is when the vacuum opens up and draws in doctrines of demons. The soul becomes filled with darkness and you develop hardness of the heart.

There comes a time in the life of every believer when he will face a crisis, a disaster, a set of adverse circumstances which demand something greater than what he has from human resources. Saul was not prepared for this disaster because he was minus Bible doctrine. He had every opportunity to listen to the teaching of the word of God and he rejected his communicator who was Samuel. God gave Saul 15 years to repent and change his mind but he refused to do so. Samuel repeated the same message he had given 15 years ago to King Saul. 1SA 28:18-19, *"As you did not obey the Lord and did not execute His fierce wrath on Amalek, so the Lord has done this thing to you this day. Moreover the Lord will also give over Israel along with you into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons will be with me. Indeed the Lord will give over the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines!"* This is the sin unto death being administered to Saul and his army. Others are going to suffer because of their relationship to him. In 1SA 28:20 we have come to the reaction of King Saul, *Then Saul immediately fell full length upon the ground and was very afraid because of the words of Samuel; also there was no strength in him, for he had eaten no food all day and all night.* When he heard how he was going to die all 7 feet of him fell straight down to the ground. Perhaps that is why David said in 2SA 1:19 *"Your beauty, O Israel, is slain on your high places! How have the mighty fallen!"*

# NO MATTER SIGHT SAYS, THE PROMISES OF GOD WILL NEVER FAIL.

05/25/08

*ROM 9:4-5, "Who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption and as sons and the glory [that is the Shekinah glory], and the covenants [or] the unconditional covenants, and the deposit of the law, and the temple service [which means the service of God in the temples] and the promises, From whom [the Jews or Israelites] are the fathers, [the regenerate ancestors, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob], in fact, from whom is The Christ, the One who came in the flesh, the One who is God, ruler over all, extolled, praised, eulogized forever, Amen."*

Concerning this passage, we have studied the spiritual heritage of Israel. We have seen how the Jews rejected or distorted the unconditional covenants, the gift of the Mosaic Law, the Sabbath, and the Deity of The Lord Jesus Christ. Amazingly, they rejected the Shekinah glory that was there living right before their eyes. They saw The Lord Jesus Christ face to face, heard His message, and saw His miracles. They had the whole picture, and still they had that same negative volition they had in the Old Testament. The message behind that is that you have to have your own self-determination to fulfill such passages as JER 29:13 "And you will seek Me and find {Me,} when you search for Me with all your heart."

In HEB 11:6 that *the Lord is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.*

In MAR 12:30 we are to be those who "love the Lord their God with all their heart, and with all their soul, and with all their mind, and with all their strength."

The Jews ignored their entire spiritual heritage, and the same thing is true today. In the Church-age, in spite of all that God has done, and how He has revealed the mystery doctrine of the Church-age, the average believer knows nothing about it.

*ROM 9:6 "But it is not as though the word of God has failed. For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel;"*

This verse begins with the phrase *hoion de hoti*, translated *however, this is not to imply*. Then we have the phrase *logos tou theou*, which is translated *the word of God*. So ROM 9:6 begins, "However, this is not to imply as though the word of God has failed." The principle behind this is very important. The entire Old Testament is the spiritual heritage of Israel. It contains many of the unconditional covenants, the promises to Israel regarding the future of that race, and that nation. The entire Old Testament, when put together properly, adds up to something very wonderful for Israel, and that is that Israel has a future, something that is great in time; something that exceeds greatness in eternity. It spells out a nation forever, a people of God forever, a people under a theocracy forever, that includes both the Millennial reign of Christ and all of eternity.

Throughout human history, and even before, Satan has opposed the purpose and the plan of God. Here is the original sin committed long before man sinned, it is what Satan said in ISA 14:13 "I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God, And I will sit on the mount of assembly in the recesses of the north." The *stars of God* refers to the angels (JOB 38:7; JUD 1:13; REV 12:3-4), *sitting on the mount of the assembly in the recesses of the north* refers to rulership over the entire earth. Satan continues in ISA 14:14 "I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High." Clouds are used to represent the Divine presence of God or His glory (EXO 16:10; PSA 104:3). Satan wants the glory which belongs to God alone. Satan, as the god of this age, has carried on his work to try and defeat the purpose and the plan of God, and therefore Satan is anti-Semitic and anti-Christian. When The Lord Jesus Christ, a Jew, rules *all the nations with a rod of iron*; this will be the Millennial age, an age when Divine righteousness is expressed to mankind as never before. The

Millennial age will also be God's final test toward fallen humanity under the most ideal circumstances and perfect environment. All outward sources of temptation must be removed so that man will demonstrate what he is apart from satanic influence; the result is that man is totally corrupt regardless of environment. Therefore, Satan is removed or bound and mankind is placed in a fantastic environment for 1,000 years. Millennialism is the teaching that there will be a period of 1,000 years when The Lord Jesus Christ will rule this earth as king. This age will see the fulfillment of all the covenants that God made with Israel. It is also evident that there can be no perfect environment apart from the personal manifestation of The Lord Jesus Christ. The whole age depends on His return to the earth as promised.

Because of His presence the curse is abolished, death is overcome, the evils pertaining to fallen man and fallen nature are removed, and great blessings are obtained. Everything will be controlled by The Lord Jesus Christ. During the Millennium all nations come before the Lord and worship Him as God (PSA 86:9; ZEC 14:16-19).

*DAN 7:24-27, "As for the ten horns, out of this kingdom ten kings will arise; and another will arise after them, and he will be different from the previous ones and will subdue three kings. And he will speak out against the Most High and wear down the saints of the Highest One, and he will intend to make alterations in times and in law; and they will be given into his hand for a time, times, and half a time. But the court will sit {for judgment,} and his dominion will be taken away, annihilated and destroyed forever. Then the sovereignty, the dominion, and the greatness of {all} the kingdoms under the whole heaven will be given to the people of the saints of the Highest One; His kingdom {will be} an everlasting kingdom, and all the dominions will serve and obey Him."*

The phrase "*greatness of all the kingdoms*" will characterize the Millennial age:

1. 1) There will be world peace. National and individual peace will be the fruit of the Messiah's reign (ISA 2:4; ISA 11:6-9; ISA 60:18; ISA 61:7).
2. It will be a fantastic time of inner happiness and joy (ISA 9:3-4, JER 30:18-19, ZEP 3:14-17).
3. The kingdom will be characterized by glory (ISA 24:3; ISA 4:2; ISA 60:1-9).
4. It will be a kingdom manifested by Holiness (ISA 1:26-27; JER 31:23).
5. The King will personally minister to every need so that there will be the fullness of comfort (ISA 12:1-2; JER 31:23-25; ZEC 9:11-12).
6. There will be the administration of perfect justice (ISA 9:7; JER 23:5; JER 31:29-30).
7. There will be the most fantastic teaching ministry of God the Holy Spirit (ISA 11:1-2; ISA 41:19-20; HAB 2:14).
8. There will be direct instruction from The Lord Jesus Christ as the King of kings (ISA 29:17-24; ISA 3:14-15; MIC 4:2).
9. The original curse placed upon creation in GEN 2:17-19 will be removed. There will be abundant productivity to the earth, even the animal creation will be changed, ISA 11:6-9; ISA 35:9; ISA 65:25.
10. Sickness will be removed. The ministry of the King as the healer will be seen throughout the Millennium so that sickness and even death will be removed, the exception being *death* in dealing with criminal sin or capital punishment (ISA 33:24; JER 30:17; EZE 34:16).
11. All of the deformed are healed as well, if they were deformed at the time of the second advent they will experience a total healing (ISA 29:17-19; JER 31:8; MIC 4:6-7).
12. There will also be a supernatural work of preservation in the Millennial age through the King (ISA 41:8-14; EZE 34:27; JOE 3:16-17).
13. There will be no social, political, or religious oppression (ISA 14:3-6; ISA 42:6-7; ZEC 9:11-12).
14. There will not be the tragedies of mental illness or of infant deaths (ISA 65:20).

15. The earth's population will soar and there will be sex. Children will be born to the believers who began the Millennium and will have a sin nature and therefore need salvation (JER 30:20; JER 31:29; EZE 47:22; ZEC 10:8).
16. There will exist a perfect economic system (e.g. no unions) in which the needs of men are abundantly provided for (ISA 62:9-9; ISA 65:21-23; JER 31:5).
17. There will be an increase of solar and lunar light. The increased light probably is a major cause of the increased productivity of the earth (ISA 4:5; ISA 30:26; ISA 60:19-20; ZEC 2:5).
18. There will be a unified language. The language barriers will be removed so that there can be free social intercourse (ZEP 3:9). All the world will unite in the worship of God and God's presence will be experienced as never before.

So again, the Millennium will be 1,000 years of perfect environment and prosperity, however, the Millennium will demonstrate three things: First, that it is very difficult to survive and be truly happy and content without capacity. Very few people ever have happiness in prosperity unless they have the capacity for happiness. Secondly, mankind cannot be satisfied without a personal relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ. Thirdly, believers can use Bible doctrine and remain faithful even in prosperity. Very few believers ever survive their first prosperity test, they usually lose their concentration on Bible doctrine. As a result, there will be many unbelievers during the Millennial age who will despise believers and join Satan at the end of the 1,000 years.

*REV 20:710, And when the thousand years are completed, Satan will be released from his prison, and will come out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together for the war; the number of them is like the sand of the seashore. And they came up on the broad plain of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city, and fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.*

After 1,000 years of perfect environment, Satan will be let loose to lead millions in the greatest revolution in human history. Man has 1,000 years of perfect environment and he revolts against it and that simply shows that environment is not the solution to man's problems. Environment is not even the basis for happiness. It is the individual's soul that counts, not the environment.

The Edenic dispensation under the age, or dispensation, of the Gentiles failed no matter what the Lord did. The antediluvian age under the dispensation of the Gentiles failed no matter what the Lord did (operation flood). The postdiluvian age under the dispensation of the Gentiles in which mankind once again failed by building the Tower of Babel, it failed no matter what the Lord did. The dispensation of Israel and the Jews totally failed no matter what the Lord did. Then in the first Christocentric dispensation we saw how The Lord Jesus Christ came unto His own, but His own did not receive Him, they failed no matter what the Lord did. So, the Church-age began and the Word of God teaches that even in that dispensation most believers reject The Lord Jesus Christ no matter what He does for them. So, another dispensation, the Tribulation, begins with God using crisis evangelism to warn people, but they still reject The Lord Jesus Christ no matter what the Lord does. Finally, perfect environment is given for 1,000 years, and still mankind will not respond to the Lord, again illustrating that without a relationship with The Lord Jesus Christ, mankind is an implacable, frustrated, miserable, ungrateful, or hard-hearted.

*JOB 14:4 says, "Who can make the clean out of the unclean? No one!"*

*ROM 3:10 as it is written, "There is none righteous, not even one; "There is none good, not one."*

*ECC 7:20 Indeed, there is not a righteous man on earth who {continually} does good and who never sins.*

You might want to remember that the next you judge somebody.

Back in ROM 9:6 *However, this is not to imply as though the word of God has failed.*

In spite of all the attacks made upon the Word of God by Satan, and the kingdom of darkness manipulating and using people, the Word of God will not fail. MAT 24:35 *"Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words shall not pass away."*

*1PE 1:25 "But the word of the Lord abides forever. And this is the word which was preached to you."*

*ROM 9:6 However, this is not to imply as though the word of God has failed. For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel.*

The problem was that the Jews were suffering from what might be categorized as terminal self-righteousness. They were using the Mosaic Law as the means of salvation, and therefore had rejected all Bible doctrine. As a result of this they had come to this great point of discouragement, where they say, the word of God has failed. Israel's present discipline and the failure of the individual Jew, does not, and cannot neutralize the promises of God or the plan of God as revealed in His Word. The failure of any individual, any nation, does not in any way cancel anything in the Word of God. No individual or no nation is that important to history.

The insertion of the Church-age, and the administration of the fifth cycle of discipline to the nation of Judah, this still does not mean that Israel has no future. However, because of those two events, most Jews gave up. The apostle Paul anticipated the fact that because of the end of the age of Israel, the insertion of the Church-age, which to the unbeliever Jew is known as *the times of the Gentiles*, that many Jews would give up on the Old Testament promises. In the Old Testament, the Jews were always the client nation to God, with the exception of a few periods of decline when, for example, the Jews would be out under the fifth cycle of discipline and God would temporarily use a Gentile nation. The *times of the Gentiles* means the Jews are excluded from being a client nation. Recognizing that after the Church is removed by the rapture, and the Tribulation begins, it is prophesied that there will be a Jewish nation in Palestine in the Tribulation. No Jewish nation can be a client nation during the times of the Gentiles. The Jews were the client nation in the past, and they will be a client nation in the future, in fact forever, but in the mean time, the Gentiles have their day. This became very discouraging to the Jews because it appeared as though, by calling out a Royal Family, the Church, that God is not going to keep His word and not going to fulfill His promises to the Jews, as a nation, as well as individuals. This why Satan promotes anti-Semitism. This why we are told that in the last days Israel is going to be a nation targeted for destruction by other nations, such as Iraq and Iran.

The insertion of the Church-age has complicated the problem for the Jews. In fact, the Jews are so discouraged that they need to be reminded of what is already written in the Old Testament, especially in the book of Isaiah. Isaiah dwells on the future of Israel, in spite of the fact that they would be disciplined, and they would be removed from the scene of history as a client nation to God. So, in ROM 9:6, the Jews have lost track of these things, and therefore the nation has been discouraged, and the glorious future is brought into focus at this point. God always keeps His word, and Jesus Christ controls history. Jesus Christ, in His great wisdom, sees fit to remove Israel from the scene, and during the time of the calling out of the Royal Family to make it the times of the Gentiles, and to have Gentile nations as the client nation to God. God knows exactly what He is doing.

Now, the average Jew would respond and say the Word of God has been invalidated or canceled. That would mean that there are passages in the Old Testament that have no meaning to us, and therefore, we are all through. Because that would mean that God doesn't keep His Word.

Let's take one of the most important promises in the Word of God for us, the promise that we will be raised from the dead. 1CO 15:12-15, *Now if Christ is preached, that He has been raised from the dead, how do some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead? But if there is no resurrection of the dead, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, then our preaching is vain,*

*your faith also is vain. Moreover we are even found to be false witnesses of God, because we witnessed against God that He raised Christ, whom He did not raise, if in fact the dead are not raised.*

Therefore if God doesn't keep His word, as the majority of the Jews alleged, than why even live like we do? (even though we are still better off living this way). This is the obvious thinking and attitude of people who are not familiar with doctrine, and the Jews, as a whole had rejected doctrine, and therefore did not understand what was happening in history. Therefore they became very discouraged.

Jesus Christ controls history in spite of what you and I may think we are seeing. In spite of what's happening around you personally, nationally, internationally and historically. That's why you have to interpret history as a spiritual believer and begin to note the proper interpretation of history or how a mature believer can recognize Divine guidance in their life. Bringing together all the principles of doctrine and correctly interpreting contemporary history gives the believer a new lease on life, and a positive attitude, even toward your failures of the past. Once again, the grace, patience, longsuffering and compassion of God is revealed by giving one of His children another chance. You now to have the opportunity to go forward, even if you have been going backward for a while. HOS 14:4 *I will heal their apostasy, I will love them freely, For My anger has turned away from them.* This time you should be a much wiser, and a much more stabilized believer. You have been forgiven and released from your sins and failures, and you can have an impact on history in some way. In the Biblical interpretation of history, it is normal to relate yourself to what is going on in history, especially in the light of the fact that you believe that Jesus Christ controls history. You have the ability to use Bible doctrine in your soul to face the reality of contemporary events. You have to interpret history as a spiritual believer and begin to note the biblical interpretation of history and how a you recognize and understand the historical trends of the time in which you are living. Let's close with the following 8 principles:

- 1) Even though history is the record of man's thoughts, decisions, actions and motivations, it is Jesus Christ who controls history.
- 2) This is the first dispensation in which Jesus Christ controls history as a man, the God-man, from His Hypostatic Union.
- 3) In Human history, there are two sources of judgment: the sovereign decisions of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the erroneous decisions of mankind as they follow Satan and the kingdom of darkness in their sin of independence from God.
- 4) People individually and collectively are the products of their own decisions. Decisions create environment, environment does not create decisions. There are no tragedies in history, just historical disasters. So-called historical disasters are not tragedies since individuals, nations, and empires are the products of their own self-determination.
- 5) The pattern of historical disaster begins with economic depression, moves to moral and immoral degeneracy, and ends in military disaster. Perhaps that is why we do not see the USA as a major role player in the last days, that and of course the Rapture.
- 6) God selects the most evil nation to administer the fifth cycle of discipline to a degenerate client nation. Evil one destroys evil two. Evil is always attracted to evil to destroy evil.
- 7) Individual subjectivity destroys national objectivity. Arrogant people result in arrogant nations. Arrogant people or arrogant nations never see their own inconsistencies, only the inconsistencies of others. Jealous people and envious nations never see their own sins and production of evil, only the sins and evil of others.
- 8) This is why Christ taught the doctrine of perpetual warfare until He returns. The only way to prevent war is to be so well prepared that no one will attack.



# WHY THE WORD OF GOD HAS NEVER FAILED, AND WILL NEVER FAIL.

06/01/08

We have been noting that in spite of the Jews rejection of their spiritual heritage in Rom 9:4-5, God kept His word. This is because Jesus Christ, who is God in Rom 9:5, controls human history. Jesus Christ controls history in spite of what seems to be happening around you personally, nationally, internationally and historically. We must remember this as we make a Biblical interpretation of history. This is why Peter said in 2Pe 3:3-6, *Know this first of all, that in the last days mockers will come with their mocking, following after their own lusts, and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For ever since the fathers fell asleep, all continues just as it was from the beginning of creation." For when they maintain this, it escapes their notice [they deliberately ignore the fact] that by the word of God the heavens existed long ago and the earth was formed out of water and by water, through which the world at that time was destroyed, being flooded with water.*

It was God's word that brought the earth back from the chaos that was caused by the flood that destroyed the world.

*2Pe 3:7-11, But the present heavens and earth by His word are being reserved for fire, kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men. But do not let this one fact escape your notice, beloved, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish but for all to come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come like a thief [this is not the Rapture, this is not the second coming, this is Rev 21:1, the time of a new heaven and a new earth for the first heaven and the first earth passed away] in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed or dissolved with intense heat, and the earth and its works will be burned up. Since all these things are to be destroyed in this way [the earth and its works], what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct or a dedicated to God life-style and living the spiritual life.*

*2Pe 3:12-14 goes on to say, looking forward with confidence and hastening of the coming of the day of God, on account of which the heavens will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat! But according to His promise [of living in the eternal state] we are looking forward with confidence for new heavens and a new earth, in which perfect righteousness dwells. Therefore, beloved, since we are looking forward with confidence for these things [living the spiritual life in time], be diligent [self-motivated] to be found by Him in peace [a state of inner peace, and tranquility of soul], spotless [execution of the spiritual life with capacity] and blameless [the result of fulfillment of the spiritual life].*

If we look at life as it is laid out before us and dealt out to us without seeing it through the Biblical interpretation of history (the fact that Jesus Christ controls history), we will not understand why certain things happen.

*2Pe 3:14-18, "Therefore, beloved, since you look for these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, spotless and blameless, and regard the patience of our Lord to be salvation or really deliverance; just as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given him, wrote to you, as also in all his letters, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which the untaught and unstable distort, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction. You therefore, beloved, knowing this beforehand, be on your guard lest, being carried away by the error of unprincipled men, you fall from your own steadfastness, but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen."*

Here is the ability to use the doctrine in your soul to see the Biblical interpretation of history. If you want to plan for the future, than live for the future. Don't be inconsistent like so many people are. If you want to plan for the future, then you should plan for eternity, because eternity is the what the future is all about. We can live for eternity because the Word of God has never failed and never will fail.

We noted ten points regarding this subject.

Point 1. The continuation of the universe, all of its creatures, and the state of the atmosphere depends on one fact and one fact only, the essence of God, especially the omnipotence and immutability of Jesus Christ.

*Col 1:15-17, And He [The Lord Jesus Christ] is the [exact] image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation. For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities-all things have been created by Him and for Him. And He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together.*

*Heb 1:3 He upholds all things by the word of His power.*

So, the reason why the word of God has never failed and never will fail is because *He upholds all things by the word of His power*. That means that the continuation of the universe, of the angels, the human race, depend upon The Lord Jesus Christ. That includes every evil member of the human race, they are all here courtesy of the grace of God. They only exist because of the grace of God, and the fact that free will does exist. That is why we should never live in fear (Rom 8:31; Psa 46:1-2).

Point 2. Jesus Christ controls history, not the so called scientific laws which are really Divine laws. It is not science that guarantees that the universe will be around tomorrow, it is The Lord Jesus Christ, only He can make that guarantee.

Point 3. These So-called scientific laws are based on the statistical assumption that the universe, which operates according to a fixed norm, will continue to do so. Science can observe certain laws, but cannot guarantee their continuance. What science is actually observing is the faithfulness of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who not only controls history, but also controls the universe. Because the universe operates according to certain norms and standards, science merely assumes that these norms and standards will continue. However, while science observes these laws, science cannot guarantee them (2Pe 3:1-12).

Point 4. The Universe with its matter, energy, and operating laws of God will not always exist as it does at the present time (2Pe 3:10-12; Rev 21:1).

Point 5. Known scientific laws and phenomena, which man has been able to observe, classify, recognize and interpret, depend entirely upon the Faithfulness of God. Every discovery of the pattern of the universe is a treatise on the faithfulness of Jesus Christ, who at the present time is guaranteeing the function of every bona fide scientific law (Col 1:17; Heb 13:8). Therefore, known scientific laws depend entirely on the essence of God, especially the omnipotence plus immutability.

Point 6. It Is by the Word of God which has never failed and will never fail that Jesus Christ holds the universe together (Heb 1:3).

You must remember this every time you go through something in your life. He's there! He's in control! He's in charge!

*Mat 28:20 "I am with you always, even to the end of the age."*

*Heb 13:5 "I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you,"*

Point 7. Why The Lord Jesus Christ is holding the universe together.

a. Jesus Christ is holding the universe together to resolve the angelic conflict in human history and to bring many sons into glory (Heb 2:10).

b. The Lord Jesus Christ is holding the universe together in order to allow grace, which began with the Holy Spirit radiating heat over the ice pack, to run its full course until He destroys the universe by nuclear fission at the end of history.

So man has been able to categorize and classify certain things so that he can apply and utilize these scientific laws. Occasionally these laws have been overruled by the sovereignty of God. For example, the day the sun stood still for Joshua in battle (Jos 10:13-14). The universe will be destroyed someday, but the Word of God will survive the destruction of the universe, as will the believer in resurrection body (Heb 12:26-29).

Point 8. So called scientific laws belong to The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is the One Who sustains the universe.

They demonstrate His faithfulness and His perfect character. These laws can be changed or over ruled by the sovereignty of God as illustrated in 2Pe 3:10-12. However, though the universe will change, the Bible will not. You have more stability in the Bible than you have in the universe (1Pe 1:23-25; Mat 24:35). The universe is going to change but the Bible will not.

Point 9. So called scientific laws are simply the Faithfulness of Jesus Christ holding the universe together, and at the same time holding back eternity.

This is so the human race will have the opportunity to appropriate the grace of God, and so that ultimately God will be glorified forever.

Point 10. This Doctrine explains the simplicity of miracle working for The Lord Jesus Christ. A miracle is an event that contradicts known scientific laws and is thought to be due to supernatural causes, especially an act of God. The Lord merely stops a scientific law from working and something out of the ordinary happens. For example in Luk 8:25 *"He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey Him?"*

He controls the sea (Job 26:10; Psa 33:7).

He controls the storms (Psa 65:7; Psa 107:29).

He controls the wind (Psa 148:8; Mar 4:39).

He controls the rain (Gen 7:4).

He controls the thunder and hail (Exo 9:33).

He tells the snow to come upon the earth (Job 37:6).

He makes the lightning (Jer 10:13).

He is in total control of even every insignificant detail in life.

With all of those principles in mind, what do you have to worry about? What do you have to fear? What do you have to complain about? What do you have to be jealous about? If you do have doubts, it may be because you have rejected the Word of God which has never failed and will never fail, and instead you have chosen to live in self-justification, self-deception, and self-absorption. Your mental attitude is so important because that's where you develop your motivation, and where you do most of your sinning. These mental attitude sins include arrogance, pride, jealousy, implacability, bitterness, vindictiveness, inordinate ambition and inordinate competition, all motivational sins, and sinful thoughts such as fear, guilt, worry, anger, judging, hatred, even murder. These are the sins that can destroy your life.

We need to understand the importance of Biblical interpretation of history. We begin with the fact that because our Lord Jesus Christ controls history, as a part of our Lord's Divine protection of man, He protects the human race from self-destruction. Man is a product of his own decisions. When man and his negative decisions are allowed to proceed to their logical conclusion, it is total destruction of the human race. Because of that fact, our Lord Jesus Christ intervenes at times with Divine judgment. These Divine judgments protect the human race from self-destruction while at the same time clean the human race from elements that would destroy it. This is why certain evil people, and evil nations, are periodically wiped out through war, famine or destruction. According to the Bible, war is a bona-fide part of history (Ecc 3:8; Num 21:14).

Therefore, because Jesus Christ controls history, no nation or race ever experiences a catastrophe unless He chooses, or allows for it to happen. That's why we should never question our Lord's decisions, and what He allows to take place in human history. As far as we are personally concerned as believers, the Bible is the key to historical interpretation. The Biblical interpretation of history must be related to God, the angelic conflict, the unseen world of angels and the visible world of mankind. Bible doctrine is the basis for correct interpretation of history. To see history objectively we must possess the Divine viewpoint obtained from doctrine. We must understand subjects like the angelic conflict, the First Advent, the Cross, the Second Advent, the doctrine of Dispensations, etc. If you can understand these things, you will discover God's will for your life and your place in human history. How many believers actually believe such passages as Joh 15:15 where our Lord said "*No longer do I call you slaves, for the slave does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I have heard from My Father I have made known to you.*"

You have the privilege of having everything you need to know and understand made available to you. God has chosen you, and He has a will for your life and a place for you in history. You are to discover and recognize God's place for you, and to do so you must be able to correctly interpret history and events that have happened, are happening and will happen in your life. To correctly interpret history one must understand the Church-age, the Royal Family of God, the times of the Gentiles.

There are six basic principles that the Lord has established which guarantee that the human race will never self-destruct, and that mankind will live on this earth until the end of human history.

1) The division of languages after the tower of Babel. This was so the human race would not be confident in man or human power, or human ability. This is something that Satan wants with the new world order, the one world government.

*Gen 11:6-9, And the Lord said, "Behold, they are one people, and they all have the same language. And this is what they began to do, and now nothing which they purpose to do will be impossible for them. Come, let Us go down and there confuse their language, that they may not understand one another's speech." So the Lord scattered them abroad from there over the face of the whole earth; and they stopped building the city. Therefore its name was called Babel, because there the Lord confused the language of the whole earth; and from there the Lord scattered them abroad over the face of the whole earth.*

The division of languages is actually keeping the human race from arrogance and self-destruction. For there is power in numbers and we would become arrogant if we all worked together and tried to solve all the problems of the world. This answers the question where did the different languages come from? God in His grace is the One who created the different languages not the wisdom of man. Therefore, in understanding the biblical interpretation of history, we see the value of different languages and that is why it is the epitome of arrogance to think that one race is greater than another.

2) To protect the human race from self-destruction, the Lord has established Nationalism. God has divided the people of the earth into various countries (Deu 32:8; Acts 17:18-26). God is the one who gave nations and therefore, in the Biblical interpretation of history, we need to see the value of

Nationalism not Internationalism and that's why organizations such as the United Nations are evil. Satan would love to have an organization somewhere in the world that had the ultimate say and ultimate power so that he could be there and control the world. In fact, he will do this with a certain religious organization in Rome (Rev 17-18). Right now he's trying to do it with organizations such as the United Nations. Nationalism is what causes people to seek God not Internationalism. In fact, even in the millennium, nationalism will exist Jesus Christ will rule nations.

3) The concept of client nations to God. Israel was a "holy" nation to God.

*Deu 7:6 "For you are a holy people to the Lord your God; the Lord your God has chosen you to be a people for His own possession out of all the peoples who are on the face of the earth."*

A client nation is a national entity under the patronage of God, assigned the responsibility for the preservation, communication, and fulfillment of the canon of Scripture.

There were five Jewish client nations in the Old Testament: a. The theocratic kingdom, B.C. 1441-1020, from the Exodus until the prophet Samuel. The theocratic kingdom ended when the Jews wanted to be like other nations.

b. The United Kingdom, from Saul to Rehoboam, B.C. 1020-926.

c. The Northern Kingdom, from Jeroboam to Hoshea, B.C. 926-721. In 721 B.C. the fifth cycle of discipline was administered by the Assyrians under Sargon II.

d. The Southern Kingdom, from Rehoboam to Zedekiah, B.C. 926-586. The fifth cycle of discipline was administered by the Chaldeans under Nebuchadnezzar.

e. After the Northern and Southern Kingdoms were destroyed, while no Jewish client nation was operational as such, Jews outside of the client nation filled in the gap to Gentile nations as they had been responsible before to do so. Then Judah became a client nation again from B.C. 516 until 70 A.D. No Gentile client nation exists in the Old Testament, only Jewish client nations.

It is negative volition to Bible doctrine that destroys a client nation. When periods of apostasy in Israel or any client nation grows enough, that client nation dies under the fifth cycle of discipline. In every case of Jewish apostasy in a Jewish client nation status both the clergy and the politicians of Israel are indicted along with the negative volition of the people. Bad decisions destroy freedom options and enslave the nation, so that the client nation status is destroyed from within in the first three cycles of discipline.

A very important principle is that a nation that is not prepared for war is not prepared for peace. Mankind always has been and always will be the product of their own volition, not their environment. The doctrine of man's sin nature and total depravity plus the function of Satan's cosmic system requires that people in a client nation periodically will have to make great sacrifices for freedom. Political solutions are useless without spiritual solutions. What makes political solutions great is the invisible hero-ship of a pivot of mature believers.

*Mat 5:13 You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt has become tasteless, how will it be made salty {again}? It is good for nothing anymore, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men.*

You are here to be salt seasoning that brings out the God flavors of this earth.

# PRINCIPLES THE LORD HAS ESTABLISHED WHICH GUARANTEE THAT THE HUMAN RACE WILL NOT SELF- DESTRUCT

06/08/08

We have been noting the Six Basic Principles the Lord has established which guarantee that the human race will never self-destruct and that mankind will live on this earth until the end of human history.

First, we have the division of languages (Gen 11:6-8), after the tower of Babel. This was so the human race would not think that the union of man with human power and human ability could solve the problems of mankind.

Secondly, we have the principle of Nationalism. God is the one who gave nations and therefore, in the biblical interpretation of history, because the word of God which has never failed, and will never fail, will still come to pass, we saw the significance of Nationalism and the importance of the rejection of Internationalism.

The third principle is the concept of client nations to God. This all began with the nation of Israel who was called a holy or set-apart nation to God.

*Deu 7:6 "For you are a holy people to the Lord your God [separated or set apart for God]; the Lord your God has chosen you to be a people for His own possession out of all the peoples who are on the face of the earth."*

A client nation is a national entity under the sponsorship of God, assigned the responsibility for the preservation, communication, and fulfillment of the canon of Scripture. The one major reason that Jewish and Gentile client nations do not continue is because of negative volition toward Bible doctrine. Many of these nations were destroyed because of not understanding doctrines such as the difference between Israel and the Church, Dispensations, the Spiritual Life, and the Mystery Doctrine of the Church-age. In every case of Jewish apostasy within a Jewish client nation, both the clergy (prophets and priests), and the politicians of Israel are indicted along with the people.

In Jer 6:9-11 we read, *Thus says the Lord of hosts, [Jehovah of the armies], has said; To whom shall I speak and give warning, That they may hear? Behold, their ears are closed [they've tuned out God], And they cannot listen [they don't want to hear from Him]. Behold, the word of the Lord has become a reproach to them; They have no delight in it. But I am full of the wrath of the Lord: I am weary with holding {it} in. Pour {it} out on the children in the street [even the children suffer because of association] And on the gathering of young men together; For both husband and wife shall be taken, The aged and the very old.*

Jeremiah is saying that the wrath of God should come so that the people may wake up.

*Jer 6:12-13, "And their houses shall be turned over to others, [their homes will be given away] Their fields and their wives together [their loved ones]; For I will stretch out My hand Against the inhabitants of the land," declares the Lord. "For from the least of them even to the greatest of them, Everyone is greedy for gain, And from the prophet even to the priest Everyone deals falsely [or everyone manufactures lies]."*

Everyone's after the dollar, little people and big people alike. The same thing is true in 2T 3:1-2 where the love of money is the root of all sorts of evil (see also 1Ti 6:10).

In Jer 6:13, the prophets and priests, and everyone in between, twist and distort the truth of the Word of God. In *Mic 3:11, Their leaders [their judges] pronounce judgment [literally sell verdicts] for a bribe,*

*Her priests instruct for a price [market their teaching], And her prophets divine for money.*

One of the signs that a nation is going down is when those who have spiritual information sell it. This is against what our Lord said in *Mat 10:8-10*, "Heal {the} sick, raise {the} dead, cleanse {the} lepers, cast out demons; freely you received, freely give. Do not acquire gold, or silver, or copper for your money belts, or a bag for {your} journey, or even two tunics, or sandals, or a staff; for the worker is worthy of his support."

Those that respond and who have PVTD will support those who are responsible for the communication of the truth. In *Jer 6:14-15* they deal falsely or manufacture lies, in these verses academic dishonesty is called an abomination to the Lord.

*Jer 6:16 Thus says the Lord, "Stand by the ways and see and ask for the ancient paths [you're standing at the crossroads, look around], Where the good way is, and walk in it; And you shall find rest for your souls. But they said, 'We will not walk {in it}.'*

*Jer 6:17-19, "And I set watchmen over you [communicators of doctrinal truth {saying,}] 'Listen to the sound of the trumpet!' But they said, 'We will not listen.' Therefore hear, O nations, And know, O congregation, what is among them. Hear, O earth: behold [learn from the biblical interpretation of history], I am bringing disaster on this people [My client nation], The fruit of their plans [letting them reap what they sow], Because they have not listened to My words, And as for My law or doctrine, they have rejected it also."*

God even provided watchmen for them to warn them, to set off the alarm, but the people didn't listen. They have ignored God's word, and had nothing but indifference, apathy, and even contempt for God's teachings. So the Lord took them out. Always remember *Act 10:34 God is not one to show partiality.*

*Eze 13:8-10, Therefore, thus says the Lord God, "Because you have spoken falsehood and seen a lie, therefore behold, I am against you," declares the Lord God. So My hand will be against the prophets who see false visions and utter lying divinations [they see empty, false, and delusive visions and give lying prophecies]. They will have no place in the council of My people, nor will they be written down in the register of the house of Israel, nor will they enter the land of Israel, that you may know that I am the Lord God. It is definitely because they have misled My people by saying, 'Peace!' When there is no peace. And when anyone builds a wall,"*

The wall refers to false sense of security promoted from the lies of politicians trying to deceive the people, and the prophets and the priest teaching false doctrine for personal gain. The same could be said of people today who are ignoring the writing on the wall concerning our own nation.

In *Eze 13:11-12*, the Lord says that the politicians, priests, and prophets have lied. When the government and the spiritual leaders build a wall, the people are right behind them slapping on whitewash. So in verse 13, the Lord says, Tell those who are slapping on the whitewash, When the flooding rains come and the hailstones crash down and the hurricane sweeps, the walls, [man's solutions to man's problems], will collapse. Whitewash represents the political lies that saturate a client nation.

*Eze 13:15-16 "Thus I shall spend My wrath on the wall and on those who have plastered it over with whitewash; and I shall say to you, 'The wall is gone and its plasterers are gone, {along with} the prophets of Israel who prophesy to Jerusalem, and who see visions of peace for her when there is no peace, declares the Lord God."*

The fourth basic principle the Lord has established which guarantees the continuance of the human race, until the end of human history is the salvation work of the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross. This work on the Cross divides the human race into two categories, believers and unbelievers.

*Joh 3:18 "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God."*

The only sin that causes an individual to not be able to enter into Heaven, the eternal state, is the sin

of unbelief.

*Joh 3:36 "He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him."*

In Col 4:5, the apostle Paul says *"Conduct yourselves by means of doctrine toward unbelievers, making the most of the opportunity."*

If you really believe in God and His word you have to believe that the unbeliever will go to a place described as a place of torment described in Luk 16:27-28.

It's a place of unspeakable misery indicated by the term, "everlasting fire" (Mat 25:41). It's a place where the worm [conscience] never dies and the fire is never quenched (Mar 9:44). It's the Lake (which many believe to be a liquid form of lava) which burns with fire and brimstone (Rev 21:8).

This place of eternal suffering is also called; A bottomless pit (Rev 9:2), Outer darkness (Mat 8:12), Fire unquenchable (Luk 3:17), Furnace of fire (Mat 13:42), Blackness of darkness (Jud 13).

Seven times we are told in the scripture that there will weeping and gnashing of teeth.

This is a very real place, beyond the power of words to describe. If any of you have family members, friends, acquaintances, fellow-workers, or anyone that you come into contact with that are unbelievers, you should always be open to an opportunity to witness. If you really believe in God and His word you have to believe that the unbeliever will go to that final destiny, the eternal lake of fire. It's that place where the devil is thrown into described in *Rev 20:10 And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.*

The apostle Paul realized how serious this was and therefore asked the early church to pray that he would have boldness concerning the communication of the Gospel in Eph 6:19 where he was talking about witnessing.

*Rom 1:16 "I am not ashamed of the Gospel, because it is the power of God for salvation for everyone who believes, to the Jew first and also to the Gentile."*

Witnessing is the responsibility of every believer. You should ask yourself if Rom 1:16 is a reality to you, are you ashamed of the Gospel? Are you embarrassed or afraid to talk about the Lord Jesus Christ in front of friends? Remember that God the Holy Spirit gives you the power that you need to be effective in witnessing.

*Act 1:8 But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be my witnesses*

*2Ti 4:5 But you, be sober in all things, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.*

This applies to every believer.

The Church-age believer has two areas of responsibility in witnessing for Christ. First, the witness of the life, *2Co 3:3 "Being manifested that you are a letter from Christ, having been served by us, written not with ink, but with the spirit of the living God, not on tables of stone, but on the tablets of the human heart."*

Your life is to be a letter from Christ and therefore we have the witness of your life.

Secondly is the witness of the lips, *2Co 5:18-20, Now all these things are from God, who reconciled us to Himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation, namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself, not counting their trespasses against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation. Therefore, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were making an appeal through us; we beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God.*

There are three areas of evangelism in which the power of God the Holy Spirit functions in witnessing, they are given precisely in *Joh 16:8-11, "And He, when He comes, will convict the world concerning sin and righteousness and judgment; concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me; and concerning righteousness, because I go to the Father and you no longer see Me; and concerning judgment, because*



*the ruler of this world has been judged."*

The Holy Spirit will convict the world of three things:

1. Concerning sin (unbelief, not sins).
2. Righteousness.
3. Judgment.

The Gospel is good news, the good news is that every personal sin in human history was judged on the Cross. Personal sin is not the issue in salvation, and that's made very clear in the context. It says that the Holy Spirit will convict the world of "sin" that is singular. There's only one sin that is the issue when you are witnessing to someone and that is unbelief regarding the Lord Jesus Christ. There is only one sin that takes a person to the eternal lake of fire and that is rejection of Jesus Christ as Savior. In witnessing personal sins are never the issue because all personal sins were judged on the Cross (2Co 5:14,15, 19, 1Ti 2:4, 2:6, 4:10, Tit 2:11, Heb 2:9, 2Pe 2:1, 1Jo 2:2). This is called the doctrine of the unlimited atonement, which means that the Lord Jesus Christ died for every single member of the human race. There is no such thing as limited atonement taught in the Scripture. Our Lord and Savior died for the sins of the whole world. Our Lord allowed every infant to be born into sin because condemnation must precede salvation. Just as one person did it all wrong and got us in all this trouble with sin and death, our Lord did it right and got us out of it (Rom 5:18-21).

The Grace of God invites us into eternal life, a life that goes on forever and ever. All members of the human race are born in sin. Jesus Christ, in His justice, died for the sins of the entire human race. So, personal sin is not an issue in witnessing, the issue is what do you think about the Lord Jesus Christ (Mat 22:42).

We are not to make an issue out of our own righteousness, and tell everyone how holy we are now that we are Christians. We are not to make an issue out of their unrighteousness and their bad habits or their lifestyle. It is always important to remember that the Lord Jesus Christ is "non posse peccare," meaning not able to sin.

This refers to the deity of Christ. As God, Jesus Christ is not able to sin.

But Jesus Christ is also said to be "posse non peccare," meaning able not to sin. This refers to the humanity of Christ inside the PPOG for His life.

The humanity of Christ was tempted in all ways that we are tempted, and far beyond any temptation we have ever experienced, and He remained perfect and He did not sin. He had the ability to sin because His humanity had volition. The Deity of Christ was impeccable and it was impeccability that qualified our Lord to become a lamb without spot and without blemish. Therefore, He could go to the Cross and be judged for the sins of the world.

He became *"the lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world."*

The perfect resurrected humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ ascended into the presence of God the Father where His righteousness was totally accepted in Heaven forever and ever. This is the only righteousness that is an issue in witnessing, the righteousness of Christ! When the Lord Jesus Christ ascended and was seated at the right hand of God, it was humanity that did so, only the humanity of Christ sits down!

In witnessing the only righteousness that we have the right to make an issue out of is the righteousness of Christ! When the Holy Spirit controls the soul of the one witnessing, it is He that reaches out to fallen man who is spiritually dead and points to the impeccability of the Lord Jesus Christ. If you're going to live with God forever you have to be as good as God is, and the only way you can do that is to have God's righteousness. The only way anyone can get God's righteousness is if He gives it to us, and that's what He did the day of our salvation. God the Holy Spirit reveals in common grace the principle that the righteousness of God is the only righteousness accepted in Heaven and the righteousness of God is imputed to us at the moment that we believe in Christ.

The third principle that the Holy Spirit will make an issue of when the believer is witnessing properly is found in *Joh 16:11 And concerning judgment, because the ruler of this world has been judged*. Remember that Satan is the ruler of this world (*Joh 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, 2Co 4:4, Eph 2:2*). Prior to human history both Satan and all fallen angels were tried, judged, found guilty and sentence was passed. This is recorded very briefly in *Mat 25:41 "the eternal fire has been prepared for the devil and his angels."* This sentence was appealed by Satan with the result that mankind was created, and human history was designed by God as the environment for Satan's appeal trial! Mankind was created to bring glory to God in this appeal trial. Like angelic creatures, mankind was given free will to demonstrate to Satan and all fallen angels the validity of God's judgment on them. The human beings who reject the Lord Jesus Christ as Savior will share the condemnation of Satan and the fallen angels (*Rev 20:10-15*).

The Fifth principle the Lord has established which guarantees the continuance of the human race, until the end of human history is the invisible impact and influence of the mature Church-age believer. This is where God blesses the client-nation through the pivot of mature believers. The greatest function and service in time is invisible to the general public. It is the function of the pivot of mature believers. In the Church-age, the mature believer is the stabilizer of history. The mature believer may not be recognized by the world, or for that matter even the Church, but he is the unseen hero of the Church-age as a part of the pivot. As goes the believer so goes the nation. This is true about a mature believer, when the rain descends and the floods come, he doesn't freak out.

Our Lord warned us about this in *Mat 7:24 Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine [Bible doctrine], and acts upon them [application of doctrine], may be compared to a wise man, who built his house upon the rock. And the rain descended [a reference to the storms of trouble], and the floods came [adversaries and opposition against the members of the household], and the winds blew [the unexpected adversities], and burst against that house; and yet it did not fall, for it had been founded upon the rock. And everyone who hears these words of Mine [perceives doctrine], and does not act upon them [doesn't apply], will be like a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand [the ways of the world]. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and burst against that house; and it fell, and great was its fall."*

Earthly things; the ways of the world look good until the trials and difficulties of life prove their vanity. Heavenly things look inadequate until the trials and difficulties reveal their glory.

# PRINCIPLES THE LORD HAS ESTABLISHED WHICH GUARANTEE THAT THE HUMAN RACE WILL NOT SELF- DESTRUCT: PART 2.

06/15/08

We have noting that the Six Basic Principles the Lord has established which guarantees that the human race will never self-destruct, and the Word of God which has never failed and will never fail will still come to pass because Jesus Christ controls history. We have seen the first five:

1. Division of languages, Gen 11:6-8.
2. Nationalism.
3. Client nations to God.
4. Salvation work of the Lord Jesus Christ.
5. The pivot of mature believers.

We are now ready for the sixth and final basic principle: The Divine provision of the different dispensations. We begin with some definitions. A dispensation is a period of time in human history expressed in terms of divine revelation for that period. The inerrancy of the Word of God is the source for looking at history from the divine viewpoint. The term dispensation is a technical theological term used primarily by the apostle Paul in the presentation of the mystery doctrine of this Church-age.

Dispensations are divine categories of human history; therefore, both the divine outline and the divine interpretation of human history. There are many interpretations of history, but the only accurate one is dispensational. Dispensations are the vehicle by which believers, living at a specific time in history, can orient to God's will, plan, and purpose for their lives. This is very important to understand because God's plan is not the same for every dispensation. In fact, the plan is quite different in each. Old Testament believers were under the ritual plan of God. Our Lord Jesus Christ was under the incarnation plan of God. The Church-age is the dispensation of the mystery plan, the Pre-designed Plan of God (PPOG) for every believer in the Church-age.

A dispensation is a period of time during which a particular revelation of God's mind and God's will is operative, and during that time man is tested as to his obedience to that specific manifestation of God's will, purpose, and plan. The believer's orientation to both time and human history is necessary for understanding God's plan and God's purpose.

*Rom 11:13 "But I am speaking to you who are Gentiles. Inasmuch then as I am an apostle of Gentiles,"*

Eph 3:1-3, For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles if indeed you have heard of the stewardship of God's grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation [there's the key word, by revelation, not by Old Testament passages as Covenant theology teaches] that by revelation there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief.

The term "revelation" indicates in what manner the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age is to be studied and searched out. In order not to miss anything essential, we must first lay the foundation of a basic understanding of the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age, a mystery which will not be fully understood until we get to Heaven. Paul was the first Apostle to reveal the dispensation of the mystery doctrine of the Church-age. However, there are not enough books in the world to contain all the information regarding the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age. This is why the pastor/teacher must fulfill such passages as 2Ti 2:15 Be diligent to present yourself

approved to God as a workman who does not need to be ashamed, handling accurately the word of truth. Therefore, the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age, as taught in the Word of God, is something that we all need to grow in on a continual basis through the communication of Bible doctrine.

We have to understand that revelation is a divine manifestation of Deity. This is something that is fantastic, exciting and challenging for all of us since we are all believer priests and there is equal privilege and equal opportunity for all of us as members of the Royal Family of God. We need to comprehend the true basic essentials of the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age and then we will have the foundation to achieve even a greater understanding through the progression an unfolding of our desire to seek for God. Heb 11:6 And without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who seek Him.

We need to comprehend the true basic essentials of the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age and then we will have the foundation to achieve even a greater understanding through the progression an unfolding of our desire to seek for God. This advanced understanding of the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age is a goal that we must all seek to attain on the basis of the relevant facts that have been made known to us through the epistles of the New Testament, especially those of the apostle Paul.

The Greek noun *apokalupsis* translated revelation refers to the opening up of realities and spiritual truths veiled in the Word of God which has never failed and will never fail. This opening up or revelation is to be done in preciseness and detail. This can only be done through dedication and devotion to Bible doctrine. This refers to the opportunity that you all have in Gal 3:28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all equal in Christ Jesus.

In 2Co 12:1-7 this word *apokalupsis* denotes the unveiling of heavenly matters which Paul experienced in an ecstatic state. 2Co 12:1-7, Boasting is necessary, though it is not profitable; but I will go on to visions and revelations of the Lord. I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago whether in the body I do not know, or out of the body I do not know, God knows such a man was caught up to the third heaven. And I know how such a man whether in the body or apart from the body I do not know, God knows, was caught up into Paradise, and heard inexpressible words, which a man is not permitted to speak. On behalf of such a man will I boast; but on my own behalf I will not boast, except in regard to my weaknesses. For if I do wish to boast I shall not be foolish, for I shall be speaking the truth; but I refrain from this, so that no one may credit me with more than he sees in me or hears from me. And because of the surpassing greatness of the revelations, for this reason, to keep me from exalting myself, there was given me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to buffet me, to keep me from exalting myself!

*1Pe 1:12 also talks about this principle, It was revealed to them [Old Testament prophets] that they were not serving themselves, but you, in these things which now have been announced to you through those who preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, things into which angels long to look.*

Angels can't receive the information through revelation as much as we can as believers in the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age.

*Eph 3:1-9, For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles if indeed you have heard of the dispensation of God's grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. And by referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ, which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy*

*apostles and prophets in the Spirit; to be specific, that the Gentiles are fellow heirs and fellow members of the body, and fellow partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel, of which I was made a minister, according to the gift of God's grace which was given to me according to the working of His power. To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles the unfathomable riches of Christ, and to bring to light what is the administration [oikonomia - dispensation] of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God, who created all things;*

The greatest responsibility of pastors in the Church-age is to communicate the dispensation of the mystery. The doctrine of dispensations emphasizes what God wants you to do after salvation. The pastor is to communicate God's will, God's plan and God's purpose for your life. The dispensation of the Church-age is very important because every believer is important, no exceptions. There is only one dispensation in all of history that emphasizes every believer and that is the Church-age.

In the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union one individual is emphasized, and He, of course, is the Lord Jesus Christ.

In the dispensation of the Church-age, every believer is emphasized as a part of the body of Christ. In the dispensation of the Church-age we are given equal privilege and equal opportunity and this is the dispensation of glorifying Christ,

*Col 1:27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles: which is Christ in you, the confidence of the glory.*

The power and the assets which were given to the humanity of Christ are now given to each one of us; this is a special dispensation. Never before in Old testament dispensations was there such a tremendous emphasis on the individual. The same thing can be said about the Tribulation and Millennial reign. In every other dispensation such as the Old Testament, a few individuals; a few spiritual believers were emphasized at the time. But now, for the first time in human history, the emphasis is upon the man in the pew, the housewife, the mother, the individual believer. Regardless of their background, color, handicaps, every believer has been given greater assets, power, and blessings than anyone ever before.

In Eph 3:8, the apostle Paul says; To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles the unfathomable riches of Christ. Until you understand where you are in the biblical interpretation of history, and the fact that Jesus Christ controls history, you will have no idea about the real reason why you have been created. Until you have located yourself in the correct dispensation, it is impossible for you to execute God's plan for you life. It is the responsibility of the pastor to clarify this issue. It is not an issue you can clarify for yourself just by reading the Bible. You have to be taught, and the pastor is to "make known what is the dispensation of the mystery."

The Greek word for *mystery* is *musterion*, it refers to the Church-age and the true meaning and purpose and definition for your life depends on your understanding the doctrine of dispensational truth. Your life is important, you live in dispensation where every believer counts. In reality the future of our country does not reside in the hands of the politicians, but in your personal attitude toward Bible doctrine, because as goes the believer so goes the nation. For the first time in history, significance is placed on the individual believer. that's why one of the many things that happened to you at salvation is that you became a member of the Royal Family of God. Therefore, the sooner you become briefed on how royalty functions, and what your role in history is, the better chance you have to glorify God and be the recipient of the most fantastic blessings ever. You are important to God. You are not as important to people as you think you are. This is one of the delusions of romance and friendship, but you are important to God. The sooner you recognize that fact the sooner you will live your life as unto the Lord. God's will for your life is for you to understand what is the dispensation of the mystery. When we study the dispensation of the Church-age, what we are studying was hidden from all of the Old Testament prophets, priests and Old testament believers.

The first person to ever reveal anything about the coming of the Church-age was Our Lord Jesus Christ. Mat 16:13-19, Now when Jesus came into the district of Caesarea Philippi, He {began} asking His disciples, saying, "Who do people say that the Son of Man is?" And they said, "Some {say} John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; but still others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets." He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" And Simon Peter answered and said, "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus answered and said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal {this} to you, but My Father who is in heaven. And I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades shall not overpower it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

Any system of theology that tries to start the Church in Abraham's tent or with Noah or Moses has an erroneous understanding of the Scripture and does not understand the correct biblical interpretation of history. They fail miserably when it comes to God's plan and the mystery doctrine. That's why most churches are involved with cleaning up the devil's world because they do not understand dispensational truth or the dispensation of the mystery. Therefore, the Church-age is the most difficult yet exciting time in history; for God's plan for the Church is superior in every way to God's plan for previous and future dispensations. Never before in human history, and never after the Rapture of the Church has so much divine power been available to each believer.

Never before, and never after the Church-age does everything depend on the believer. As goes the believer, so goes history in this dispensation. The Church is every believer in union with Christ, the Royal Family of God. Christ, while absent during the Church-age, is Head or Ruler over the Church (Eph 1:22; Col 2:10). With doctrine, the Church is the greatest power on earth against Satan's rule. The great power experiment of the Hypostatic-union overflows into the Church-age as the challenge to Satan. The strategic victory of our Lord in the angelic conflict terminated His residence on earth (Col 2:13-15). Therefore, He left behind the Church to challenge Satan, with the potential to attain the tactical victory in the angelic conflict.

There are two parts to the angelic conflict as it extends into human history: There is the strategic side and there is the tactical side. The chief witness in all of human history is the humanity of Jesus Christ in Hypostatic-union. Our Lord is what we would classify then as the strategic witness. Our Lord came up with strategy to defeat Satan, and executed that plan magnificently. Our Lord Jesus Christ defeated Satan. The other witnesses are the invisible heroes, those believers who execute the PPOG in the Church-age. These mature believers are classified as tactical witnesses, that means we do the same thing, but in lesser form. Our Lord accomplished the strategic victory of the angelic conflict through His salvation ministry on the Cross, plus his physical death, burial, resurrection and ascension. The believer accomplishes the tactical victory of the angelic conflict by advancing to spiritual maturity in the PPOG, at this point he becomes an invisible hero. When our Lord was on the Cross, He won the strategic victory, when our Lord returns, there will be the Second-advent and the tactical victory. In the meantime, anyone who believes in Christ is a winner strategically in the angelic conflict, so that in effect, all Christians today are, and all believers in the tribulation will be strategic victors, but it is the tactical victory that is in view with Bible doctrine. Your daily attitude toward Bible doctrine, in both perception and application becomes the tactical victory. So you can be a strategic winner and a tactical loser. A strategic winner has eternal life. But in eternity he doesn't have anything to show for the time that he spent on earth.

# PRINCIPLES THE LORD HAS ESTABLISHED WHICH GUARANTEE THAT THE HUMAN RACE WILL NOT SELF- DESTRUCT: PART 3.

06/22/08

We are noting the sixth and final principle that the Lord uses which guarantees the continuance of the human race until the end of human history. This final principle deals with the divine division and provision of the different dispensations.

Throughout human history there are different dispensations given for the continuance of human history. We need to understand this subject as it relates to the biblical interpretation of history. These divine divisions of dispensations are periods of time in human history expressed in terms of divine revelation for that period. This means that the inerrancy of the Word of God is the only true source for looking at history, for this is divine viewpoint. There are many interpretations of history, but the only accurate interpretation is from a dispensational viewpoint.

Dispensations are the means that God uses by which believers, living at a specific time in history, can adjust to God's will; God's plan and God's purpose for their lives. This is very important to understand because God's plan is not the same for every dispensation. The key to understanding each dispensation is based upon the courtroom trial of the angelic conflict. The oldest book in the Bible, from the standpoint of writing, is not the book of Genesis, but the book of Job. This book was written long before Moses wrote the first five books in the Bible. The book of Job starts out with a scene in the courtroom of heaven, and the angelic conflict with man being entered into evidence testing.

Human history began in a courtroom, the Garden of Eden, with two individuals Ish and Ishshah (Adam and the woman), being interrogated by Satan (called the serpent in Gen 3). Human history ends in the last book of the Bible with mankind standing in another courtroom, the Supreme Court of Heaven, before the Great White Throne Judgment. Here they are pleading their case before God. They, in effect, have said that during their lifetime that they did not need God, and so God will honor their free will by letting them live forever without Him. Since God is light, and since He won't be there, there will no light where they will live forever. In fact, they will live forever in a place where the God will not be, and therefore the following attributes will be missing, and even longed for:

- a. The sovereignty of God.
- b. The integrity or holiness of God.
- c. The love of God.
- d. The life and personality of God.
- e. The omnipresence of God.
- f. The omniscience of God.
- g. The omnipotence of God.
- h. The faithfulness of God.
- i. The happiness of God.
- j. The grace of God.

Human history is divided into different phases, and one of the definitions we use to describe those phases is dispensations. The Church-age, the dispensation of the mystery, is what we call the intensified stage of the appeal trial of Satan and the angelic conflict.

Of this church I was made a minister according to [not the stewardship but the oikonomia or administration] the dispensation from God bestowed on me for your benefit that I might fully carry

out the preaching of the word of God, that is the mystery which has been hidden from the past ages and generations; but has now been manifested to his saints, to whom God willed to make known what is the glorious riches of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the confidence of the glory [the indwelling of the Lord Jesus Christ, which only takes place in this dispensation]. (Col 1:25-27)

Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus according to the commandment of God our Savior, and of Christ Jesus, who is our hope; to Timothy, my true child in the faith: Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. As I urged you upon my departure for Macedonia, remain on at Ephesus, in order that you may instruct certain men not to teach strange doctrines, nor to pay attention to myths and endless genealogies, which give rise to mere speculation rather than furthering the dispensations [not administration] of God which is by faith or literally associated with doctrine. (1Ti 1:1-4)

There are six dispensations in history and they fall into three categories: The first is the Theocentric dispensations which refer to the Old Testament periods of time emphasizing and glorifying God the Father's purpose in the divine provision relating to the angelic conflict. There are two of these: 1) The age of the Gentiles in the Old Testament, from Adam to the Exodus generation, 1441 B.C. 2) The age of the Jew, from 1441 B.C. to the first Advent of Christ, 4-5 B.C.

Secondly, there are Two Christocentric dispensations where the Lord Jesus Christ is the center of the dispensation.

Third, the Hypostatic Union, 4-5 B.C. to His death, burial, resurrection, and ascension, 30 A.D.

Fourth, the Church-age, 30 A.D., to the Rapture, which has not yet occurred.

Finally we have Two Eschatological dispensations.

Fifth, the Tribulation, from Rapture to the Second Advent of Christ.

Sixth, the Millennium, from the Second Advent, to the last Judgment.

Those six dispensations are divided into three categories. In each dispensation, there is one member of the Godhead or the Trinity exalted. In the Church-age, the dispensation of the mystery, our role and goal is to become invisible heroes glorifying our Lord Jesus Christ. Our Lord accomplished the strategic victory of the angelic conflict through His salvation ministry on the Cross plus his physical death, burial, resurrection and ascension. The believer accomplishes the tactical victory of the angelic conflict through his advance to spiritual maturity in the PPOG, at this point he becomes an invisible hero. If enough believers grow to spiritual maturity to form a pivot, there will be prosperity where they reside. If believers reject doctrine and do not grow in grace, then Satan dominates using either angelic power, or human power organized for influence and control. The Royal Family of God (RFOG) on earth represents Jesus Christ. In this way, we function as royal ambassadors under the PPOG.

Our Lord will have representation on earth until the Second Advent when the devil's kingdom comes to an end. The application is that Jesus Christ doesn't come down to the earth today to bail you out as He did with believers in the past. You have a portfolio of invisible assets and the PPOG. As RFOG, you do not need Christ present. Even miracles do not compare to your portfolio of invisible assets. In the Old Testament, Jesus Christ was present many times on earth, including His incarnation, which occurred in the dispensation of Israel. In the Millennium He will be on the earth ruling for 1000 years. Today, it is not necessary for our Lord to be here, because the provision for the RFOG is infinitely greater than the grace provision of any other dispensation in history. God's grace provision of the portfolio of invisible assets plus the PPOG in time duplicates the grace provision of eternity past and the angelic conflict. If even one believer in the Church-age fully utilizes this grace provision through metabolized doctrine, the prosecution, the Lord Jesus Christ can use this believer as evidence to prove Satan's appeal invalid. We are the very center of the angelic conflict. All the demon activity, wars, invasions, and violence of the coming Tribulation period is nothing compared to your challenge in the Church-age. The invisible impact of history resides in you; it is dependent upon your routine, your daily perception of doctrine. God is demonstrating during this phase of the Church-age, the



dispensation of the mystery, the most important lesson of the prehistoric angelic conflict. As a winner, you demonstrate the validity of the sentence to fallen angels in eternity past.

The Church-age exists to challenge Satan during the absence of Christ from the earth. This is why you have many problems and difficulties in your life (Eph 6:12; 2Co 10:3-4). While Jesus Christ is seated at the right hand of the Father, the Church exists to challenge and to defeat Satan's purposes. Because of the great power experiment of the Church-age, this dispensation is the crossroads of history, the final blow to Satan's power on earth in the spiritual realm. Satan's power on earth will not be broken until the Second Advent of Christ. In the meantime, we live in the most exciting and unusual period of history.

In the angelic conflict, Satan tries to convince people that God is unfair, unjust and a God who is not merciful or gracious. In this dispensation of grace, the dispensation of the mystery, God demonstrates the fallacy of that satanic lie through people who are graced-out. There has never been a time where so much power has been released toward merit less objects for the fulfillment of the plan of God. There's an infinite gap between divine perfection and human imperfection, and grace is the filler. Only the grace of God toward man can fill that gap. You have more opportunity, power, and assets from God to glorify God than any Old Testament Saint had. We are all ordinary believers, but we have the grace and power offered to us to become extraordinary invisible heroes.

Invisible heroes are found in 2Co 6:9 where the apostle Paul says that we are unknown yet well-known. Invisible heroes are the least publicized of heroes. These heroes are not written about in history books. They are usually considered the last, but always remember, the last, one day, will be first! Invisible heroes are born again believers who execute the PPOG, and who recognize that they are a vital part of the angelic conflict. They avoid the distractions of life and religion, especially legalism. They are unknown in terms of human history but are well known in terms of the angelic community who are watching them.

"If indeed you have heard of the dispensation of God's grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation [not by Old Testament scriptures but by revelation] there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. And by referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ, which [mystery] in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets by means of the Spirit; to be specific, that the Gentiles are fellow heirs and fellow members of the body [meaning that we are in union with Christ], and fellow partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel, of which I was made a minister, according to the gift of God's grace which was given to me according to the working of His power. To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles [all of you] the unfathomable [the word means the incomprehensible, mysterious, baffling] riches of Christ, and to bring to light what is the [not administration, the word is oikonomia and it means dispensation] of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God, who created all things; in order that [here's the purpose or the reason] in order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places [the elect and fallen angels]. This was in accordance with the eternal purpose which He carried out in Christ Jesus our Lord," (Eph 3:2-11)

Bible doctrine is the least publicized of priorities in this world because this is the devil's world. Likewise, invisible heroes are the least publicized of heroes, and the angelic conflict, or trial, is the least publicized of all trials. That which is the least publicized is that which pastors must major in. The entirety of pastor's message is directed toward that which Satan, the god of this age, is attempting to crush and suppress. That's why you should always pray for communicators of Bible doctrine (Eph 6:18-20). They are charged with the communication of the very message that millions of angelic beings are charged to hide and destroy. The pastor is charged to "Preach the word; be ready in season

and out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with great patience and instruction." This is also another reason why your prayers should also consist of praying for those who operate with their time, talent, and treasure, and function in their spiritual gift to support the communication of doctrine.

For through the grace given to me I say to every man among you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think; but to think so as to have sound judgment, as God has allotted to each a measure of faith. For just as we have many members in one body and all the members do not have the same function, so we, who are many, are one body in Christ, and individually members one of another. And since we have gifts that differ according to the grace given to us, {let each exercise them accordingly}: if prophecy, according to the proportion of his faith; if service, in his serving; or he who teaches, in his teaching; or he who exhorts, in his exhortation; he who gives, with liberality; he who leads, with diligence; he who shows mercy, with cheerfulness. Let love be without hypocrisy. Be devoted to one another in brotherly love; give preference to one another in honor; (Rom 12:3-10)

*That there should be no division in the body, but {that} the members should have the same care for one another. (1Co 12:25)*

Therefore encourage one another, and build up one another, just as you also are doing. (1Th 5:11)

This happens when believers understand that they are a part of the most intensified stage of the angelic conflict and that they have a divine calling on their lives and therefore, they should be a part of building up one another not destroying and distracting one another.

*For God, who said, "Light shall shine out of darkness," is the One who has shone in our hearts to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the surpassing greatness of the power may be of God and not from ourselves; we are afflicted in every way, but not crushed; perplexed, but not despairing; persecuted, but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed; always carrying about in the body the dying of Jesus, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our body. For we who live are constantly being delivered over to death for Jesus' sake, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our mortal flesh. So death works in us, but life in you. (2Co 4:6-12)*

Paul's life report, and life support, is recorded in 2Co 11:23-33. He said, I've worked much harder than most, been jailed more often, beaten up more times than I can count, at death's door time after time. I've been scourged by the Jews' with thirty-nine lashes, stoned to death with rocks once. I've been shipwrecked three times, immersed in the open sea for a night and a day. I was exposed to danger from rivers, danger from bandits, threats from my own government and nation, threats from the Gentiles and other people, dangers in the city, and desert places, dangers in the sea, dangers from those posing as believers, accusations from those who think that have doctrine but are really destitute of Christian doctrine and knowledge; struggle with friends and enemies, endangered by desert sun and sea storm, betrayed by those I thought were my brothers.

Likewise, in no way be intimidated by your enemies, which to them [this intimidation] is a manifestation of destructive ways [toward you] but with reference to you, [these destructive ways] are an opportunity for divine deliverance, in fact, this [deliverance] is from the source of God. [here's the reason why] to you it has been graciously given with reference concerning Christ, not only to believe in Him, but also to suffer on behalf of Him, (Phi 1:28-29)

Today the kingdom of darkness is succeeding in blinding arrogant young men. Unfortunately, in this generation (not dispensation), even arrogant females, who willfully disobey the apostle Paul when he commanded: Let a woman quietly receive instruction with entire submissiveness. But I do not allow a woman to teach or exercise authority over a man, but to remain quiet (1Ti 2:11-12). The kingdom of darkness is succeeding in blinding these individuals who are more interested in getting numbers and huge crowds with their dog and pony show than to teach. The kingdom of darkness is also succeeding in the life of believers who become distracted by the details of life, and waste hundreds of hours

considering nonsensical things in life. They then try to squeeze in a minute or two of devotion for the day.

Paul refers to this when he says, Therefore I ask you not to lose heart at my tribulations on your behalf, for they are your glory. (Eph 3:13). Paul is saying do not grow weary because of the adversities that I must face, because they are in honor of you, they are for the purpose of your glory. This is why so many things happened to Paul in terms of adversity. He was committed with the message that meant the undoing of the god of this age, the unraveling of the whole cosmic system, and Satan's appeal trial. Paul realized that he was in God's plan for the Church-age, the dispensation of the mystery. Paul taught that long before God laid down the foundations of the earth, God had us in mind, and had chosen us as the special focus of the Church-age, the dispensation of the mystery (Eph 1:4).

Paul also taught that long ago God decided to adopt us into His family through our Lord Jesus Christ, and He also took tremendous pleasure in doing so (Eph 1:5). God wanted us to enter into the celebration of His grace and His lavish gifts, given by the hand of His beloved Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, who freed the justice of God to bless the righteousness of God in us all. This all began because of the sacrifice that our Lord Jesus Christ made upon the Cross.

# THE THEOCENTRIC DISPENSATIONS: THE DISPENSATION OF THE GENTILES, THE PERIOD OF POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE VOLITION.

06/29/08

We have noted the importance of understanding the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age. Before we go on with our main passage in Rom 9, we need to note some of the differences between the other dispensations.

We begin with the first of the two dispensations called Theocentric Dispensations.

Theocentric dispensations: The dispensation of the Gentiles is broken down into three parts:

1. The Period of Positive Volition.
2. The Period of Negative Volition.
3. The Period of the Patriarchs.

The age of positive volition begins with the creation of mankind and ends with the fall of Adam and the woman, an unknown period of time. It started off with man and woman as trichotomous beings, that is having a body, soul and a human spirit. Both Adam and the woman (Ishshah) were created and placed in a perfect environment. Ishshah is an interesting name, it means woman, wife, or female, and because she was created perfect it is actually a compliment. It is an honor for any woman to be referred to as an Ishshah. She is described as the soulful and physical counterpart of man, deserving of his unwavering loyalty.

And the Lord God fashioned into a [la'ishshah] woman the rib which He had taken from the man, and brought her to the man. And the man said, "This is now bone of my bones, And flesh of my flesh; She shall be called [ishshah]. Woman, Because she was taken out of Man." For this cause a man shall leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and they shall become one flesh. (Gen 2:22-24)

The Bible holds women in the highest regard, and sets forth their graciousness, and worth as womanly virtues. Many women in the Old Testament were spiritual champions, and held positions of prestige, especially those who were faithful to their husbands who were winner believers as well. Shiphrah and Puah, of the Book of Exodus, were valiant women who put their own lives at risk by defying the Pharaoh's law of death in order to uphold God's law of life. There was also Deborah, Ruth, Huldah, Sarah, Leah, Rachel, Miriam, Hanna, Abigail, Batsheba, Esther. These are just a few of the many women, or ishshah's of influence in Old Testament history. We are told that he who finds a true Ishshah finds one who becomes a source of blessing and honor to him in Pro 18:22 and Pro 12:4. A fruitful wife is a sign of the blessing of God upon you in Psa 128:3.

In the first dispensation, they (Adam and Ishshah) were involved in two categories of perfection. The first was that they were created perfect beings, created with body, soul and human spirit. With the human spirit they had the ability to have fellowship with God every day even though there was no Bible. Because of their perfect soul they also had wonderful interaction, and a wonderful relationship with each other. In addition to a perfect soul and spirit, they were also perfect physically. They had everything that one could imagine or wish for in life; plus they were both geniuses. The second category of perfection was the fact that they were placed in perfect environment: the Garden of Eden. When the Lord Jesus Christ came in the garden to teach them, He taught them directly; this was an age of positive volition. However, certain negative vibes began to develop. This illustrates that even in perfect environment mankind had problems.

In the age of positive volition, they had two divine institutions already established; they had free-will and they had marriage. They had perfect environment and total freedom. They were married by God; they had great sex, marvelous conversations, and total admiration for each other's beauty. However, they both soon discovered that neither perfect environment nor marriage is a source of happiness or the means to solve the desires and needs of mankind. God has made everything meaningful for mankind in its time. He has also set the desire for eternity in their heart [right lobe-brain] (Ecc 3:11). In the first dispensation we have one man and one woman, both perfect in body, soul and spirit and in perfect environment. In the Garden of Eden, marriage, a divine institution, failed under perfect environment. Proving that a change of environment is not the solution to any problems you may be facing. Perfect environment, body, soul and spirit, and marriage were all tested in the Garden of Eden. While there was no written canon of Scripture during this dispensation, there was positive volition for a certain period of time. The point is that God's plan, pattern and policy toward them was totally different then as it is toward us. They were perfect, we are fallen sinners. They were in perfect environment, we are in the devil's world. They were under only one negative mandate (Gen 2:17), we are under grace along with many commands.

The dispensation of the Gentiles is broken down into three parts: the period of positive volition, negative volition and the patriarchs. The age of negative volition is a part of the dispensation of the Gentiles. It began with the fall of Adam and the woman, and continued to Abraham. There was no written canon of Scripture during this dispensation. This period of time is covered for us later on by Moses in Gen 4 - 9. Moses lived around 1440 BC and God revealed to him what He wanted us to know about these early dispensations. Just like God revealed to Paul what he wanted us to know about the dispensation of the mystery of the Church-age.

The period of negative volition is dispensation of the first murder in history, when Cain murdered his brother Abel, Gen 4:8. Cain was religious and he typifies the self-righteous, jealous, petty type of person who thinks more highly of himself than what he ought to. Cain and Abel were brothers. Cain turned out to be a murderer and a loser in life. Abel turned out to be a winner and a visible hero. They both came from the same home, had the same parents, and came from the same environment. Just like Abraham and Terah, his father, Issac and Ishmael, Jacob and Esau, Joseph and his brothers. There are many other examples, but the point is that there is no place for blaming spouses, parents, children, family or nation. Instead, everything depends upon free will. Cain was a product of his own decisions not his genes. He was the first recorded unbeliever in history. He was also the first criminal in history. Adam and the woman were right man and right woman, designed for each other by God, and, in spite of that, not all of their children turn out right.

The difference between the first two individuals mentioned in the period of negative volition is found in Heb 11:4 when it says "by faith." This is from the Greek noun Pistei, which in the instrumental case means through the instrument of faith. It means that which is believed, or the body of faith and belief, and therefore translated as doctrine. That is the meaning in Heb 4:11, By means of doctrine [and the implication is doctrine resident in the soul] Abel offered to God a better sacrifice than Cain. Every sacrifice that Abel ever made portrayed doctrine resident in his soul. Cain offered certain types of gifts and sacrifices, but they had no meaning. There was no doctrine in Cain's soul, he was an unbeliever, and therefore was minus the appropriate doctrine. Abel is a picture of the believer who has positive volition towards doctrine and does the right thing in the right way. Cain is a picture of an individual who is minus doctrine and tries to impress God with his works.

The sacrifice of Abel was greater for two reasons. First, Abel was a believer, Cain was not. It is impossible for anyone who is an unbeliever to enter into any ritual that will worship God. The ritual is meaningless because the person is not born again. Secondly, Abel offered a sacrifice that was accurate because of doctrine resident in the soul. He was constantly taken in doctrine as doctrine was made available to him in that particular era or dispensation. Abel is one of the first cases in history of a

believer who had positive volition toward doctrine and became a spiritual champion and a visible hero.

The period of negative volition of the antediluvian age (before the flood) was a very peculiar time. One of the greatest cultures of all time occurred during this period, the music, literature, and drama was far greater than anything produced since. Yet the greatest violence also existed. Culture and violence always go together. When a population gets to this point of saturated evil and violence, God intervenes with judgment.

It's interesting to note some of the things about the people who lived during this dispensation before the flood. They possessed some skills that compare with modern technology. Cain built cities according (Gen 4:17). Jubal was a musician, and Tubal-Cain was an "instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron" (Gen 4:22). The fact that Noah could construct his huge ark is also a witness to the engineering skills, and tools that were available. The antediluvian civilization began with Adam and the woman in the Garden of Eden in a state of perfect environment, and ended with the flood. Perfect environment was denied to them as a result of the fall, because mankind in the state of sin has no capacity for perfect environment.

*So He [the Lord] drove the man out; and at the east of the Garden of Eden He stationed the cherubim, and the flaming sword which turned every direction, to guard the way to the tree of life. (Gen 3:34).*

In this civilization brothers and sisters married without any genetic problems. The animals were also different. All animals, reptiles and birds were to be destroyed, except for those preserved in the ark. Weather was different, there was no bacteria; and because of that people lived for 700-800 years. Adam lived 930 years; Seth 912 years; Mahalaleel 895 years; Jared 962 years; Methuselah 969 years; Lamech 777 years (Gen 5:5-31). The women were also breathtakingly beautiful.

*That the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves, whomever they chose. (Gen 6:2)*

This civilization degenerated due to the fallen angels having sexual relations with the females of the human race. This produced a super race of heroes, who were the subject of mythology (Gen 6; Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:7; Psa 29:1; 89:6), The Hebrew phrase BENI HA ELOHIM refers to angels. The world was also filled with the NEPHILIM, the half angel half human creatures. This was Satan's strategy to destroy true humanity on the earth and prevent the Incarnation of our Lord Jesus Christ. This super race was characterized by two things: degeneracy and self-destruction, and negative volition and spiritual death. We are told that both Noah and Enoch preached to the antediluvian.

*For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment; and did not spare the ancient world, but preserved Noah, a preacher of righteousness [note that Noah was a preacher, therefore preaching was one of the ways that they received doctrine during the antediluvian period], with seven others, when He brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly. (2Pe 2:4-5)*

Because true humanity on the earth was in jeopardy, God administered the great judgment of the universal flood which destroyed the half human half angelic creatures plus all unbelievers. Only eight believers still existed on the earth, Noah and his family. The other believers had already died. God also took away all sexual ability from angels as part of this judgment. The demons involved in that sexual attack are now incarcerated in the compartment of Hades called Tartarus.

*"For God did not spare the angels when they sinned [Gen 6:2] but incarcerated them in Tartarus with chains of thick darkness, He delivered them over to judgment, being constantly guarded." (2Pe 2:4)*

The only demons operational today are disembodied spirits, so that any such sexual attacks can never occur again. During the antediluvian civilization, the earth was also not yet tilted on its axis; there was

no bacteria, therefore, there was perfect climate. Mankind has a different life span in each civilization.

The saturation of evil was so great that the human race had reached a point of total self-destruction. This was a part of the satanic plot to destroy true humanity on the earth so that Jesus Christ could not come in the flesh. Yet only as perfect true humanity could Jesus Christ come and be judged for our sins. Therefore, to protect the remnant of believers, God had to destroy the antediluvian civilization. The only way that God could keep his divine promise that there would be a savior, and that "whosoever believes in Him will never perish but have eternal life," was by destroying the corrupted part of the human race. This is how true humanity would be preserved beyond the great catastrophe of a universal flood. There will never again be a universal judgment of the earth, like the flood. The earth will only be destroyed once more in its entirety, and that will occur at the end of the Millennium. At that time, God will cause a nuclear explosion that will destroy the earth and universe entirely.

The Theocentric dispensation, the period of negative volition, the antediluvian period, was a time when God not only spoke audibly to believers, but also to unbelievers. We know that because God spoke to Cain in Gen 4. In this dispensation of negative volition, Abel communicates to us the importance of Bible doctrine resident in the soul; the importance of becoming an invisible hero and a spiritual champion. In every dispensation, even though the plan and policy of God may vary, we can still learn from the winner believers. This requires consistency with the intake of doctrine. Abel reveals that no matter what the dispensation may be like, Bible doctrine resident in the soul is what glorifies God. Cain was jealous of Abel, but jealousy did not stop the momentum of Abel. Jealousy is the epitome of selfishness and is incapable of true love. It is irrational in its resentment of others. It is an emotional sin, remember that emotion has no ability to think or to reason. Cain was jealous of Abel and he learned the hard way that jealousy like many of the mental attitude sins can produce physical sickness as well as mental disorder. A tranquil heart is life to the body, But jealousy is rotteness to the bones (Pro 14:30). Jealousy is self-destructive For jealousy slays the foolish man and anger kills the stupid (Job 5:2). Jealousy is the strongest mental attitude sin.

Here is Abel, the recipient of jealousy, bitterness, implacability, and hatred, but it did not hinder his testimony or his spiritual growth. Remember, always give your best. Never get discouraged or be petty. Always remember, others may hate you, but those who hate you don't win unless you hate them in return. Life often demands very strong concentration from you. A concentration whereby you ignore the petty things around you. Do not let negative, critical, judgmental, pessimistic individuals drag you down to their level. This is why David was so great. His older brother Eliab criticized him. His brother made fun of him but he didn't stop to argue with his brother. David just went on out and killed himself a giant. That's the concentration that life often requires. Stay focused on the objective. Don't get side-tracked.

Cain murdered Abel but the death of Abel did not hinder the advance of doctrine or the importance of doctrine resident in the soul.

*By means of doctrine [resident in the soul] Abel offered to God a greater sacrifice than Cain, through which [offering] he received confirmation that he was or kept on being righteous God testifying about his gifts, and through it [the doctrine resident in his soul], though he is dead, he still speaks. (Heb 11:4)*

The tragedy was not the death of Abel, but Cain as a murderer going through life in misery and then as an unbeliever burning forever and ever in the lake of fire. Nothing can stop Bible doctrine, and that includes the lies, the jealousy, the hatred, the hypocrisy of those who try. Bible doctrine moves on and even increases more and more in spite of the attacks made upon by fools. Exo 1:12 says that the more you try to afflicted God's people and His word, the more they multiply and spread out.

Remember man in Gen 3:19 was to live by the sweat of his brow. And of course, in this immediate era

following the fall we have envy, jealousy, arrogance and this was the motive for the first murder. This is also the beginning in history of capital punishment. Capital punishment has been authorized from the time of the first murder, right down to this moment.

*And surely I will require your lifeblood; from every beast I will require it. And from every man, from every man's brother I will require the life of man. Whoever sheds man's blood, By man his blood shall be shed, For in the image of God He made man (Gen 9:5-6).*

This is how crime must be controlled. This is the first statement of capital punishment. A murderer was to be executed, not rehabilitated, not counseled, but executed. The reason for all this is given in verse 6, **for in the image of God He created man**. A change in dispensation did not change this principle. In Mat 26:52 Peter intended to defend the Lord with his life, and when the temple policemen stepped forward to cease our Lord, Peter pulled out a sword and cut off a soldier's ear. In Mat 26:52 Jesus tells Peter to put the sword away. It's the unlawful use of weapons, crime, violence, terrorism, rape, murder, all of these categories draw the sword illegally. All who draw the sword shall die by the sword. That means criminals who use weapons and kill must die by the sword. This is a perfect illustration of the fact that every dispensation has certain divine laws which apply to all of them.

Capital punishment began in Gen 9. It continued in the Mosaic Law in Exo 21:14. It continues into the church-age. In the tribulation, terrorism is dealt with by capital punishment. In Rev 2:26-28, capital punishment will be practiced in the Millennium. Wherever people have old sin natures they will continue to commit murder.



# THE THEOCENTRIC DISPENSATIONS: THE DISPENSATION OF THE GENTILES, THE PERIOD OF POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE VOLITION.

Satan is not only the instigator of the first murder but the author of Cain's religion

07/06/08

We have been noting the first category of dispensations called the Theocentric dispensations which can be divided into three periods of time.

The first Theocentric dispensation we call the dispensation of the Gentiles because the Jewish race had not yet begun. It has three parts:

1. The period of positive volition.
2. The period of negative volition.
3. The period of the patriarchs.

The age of positive volition begins with the creation of mankind and ends with the fall of Adam and the woman, an unknown period of time. It started off with man and woman as trichotomous beings, that is having a body, soul and a human spirit. Both Adam and the woman (Ishshah) were created and placed in a perfect environment.

The age of negative volition is a part of the dispensation of the Gentiles. This era is when the first murder in history occurred when Cain murdered his brother Abel. Cain was the original criminal in human history, and we are told what was behind his crime. For this is the message which you have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another; not as Cain, who was of the evil one and slew his brother. And for what reason did he slay him? Because his deeds were evil, and his brother's were righteous. (1Jo 3:12)

*So it came about in the course of time that Cain brought an offering to the Lord of the fruit of the ground. And Abel, on his part also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of their fat portions. And the Lord had regard for Abel and for his offering; but for Cain and for his offering He had no regard. So Cain became very angry and his countenance fell. Then the Lord said to Cain, "Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen? If you do well, will not your countenance be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it." And Cain told Abel his brother. And it came about when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.(Gen 4:3-8)*

Cain murdered his brother Abel, because Abel fulfilled the principle of worship portraying the Lord Jesus Christ being judged for our sins. Abel offered an animal sacrifice while Cain offered only human good, his work or produce from the ground. Cain was a great farmer, but offering up human works instead of a blood sacrifice is like an individual today believing that mankind can be justified before God by his works. So, in the immediate era following the fall we have envy, jealousy, arrogance, and this was the motive for the first murder. This is also the beginning in history of capital punishment which has been authorized from the time of the first murder, right down to this moment.

*"And surely I will require your lifeblood; from every beast I will require it. And from every man, from every man's brother I will require the life of man. Whoever sheds man's blood, By man his blood shall be shed, For in the image of God He made man." (Gen 9:5-6)*

This is how crime must be controlled. This is the first statement of capital punishment. A murderer

was to be executed, not rehabilitated, not counseled, but executed. If we executed everyone who committed murder, and everyone who is a rapist, (under the laws of Jurisprudence that God has designed), we would find that crime would decrease drastically.

Gen 9:6 is the beginning of capital punishment. This is not talking about killing in war, the commandment "Thou shall not kill" is incorrectly translated. It is "You shall not [ratsach] murder." Killing in warfare in defense of your country is honorable. The execution of criminals who murder is a must. Because the Jews practiced this, they had a very low crime rate, and they had no prisons.

Now, the reason for all this is given in verse 6, for in the image of God He created man. We need to note this very important principle concerning dispensations: a change in dispensation did not change the law of capital punishment. In Mat 26 Peter intended to defend the Lord with his life, and when the temple police stepped forward to seize our Lord, Peter pulled out a sword and cut off a soldiers ear.

*Then Jesus said to him, "Put your sword back into its place; for all those who take up the sword shall perish by the sword." (Mat 26:52).*

The unlawful use of weapons, crime, violence, terrorism, rape, murder. All are areas where the sword is drawn illegally. All who draw the sword shall die by the sword. That means criminals who use weapons, and kill, must die by the sword. This is a perfect illustration of the fact that every dispensation has certain divine laws which apply to all of the dispensations. Capital punishment began in Gen 9; continued in the Mosaic Law, then in the Hypostatic-union, it continues in the Church-age. In the Tribulation period, terrorism is dealt with by capital punishment, and it will be practiced in the Millennium as well. Wherever people have old sin natures running wild, they will continue to commit murder, and they who do so should be executed.

Establishment principles remain basically the same throughout dispensations. The difference in dispensations is God's plan for believers, not the laws of divine establishment. The biblical concept then is capital punishment. The question that some ask is "If murder demands capital punishment then why did God allow Cain to keep on living?" The reason is that there was no law up to the time of Cain.

*So the Lord said to him, "Therefore whoever kills Cain, vengeance will be taken on him sevenfold." And the Lord appointed a sign or a mark for Cain, lest anyone finding him should slay him. (Gen 4:15)*

The mark of Cain was the mark of divine protection not a mark of violence. The mark of Cain permits Cain to remain alive so that he can have an opportunity to be saved. God's grace permits the unbeliever to live on the earth even in direct defiance of God. Cain always defied God, but as long as was alive, he can always be saved by believing in Jesus Christ. So, God in His very own righteousness gives the unbeliever every chance to be saved. God took punishment into His own hands and protected the human race from further violence at this time. By God administering the punishment, the punishment is correct because God is perfect. A perfect God can only administer perfect punishment. By administering the punishment Himself, God keeps the human race from entering into warfare over whether the justice is correct or not.

People are always interested in what the mark of Cain was. It is impossible to tell whether it was some physical mark, some sign upon in his body, which indicated that he was God's property, or something else. We simply do not know. Whatever it was, it indicated to people that even though he was a murderer, God had spared his life for a reason. Cain was marked, but from that time on, any murder meant execution.

Notice that in the age of negative volition, a part of the dispensation of the Gentiles, the first murder was committed, and the first murder was due to a religious dispute. It was Cain's works and merits against Abel's bloody sacrifice or faith toward trusting in God for the sacrifice for his sin. Abel claimed that a bloody sacrifice was necessary. Cain claimed that an offering of works taken from the soil which God had cursed, was sufficient enough. Cain became angry, but he did not kill Abel that day.

The Bible tells us that Satan was not only the *instigator* of the first murder, but he was the *author* of Cain's religion. Religion started in the Garden and was perpetuated by Satan through Cain. So Cain fled and was the first one to build a city with all its filth and sin.

*And Cain had relations with his wife and she conceived, and gave birth to Enoch [not the Enoch who walked with God]; and he built a city, and called the name of the city Enoch, after the name of his son. (Gen 4:17)*

Among the descendants of Cain were Jubal, the inventor of musical instruments, and Tubal-Cain, an instructor of workers in brass and iron. In those days, they used their knowledge and their genius to improve and build up a godless civilization. They didn't live for a mere 70 or 80 years, but for hundreds of years. Therefore, their accumulation of knowledge, experience, and skill advanced the arts and sciences and resulted in the invention and manufacture of all the appliances of a luxurious civilization. The building of the ark built by Noah, or the building of the tower of Babel, or the Great Pyramids all required a tremendous knowledge of mathematics and astronomy.

We tend to observe those days as primitive but they were not. The outcome of this brilliant but Godless civilization is described in Gen 6. In the midst of this Godless civilization a startling event occurred, Beni-ha-Elohim came on the scene in Gen 6:2. The outcome of this invasion of the earth by the fallen angels brought on the flood. The earth was changed thus wiping out the Garden of Eden, and it brought an end to the antediluvian age.

In this dispensation mankind was treated as a whole, there were no nations, no Mosaic Law, conscience was the standard of human conduct. It was the standard by which men accused or excused themselves.

*For when Gentiles who do not have the Law do instinctively the things of the Law, these, not having the Law, are a law to themselves, in that they show the work of the Law written in their hearts, their conscience bearing witness, and their thoughts alternately accusing or else defending them. (Rom 2:14-15)*

God was very near to mankind in those days and His voice was heard in rebuke, as it was to Cain in Gen 4:14; in communion with Enoch in Gen 5:22-24; in counsel as with Noah in Gen 6:3. We must distinguish this Theocentric dispensation as one being one without law, and then the next Theocentric dispensation as the one under law. We're right back to the same principle: No matter what God does for mankind, mankind is still not satisfied. No matter what God gives to mankind, mankind always wants more. It doesn't matter if He gives them a set of laws and rules to follow.

*For all who have sinned without the Law will also perish without the Law; and all who have sinned under the Law will be judged by the Law (Rom 2:12).*

While there was no written law in the dispensation before the flood, there was an unwritten law, written in the hearts of men. Therefore, the characteristics of this age are: An advance in fullness and clearness of divine revelation; then a gradual spiritual descend; followed by conformity to the evil of the world system appealing to the selfishness of mankind. Then a perverted mixture of a half angel-half human civilization; followed by an apostasy and finally a catastrophe. We find that this is the basic characteristic of every dispensation that follows.

*"For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah. For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, they were marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so shall the coming of the Son of Man be." (Mat 24:37-39)*

Mankind still ignores what God has revealed to every generation. A generation goes and a generation comes, But the earth remains forever (Ecc 1:4). Generations come and generations go, but the world still remains. People are constantly coming and going through this world. Everyday a child is born, everyday a person dies, and planet earth is still here. One generation comes along trying to find

happiness apart from God, and it disappears. Another generation comes along and makes the same mistake; then another, and another; and history continually repeats itself, so that we must conclude with the German philosopher Hegel (Ha-gel): "We learn from history that we learn nothing from history."

*Then the Lord said to Cain, "Where is Abel your brother?" And he said, "I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?" (Gen 4:9).*

In reality, Cain is looking straight into the eyes of the Lord and lying to His face. Note that there's no fear, and definitely no respect for God. Apparently, Cain really did not learn, or simply rejected the doctrine of the essence of God (His omnipresence, omniscience, or omnipotence) as it was revealed in that dispensation. Here's an unbeliever who talked with God, and denied God's character. He was not a believer, but he was religious. To get the attention of selfish, self-centered individual who thinks that life should revolve around them, you hit them where it hurts.

*"What have you done? The voice of your brother's blood is crying to Me from the ground. (Gen 4:10)*

*"When you cultivate the ground, it shall no longer yield its strength to YOU; YOU shall be a vagrant and a wanderer on the earth." And Cain said to the Lord, "My punishment is too great to bear!" (Gen 4:12-13).*

Next, Cain, like the devil, makes accusations against God,

*"Behold, YOU hast driven me this day from the face of the ground; and from Your face I shall be hidden, and I shall be a vagrant and a wanderer on the earth, and it will come about that whoever finds me will kill me" So the Lord said to him, "Therefore whoever kills Cain, vengeance will be taken on him sevenfold." And the Lord appointed a sign for Cain, lest anyone finding him should slay him. Then Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, [notice it doesn't say that the Lord went out from the presence of Cain] and settled in the land of Nod, east of Eden. (Gen 4:14-16)*

# THE PERIOD OF THE PATRIARCHS, ANOTHER ERA OF THE THEOCENTRIC DISPENSATION OF THE GENTILES, AND THE GENIUS OF GOD.

07/13/08

We have been looking at the principles that the Lord uses that guarantees the continuance of the human race until the end of human history. We are now noting the divine provision of the different dispensations. We have categorized six dispensations in history, and they fall into three different classifications.

The first is Theocentric dispensations. This refers to the Old Testament periods of time emphasizing and glorifying God the Father's purpose in the divine provision of dispensations as they relate to the angelic conflict. There are two Theocentric Dispensations: First, the age of the Gentiles in the Old Testament, from Adam to the Exodus generation. Second, the age of the Jew from 1441 B.C. to the first Advent of Christ. The first period of Theocentric dispensations, the dispensation of the Gentiles, has three periods:

1. The Period of Positive Volition
2. The Period of Negative Volition.
3. The Period of the Patriarchs.

We have noted the first two, the last period is called the Period of the Patriarchs. This is really the period of the Jewish patriarchs, and was a transitional period from which would emerge the dispensation of Israel. In this period, God established the Jewish race; in the next Theocentric dispensation, the age of Israel, He would establish the Jewish nation. The peak of this period was the divine interjection of the Abrahamic Covenant. Although no written Scripture existed, God entered into a covenant, or sworn contract with Abraham.

For when God made the promise to Abraham, since He could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself, saying, "I will surely bless you, and I will surely multiply you." And thus, having patiently waited, he [Abraham] obtained the promise. For men swear by one greater than themselves, and with them an oath given as confirmation is an end of every dispute. In the same way God, desiring even more to show to the heirs of the promise the unchangeableness of His purpose, interposed with an oath, in order that by two unchangeable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we may have strong encouragement, we who have fled for refuge in laying hold of the hope or the confidence set before us. (Heb 6:13-18)

For God to break His covenant with Abraham in any way, and not fulfill His promises to the Jews would make God a liar. Covenant theology teaches that God replaced the Jews with us, the Gentiles, and that is wrong, and if you believe that, you are contributing to Satan's accusation against God, that His word cannot be trusted. In this covenant God promised unconditionally to make Abraham a great nation. Abraham believed God, and at age seventy-five he obeyed God's instructions to leave his home, and migrate to the land which God said He would show him.

*By means of faith [we have the instrumental case of the Great noun pistis, translated by means of doctrine or by means of that which is believed], Abraham, when he was called, obeyed by going out to a place which he was to receive for an inheritance; and he went out, not knowing where he was going. By means of doctrine he lived as an alien in the land of promise, as in a foreign land, dwelling*

*in tents with Isaac and Jacob, fellow heirs of the same promise; for he was looking for the city which has foundations, whose architect and builder is God. (Heb 11:8-10)*

In this particular era, the fourth divine institution, Nationalism, took on new significance as God prepared to form a particular nation by forming a new race of people. God's purpose was not only to constrain evil in the world, but also to create a model form of establishment principles for the protection of human life, freedom, privacy, and property within a nation's own borders. Israel would exemplify the divine laws of establishment. Remember God set up the four divine Institutions:

**Volition:** The right to be dependent upon God, or to act independently of Him.

**Marriage:** Basic organization in any national entity, one man, one woman.

**Family:** the institution set up to raise and train children as far as respect for authority, for the rights of others, for the privacy of others, to respect common law, to respect the property of others, plus many other principles.

**Nationalism:** Genesis 10-11.

God set up the four divine Institutions for the entire human race, not just for believers. It was for the preservation of the human race. It was to allow the angelic conflict can run its course, and so that the human race is free to accept Jesus Christ, or free to reject Him.

Abraham was born a Gentile. He remained so until he reached spiritual maturity at ninety-nine years old. Then with the act of circumcision he became the father of the Jewish race (Gen 17:1-21). There are two very important species that God created for the resolution of the angelic conflict. It's interesting, that in the history of the human race only two new species have been added: Israel was added as the new racial species. The Jew is racially different from all the descendants of Shem, Ham, and Japheth. Then there is the Church as a new spiritual species. There's some interesting principles of correlation with the two New Species: Israel came from the procreation of the first Adam, from Adam all way down to Abram and Sarah. The Church came from the last Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ, as He perpetuated the great power experiment of the hypostatic union into the Church-age, His Bride demanding a new spiritual species for the utilization of all divine power.

*For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive. (1Co 15:22)*

So also it is written, "The first man, Adam, became a living soul." The last Adam [the Lord Jesus Christ] became a life-giving spirit. However, the spiritual [the last Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ] is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual. The first man [Adam] is from the earth, earthy; the second man is from heaven. As is the earthy, so also are those who are earthy; and as is the heavenly, so also are those who are heavenly. And just as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. (1Co 15:45-49)

The new spiritual species originates from regeneration and the mechanics of the baptism of the Holy Spirit. The new racial species of Israel had to be perpetuated through procreation, while in the Church-age the new spiritual species of the royal family of God, is perpetuated through the baptism of the Spirit at the point of regeneration or salvation. In both cases, a birth is involved. We barely have a glimpse of the tremendous genius of the One who controls all things by His Word alone. The Word of God has never failed, and will never fail, and will still come to pass, because He controls history. We all have one major thing that we must face, whether we like it or not, or believe it or not. We do not know what may happen tomorrow (see Jam 4:14). We are all really just a puff of smoke, a mist, visible for a little while and then disappearing into thin air. Here today, gone tomorrow. Yet we have been invited to participate in a plan that has **"Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, And which have not entered the heart of man, All that God has prepared for those who love Him."**

In this period of the Theocentric dispensation of the Gentiles, circumcision was the ritual of confirmation required of Abraham and his descendants. God brought in a new policy for mankind to operate in, circumcision. As usual, the religious crowd perverted the whole thing, so much so that the early church was filled with so-called evangelists and teachers who taught you had to be circumcised

to be saved, or to be spiritual. In the book of Galatians, Paul deals with this issue. What is important is not all the rituals, but the reality behind them, which all begins with falling in love with God. **For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision means anything, but faith [your doctrine, your belief] working through or manifested by your virtue-love. You were running well; who hindered you from obeying the truth? This persuasion did not come from Him who calls you. A little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough (Gal 5:6-9).**

This ritual of circumcision signified the blessings of restored sexual vigor through which God would multiply Abraham's seed (Gen 22:15-18; Rom 4:17-21; Heb 11:11-12).

Abraham's obedience demonstrated his spiritually mature confidence in God's promises. God confirmed His covenant to Abraham's believing son Isaac (Gen 26:3-5), and reconfirmed it to his believing grandson Jacob (Gen 28:13-15; 35:11-12). The Jewish race is spiritual in origin, descending from Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, each of whom was a believer in the Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ (Gen 15:6).

From this period of the Theocentric dispensation of the Gentiles, the age of the Patriarchs, came the twelve sons of Jacob, the founders of the tribes of Israel. Isn't it interesting that the twelve tribes of Israel started by God came this way, through circumcision, the cutting off the male foreskin, and through one man and four women.

*It came about while Israel was dwelling in that land, that Reuben went and lay with Bilhah his father's concubine, and Israel heard of it. Now there were twelve sons of Jacob-the sons of Leah: Reuben, Jacob's firstborn, then Simeon and Levi and Judah and Issachar and Zebulun; the sons of Rachel: Joseph and Benjamin; and the sons of Bilhah, Rachel's maid: Dan and Naphtali; and the sons of Zilpah, Leah's maid: Gad and Asher. These are the sons of Jacob who were born to him in Paddan-aram. (Gen35:22-26)*

Now you may say, that was before God prohibited polygamy, but it was not. Polygamy means to have a plurality of wives. It is the antithesis of monogamy. Polygamy is prohibited by Deu 17:14-17; Mal 2:14-15, and therefore it is a sin. Polygamy violates the divine law of right man and right woman (Gen 2:24, Ecc 9:9, 1Co 7:17). Cases of polygamy in the Bible are always related to reversionism and apostasy.

Jacob had two wives, Leah and Rachel, plus two mistresses. He always had trouble with his sons. The same is true about David, and Solomon. Polygamy is not the will of God, and all polygamous believers have trouble as a result. No man is designed physically or mentally for polygamy. Monogamy is God's order under the laws of divine establishment. Wherever polygamy is recorded in the Word, it is noted as a sin and a historical fact, never condoned. It is specifically forbidden. Many great believers such as Abraham, Joseph, Moses, and Peter were monogamous. Both from the standpoint of the laws of divine establishment and the principles of Bible doctrine, everything relating to right man and right woman are based on monogamy.

God's unconditional covenant with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob is an everlasting covenant and it spread out to the 12 sons of Jacob which began the 12 tribes of Israel. The Jewish race is the most permanent lasting race in all of human history, because its' existence depends on God alone. Israel's eternal heritage is both spiritual and cultural, just as God promised. God has, and will preserve the regenerate Jewish race, and the Jewish nation throughout history and all of eternity. God always keeps His word.

*"Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words shall not pass away." (Mat 24:35)*

*What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who is against us? (Rom 8:31)*

*For, "All flesh is like grass, And all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, And the flower falls off, But the word of the Lord abides forever. "And this is the word which was preached to you.*

*(1Pe 1:24-25)*

The promises to the first Theocentric dispensation period of the Patriarchs, known as Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, will be fulfilled. **And a great sign appeared in heaven a woman** [a reference to Israel] **clothed with the sun** [a reference to Jacob], **and the moon under her feet** [wives of Jacob], **and on her head a crown of twelve stars** [the twelve patriarchs or the twelve tribes of Israel] (**Rev 12:1**).

*It [the new heaven and a new earth] had a great and high wall, with twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels; and names were written on them, which are those of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel [the 12 sons of Jacob]. (Rev 21:12)*

*And the wall of the city had twelve foundation stones, and on them were the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. (Rev 21:14)*

There were 12 tribes of Israel; 12 Apostles, 12 foundations in the heavenly Jerusalem; 12 gates; 12 pearls; 12 angels. One of the many blessings that come to the human race through the Jews is a long-term demonstration of God's faithfulness. God committed Himself to specific promises that He will keep through all the chaos, adversities and troubles in human history. In this lies encouragement for anyone who trusts in Him. The very existence of the Jews is proof for all to see that God keeps His word. Even when the majority of the Jews themselves reject Him, even when the nation slips into degeneracy, even when He must severely discipline His people, the promise still stands. God never ceases to care for His people. Israel has a future, precisely as God swore to Abraham. God's covenant with Israel, and its literal fulfillment, are woven into the fabric of history that remains intact no matter what other dispensations God establishes. The origin of the Jewish race anticipates an important difference between Israel and the Church. God founded the Jews as a new racial species. In contrast, the Church is a new spiritual species (2Co 5:17). Regenerate Jews are God's chosen people and nation, while the Church includes believers of every race and nationality.

The age of the Patriarchs ended with the Jews as slaves in Egypt. Four times in the book of Genesis, God plan for the human race was frustrated by negative volition and satanic influence:

First - by the fall of man in Eden.

Second - by the necessity of the flood (fallen angel infiltration).

Third - the dispersion of Babel.

Fourth - the captivity in Egypt.

In fact, the last four words in the book of Genesis seems to identify man's destiny as he rebelled against God, "a coffin in Egypt."

Moses was born during the age of the patriarchs, but the last forty years of his life belong to the next dispensation: the Age of Israel. Abraham is the father of the Jewish race; Moses is the father of the Jewish nation. As the population of the earth grew and nations increased, God had begun to deal with man in a new way through covenants that heralded the founding of the nation of Israel. Israel would be God's client nation, His protected representative on earth to whom He would entrust the human authorship, and custodianship of written divine revelation. Throughout the world, Israel was the most popular nation around. As the population of the earth continued to increase, and nations began, God had begun to deal with man in a new way, with a new policy, and a new method of communication. God tried every way that He could to give mankind a just and fair hearing, and the ability to respond to His plan. Even for all the other Gentile nations God made a provision when He promised to Abraham:

*And I will make you a great nation, And I will bless you, And make your name great; And so you shall be a blessing; And I will bless those who bless you, And the one who curses you I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed." (Gen 12:2-3)*

This is still true today. The promise to Abraham said that whoever blessed him should be blessed and whoever cursed him should be cursed. This is the main reason why the United States of America is has been, and is still being blessed today. In fact, a definite correlation exists between the rise and



fall of nations and their attitude toward and their treatment of the Jew. Anti-Semitism has destroyed many Individuals, nations, and empires. Germany under Hitler's anti-Semitism is a classic example. Client nations must be careful about their attitude toward the Jews. Individuals, nations, and empires have been blessed by their kind treatment of the Jews. Anti-Semitism will reach its peak when Satan is thrown out of heaven, and he tries to destroy all Jews in the middle of the Tribulation. Think of how exciting this is going to be. When Satan puts so much pressure upon the Jews during the Tribulation period, the Lord Jesus Christ is going to come down from the heavens to rescue His people, the Jews. Even though **He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him (Joh 1:11)**.

# THE DISPENSATION OF ISRAEL. A MAN CALLED MOSES.

07/20/08

We have now completed a brief outline on the first category of the Theocentric dispensations, known as the dispensation of the Gentiles.

This dispensation is broken period is broken down into three parts:

1. The Period of Positive Volition.
2. The Period of Negative Volition.
3. The Period of the Patriarchs.

The peak of the period of the Patriarchs was the divine interjection of the Abrahamic Covenant. **Now the Lord said to Abram, "Go forth from your country, And from your relatives And from your father's house, To the land which I will show you; And I will make you a great nation, And I will bless you, And make your name great; And so you shall be a blessing (Gen 12:1-2).** This is the beginning of God's covenant with Abraham. This covenant guarantees the Jews, and the nation Israel a permanent national existence, and a perpetual title to the land of promise as well as material, and spiritual blessings through Christ. This is why Satan desires to destroy Abraham's seed, Israel. This covenant also guaranteed Gentile nations a share in these blessings:

*"And I will bless those who bless you, And the one who curses you I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed [all the Gentiles who came from Shem, Ham and Japheth]." (Gen 12:3)*

Abraham was born from the genealogical line of Shem, one of Noah's sons, he was a gentile of the Arab race. He remained so until he reached spiritual maturity at ninety-nine years old. Then with the act of circumcision, Abraham became the first Jew, and the father of the Jewish race (Gen 17:1-21). This ritual of circumcision signified the blessings of restored sexual vigor through which God would **"multiply Abraham's seed as the stars of the heavens."** (Gen 22:15-18; Rom 4:17-21; Heb 11:11-12). Abraham's obedience demonstrated his spiritually mature confidence in the promises of God. God also confirmed His covenant to Abraham's believing son, Isaac (Gen 26:3-5), and reconfirmed it to his believing grandson, Jacob (Gen 28:13-15; 35:11-12). The Jewish race is spiritual in origin, descending from Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, each of whom were believers in Adonai Eloheinu Adonai Echad, who is their Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ (Gen 15:6).

From this period of the Theocentric dispensation of the Gentiles, came the twelve sons of Jacob, the founders of the tribes of Israel. The twelve tribes of Israel came through circumcision, and through one man and four women. Jacob had two wives and two mistresses. Israel would be God's client nation, His protected representative on earth to whom He would entrust the human authorship and custodianship of written divine revelation. The age of the Patriarchs was around 2,050 B.C. to 1441 B.C. While there was no written canon of Scripture at that time, the period is covered from Gen 12 to Exo 12. The age of the Patriarchs ended with the Egyptians in control [Egypt represents the cosmic system] and the Jews in slavery, another dispensation ending with man's failure. The Promised Land was theirs as long as they remained in the land, but, of course, there was failure. Jacob led the people to Egypt, and the judgment of slavery was brought on them. However, God again graciously provided a deliverer, and in the process of deliverance killed their oppressors.

The age of the Patriarchs is the transition into the age of the Jews and Israel. That transition is made by Moses, one of the greatest men in the Old Testament. Moses is a descendant from the tribe of Levi, and is the greatest born-again genius of the Old Testament. He was born into slavery while the Jews were slaves to the Egyptians. Moses was a handsome man, and an extremely strong and

powerful man. Moses was a genius in the field of music, literature, and engineering; he built two great cities in Egypt. He was a military genius, an administrative genius, and he had doctrine, common sense, good manners and wisdom. There was no unbalance of any kind in his life. He was one of the reasons why Egypt became great.

Moses was a baby when the order to execute all Jewish children under a certain age was given: *Now a new king arose over Egypt, who did not know Joseph. And he said to his people, "Behold, the people of the sons of Israel are more and mightier than we. Come, let us deal wisely with them, lest they multiply and in the event of war, they also join themselves to those who hate us, and fight against us, and depart from the land. So they appointed taskmasters over them to afflict them with hard labor. And they built for Pharaoh storage cities, Pithom and Raamses. But the more they afflicted them, the more they multiplied and the more they spread out, so that they were in dread of the sons of Israel. And the Egyptians compelled the sons of Israel to labor rigorously; and they made their lives bitter with hard labor in mortar and bricks and at all kinds of labor in the field, all their labors which they rigorously imposed on them. Then the king of Egypt spoke to the Hebrew midwives, one of whom was named Shiphrah, and the other was named Puah; and he said, "When you are helping the Hebrew women to give birth and see them upon the birthstool, if it is a son, then you shall put him to death; but if it is a daughter, then she shall live." But the midwives feared God, and did not do as the king of Egypt had commanded them, but let the boys live. So the king of Egypt called for the midwives, and said to them, "Why have you done this thing, and let the boys live?" And the midwives said to Pharaoh, "Because the Hebrew women are not as the Egyptian women; for they are vigorous, and they give birth before the midwife can get to them." So God was good to the midwives, and the people multiplied, and became very mighty. And it came about because the midwives feared God, that He established households for them. Then Pharaoh commanded all his people, saying, "Every son who is born you are to cast into the Nile, and every daughter you are to keep alive." Now a man from the house of Levi went and married a daughter of Levi. And the woman conceived and bore a son; and when she saw that he was beautiful, she hid him for three months. But when she could hide him no longer, she got him a wicker basket and covered it over with tar and pitch. Then she put the child into it, and set it among the reeds by the bank of the Nile. And his sister stood at a distance to find out what would happen to him. Then the daughter of Pharaoh came down to bathe at the Nile, with her maidens walking alongside the Nile; and she saw the basket among the reeds and sent her maid, and she brought it to her. When she opened it, she saw the child, and behold, the boy was crying. And she had pity on him and said, "This is one of the Hebrews' children." Then his sister said to Pharaoh's daughter, "Shall I go and call a nurse for you from the Hebrew women, that she may nurse the child for you?" And Pharaoh's daughter said to her, "Go ahead." So the girl went and called the child's mother. Then Pharaoh's daughter said to her, "Take this child away and nurse him for me and I shall give you your wages." So the woman took the child and nursed him. And the child grew, and she brought him to Pharaoh's daughter, and he became her son. And she named him Moses, and said, "Because I drew him out of the water." (Exo 1:8-2:4)*

It is here that we see the Jews being delivered from slavery, and led to a new country, and a new way of life with God. Here we have the giving of the Law, and the promise of the Mosaic Covenant. Here we see the erecting of that remarkable symbolical structure, the Tabernacle. Here Moses grows up, and goes forth to his mighty task. Here we mark the transition of the Israelites from being a plurality of Jewish tribes into one nation. Here is the amazing spectacle of the Exodus and the history of the Jews.

Moses was saved from the decree of the Pharaoh to kill the Jewish male boys as they came forth from the womb. His parents refused to comply with the order, and his mother, by an act of great faith, put Moses in a basket, sealed it up, and floated it down the Nile River. Moses ended up where the

daughter of the Pharaoh was bathing. She opened the basket, saw the beautiful baby, and adopted it. She called him Moses which in the Hebrew (Mosheh) means drawn from the water.

Moses spent 40 years living in the palace as an Egyptian prince. He was going to be the next Pharaoh of Egypt, but several things happened. Moses discovered his origin (that of a Jew), he believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, and he grew spiritually. When he departed from Egypt he refused to accept the crown, and saw Him (the Lord Jesus Christ) who was invisible.

*By faith Moses, when he was born, was hidden for three months by his parents, because they saw he was a beautiful child; and they were not afraid of the king's edict. By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; choosing rather to endure ill-treatment with the people of God, than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin; considering the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt [a reference to the riches of the world]; for he was looking to the reward. (Heb 11:23-26)*

Moses wanted to liberate the Jews from Egyptian slavery, but he tried to do it in the energy of the flesh, and that's when he killed one of the Egyptian slave-drivers. He was rejected by the Jews at that time. All of his life he would be one of the greatest leaders, and yet he was rejected by his own people. Moses was actually a type of the Lord Jesus Christ in many ways:

1. He was of lowly poor parents and birth; so was the Lord Jesus Christ in respect of His flesh, or human nature, being born of a poor virgin.
2. Moses was no sooner born, but he was exposed to the wrath of Pharaoh king of Egypt, who sought to put him to death; Christ in his infancy was sought by king Herod to be slain; but both by God's extraordinary providence were delivered.
3. Moses was of a meek and sweet disposition, above all that dwelt upon the earth, yet full of zeal for God and indignation against sin and evil; Christ was a pattern of meekness and humility.
4. Moses was appointed by God, and set to deliver Israel out of Pharaoh's cruel bondage; so Jesus Christ was appointed, and sent to deliver all of the Israel of God from the cruel bondage of Satan, a heavy oppression and burden of sin.
5. Moses was sent to lead Israel towards Canaan; Jesus Christ leads us to heaven, the type of Canaan. Moses led Israel unto the sight of the promised land; but Jesus Christ leads us into heaven, the ultimate land of promise.
6. Moses gave the law, having first received it from the hand of God; Jesus Christ gave us the law of the Gospel, as He received it from His Father.
7. Moses performed many mighty miracles in Egypt, at the Red Sea, and in the wilderness, to confirm the Law, and to show Israel that he was really sent of God; Jesus Christ performed many strange and wonderful miracles, by sea and land, in towns and deserts, to manifest His glory, to show He was sent of God and to confirm His doctrine.
8. Moses instituted the Passover; Christ, the true Moses, instituted the supper.
9. Moses in his faithfulness was a type of Christ; he was faithful as a servant; he did all things exactly according to the pattern showed him on the mount; Christ in all things was faithful as a Son (Heb 3:5-6).
10. Moses married an Ethiopian, a stranger, from the black race; the Lord Jesus Christ embraced the Gentiles, who were strangers to God, and by reason of sin, as dark as sin and evil could make them.
11. Moses sweetened the bitter waters of Marah, by a tree cast into it; Christ sweetens all our afflictions by the means of His cross.
12. Moses led Israel through the Red sea; Christ leads His Church through a sea of tribulation.

Moses fled into the desert, and spent 39-40 years, and then he came to the burning bush experience (Exo 3:1-6). Eventually he led the Jews to freedom from slavery. Then the Exodus began, and that story is a marvelous story about one of the greatest man who ever lived. The patience of this man, his courage, mental attitude, marvelous spiritual life and the humility of this man was fantastic.

In Num 12:3 he is called the most humble man on the face of the earth. At one time everyone turned against him including his sister Miriam and all the emotional dimwits who followed her:

*"When the Lord your God shall bring you into the land where you are entering to possess it, and shall clear away many nations before you, the Hittites and the Girgashites and the Amorites and the Canaanites and the Perizzites and the Hivites and the Jebusites, seven nations greater and stronger than you, and when the Lord your God shall deliver them before you, and you shall defeat them, then you shall utterly destroy them. You shall make no covenant with them and show no favor to them. Furthermore, you shall not intermarry with them; you shall not give your daughters to their sons, nor shall you take their daughters for your sons. (Deu 7:1-3)*

After telling the Jews not to intermarry with other races, Moses married an Ethiopian woman, who was his second wife, and his sister Miriam began to malign them. In the maligning she ended up with leprosy. **Then Miriam and Aaron spoke against Moses because of the Cushite woman whom he had married (for he had married a Cushite woman) (Num 12:1).** Cushites were sons and daughters of Ham, and were dark skinned people. According to Deu 7:3 and Exo 34:11-16, Moses taught against intermarriage, but here he married an Ethiopian woman. Therefore, his sister became very upset (Num 12:2-10).

The Jews became a nation when God led them out of Egypt, culminating that transitional age of the patriarchs in which He established the Jewish race. God says in effect, "Alright, mankind I establish a race called the Hebrews, now I'll establish from them a nation called Israel and Jews." As in the age of the Jewish patriarchs, the human race still consisted of a large population divided into many languages, cultures, and nations. Salvation continued to be by faith in Christ as He was revealed. With the Exodus, the Jews being set free from slavery, God established one particular nation to represent Him as His missionary agency on earth. The spiritual heritage of Israel continued, as it had begun through the faith of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: the Jews expressed their faith toward God as they offered the Passover lamb. This chosen nation would be given a divine legacy in writing, and would manifest God's character as never before in history (Deu 4:6-8, 32-40). God made this nation the recipient, custodian, and communicator of the written canon of Scripture. Not only would Israel furnish the human authors of the Old Testament canon, but the history and function of Israel herself would be recorded forever in Scripture. The God of Israel, who is Jesus Christ, the second person of the Trinity (Luk 1:68), personally ruled the theocratic kingdom.

To communicate His grace to mankind through His chosen nation, God gave Moses a code of law for Israel. The Mosaic Law is a remarkable legal system that defined freedom and civil responsibility in Israel for believers and unbelievers alike. The Law also set forth the precise spiritual ceremonies by which the Jews would worship God. Because their God was also their king, it was the responsibility of everyone in Israel to observe the Mosaic Law as part of Jewish national life, although the spiritual provisions were properly meaningful for believers. As a single, integrated whole, the Mosaic Law focused on the Tabernacle (and later the Temple) where the presence of God resided. Offerings, rituals, and holy day observances conducted there anticipated the day when God would come in the flesh as the promised Messiah. For the orderly conduct of these rituals and for the oral communication of God's written Word, the Law instituted the Levitical priesthood (Deu 31:9-13; 33:10). The Mosaic Law was a new phenomenon, a thorough system of private and public duty in Israel under the immediate rule of God. This was the time in human history, of the dispensation of direct revelation and writings from God. God had everything written down that man needed to know. Now, there was a divine manual for man to follow, there were no excuses.

There was now a book filled with divine guidance and commands for man to live a long life and prosper, even for the unbeliever. Everything man needed to know would now be in written form. Would man respond to this way of divine truth as it would now be revealed? Of course, you know the answer is No! The written word is given, and they rejected it. In the next dispensation, the Word will

become flesh, a member of the human race and dwell among us, and man will even reject that (Joh 1:14). The rituals prescribed by the Mosaic Law were a dramatic "shadow of what is to come" (Col 2:17; Heb 8:5; 10:1). They were types and teaching aids portraying Christ, salvation, and fellowship with God. The Levitical priesthood's function, and every individual's daily life included participation in ceremonies that depicted these tremendous doctrines. When Christ later came in the flesh, the reality fulfilled the shadows, making this magnificent heritage of rituals suddenly obsolete (Heb 8:13). A new code was required, and a new code was provided.

Now in the Church Age the believer's way of life manifests the all-powerful reality rather than the shadow. The ritual plan of God remains part of Scripture, documenting God's faithfulness and describing Christ's person and work. Therefore, an in-depth study of the Age of Israel, found in Exodus 12 through the book of Malachi, is an essential and highly instructive part of every Christian's knowledge of Bible doctrine. Israel demonstrated, and communicated the grace of God, the greatest expression of which was that she would be the nation through which the Savior would be born into the world. The sequence of promises that guarantee the coming of Christ, beginning with the "Seed" revealed to Adam and Eve (Gen 3:15), and continuing with the promises made to Noah (Gen 9:26), proceeded to become more specific. The Messiah would come from the race of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; from the nation of Israel; from the tribe of Judah; from the family of Jesse; from the royal lineage of King David.

Since the founding of the Jewish race, the promises of the messianic line coincide with the covenants between God and His chosen people. The nation of Israel is defined by five divine covenants. The first two, sworn during the age of the patriarchs, prepared the way for founding the nation. God made the remaining three after the Jewish race had become the Jewish nation.

1. The Abrahamic Covenant (Gen 12:1-3; 13:16; 22:15-18; 26:4; 28:14; 35:11; Exo 6:2-8).
2. The Palestinian Covenant (Gen. 13:15; 15:18-21; 26:3-5; 28:13-15; 35:12; Exo 6:4,8; Nm 34:1-12; Deu 30:1-9; Jos 1:2-4; Jer 32:36-44; Eze 11:16-21; 36:21-38).
3. The Mosaic Law (Gen-Deu). Codex I: The Freedom Code (the Decalogue, or Ten Commandments). Codex II: The Spiritual Code (including a complete shadow presentation of Christ and His saving work [Christology and soteriology]). Codex III: The Establishment Code (civil statutes for Israel).
4. The Davidic Covenant (2Sa 7:8-17; Psa 89:20-37).
5. The New Covenant to Israel (Jer 31:31-34; cf. Heb 8:8-12; 10:15-17). The New Covenant then was made with the Jewish people. Confirmation of this covenant is giving in the statement in Isa 61:8-9, where it is called everlasting and again in Eze 37:21-28.

The following points are to be observed:

Israel is to be re-gathered.

Israel is to be one nation ruled by one king.

Israel is no longer to be idolatrous but to be cleansed and forgiven.

Israel is to dwell forever in the land after the re-gathering.

The covenant of peace is to be "everlasting."

God's tabernacle is to be with them, i.e. He will be present with them in a visible way.

Israel is to be known among the Gentiles as a nation blessed of God.

This covenant has to do with the regeneration, forgiveness and justification of Israel.

# THE DISPENSATION OF THE MOST DRAMATIC EXHIBITION OF DIVINE LOVE. THE HYPOSTATIC UNION.

08/03/08

We have begun a study on the dispensation of the most dramatic exhibition of divine love: the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union. This is the period of time when God became a member of the human race and lived upon on this earth. This falls under the Christocentric dispensations, where the Lord Jesus Christ is the center or the member of the Trinity who is to be glorified. There are two Christocentric dispensations: the first is the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union which refers to the period of time when Jesus Christ, who is God, lived on this earth around 4-5, B.C. to His death, burial, resurrection, and ascension, around 30 A.D. The second is the Church-age, which began around 30 A.D. and will end at the Rapture of the Church. The dispensation of the Hypostatic-union was the period of time when God revealed the ultimate manifestation of His love, character and nature to all of His creation. It was a period of time in human history when, for the first time, a member of the human race fulfilled the Law. **"Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill" (Mat 5:17).** It was the first time a member of the human race functioned under the power of the Holy Spirit to fulfill the plan of God (Heb 9:14). It was also a period of time when a member of the human race became the prototype to all believers on how to live the spiritual life **(Eph 5:1-2).**

The dispensation of the Hypostatic-union is the center point of all the dispensations, and therefore all of human history. This was the period time in human history when God chose to reveal the ultimate manifestation of His love for us, the Cross. The Lord Jesus Christ would fulfill the Old, the Mosaic Law, and introduce the new, the spiritual life for the Church-age. That is why He is called the "chief cornerstone."

*So then you are no longer strangers and aliens, but you are fellow citizens with the saints, and are of God's household, having been built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus Himself being the corner {stone}, in whom the whole building, being fitted together is growing into a holy temple in the Lord; in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit. (Eph 2:19-22)*

In the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union, Jesus Christ became the foundation for two spiritual buildings: Israel and the Church. While both have the same person as their foundation, they are entirely different buildings. The Church is under construction today waiting to be completed; while Israel will not be constructed, and completed until the Millennium. At the beginning of the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union, and the greatest demonstration of divine power in man, beginning with the virgin birth, Jesus Christ became the foundation for the future spiritual building called Israel. At the termination of the dispensation of the Hypostatic union (which was resurrection, ascension, and session of Jesus Christ), Jesus Christ was seated at the right hand of the Father, at which point He received His third royal title, King of kings and Lord of lords, making Him the foundation for the building now under construction, the Church.

*For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles - if indeed you have heard of the dispensation of God's grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. (Eph 3:1-3)*

The apostle Paul becomes our living example of the grace of God given to mankind the power, and the ability to love, worship, serve and honor God even though we possess an old sin nature (OSN). The

dispensation of the Hypostatic-union, and the dispensation of the Church-age are at the hub of human history. The term "Hypostatic-union" is a theological term for the incarnate person of Christ, the union of deity and humanity, or God and man. At the virgin birth, God the Son took upon Himself true humanity, and became a new person, the God-Man, the unique person of the universe (Joh 1:1-14; Rom 1:2-4; Phi 2:5-11; 1Ti 3:16).

*Paul, a bond-servant of Christ Jesus, called as an apostle, set apart for the gospel of God, which He promised beforehand through His prophets in the holy Scriptures, concerning His Son, who was born of a descendant of David according to the flesh, who was declared the Son of God with power by the resurrection from the dead, according to the Spirit of holiness, Jesus Christ our Lord, whose are the fathers, and from whom is the Christ [the Messiah, God] according to the flesh [He was revealed in the flesh, the human body], who is over all [He is over all, complete sovereignty], God [the Lord Jesus Christ is called God in this passage] blessed forever. Amen. (Rom 9:1-5)*

The Hypostatic-union is the fact that in the person of Jesus Christ there are two natures, undiminished deity and true humanity in one person forever. There is no mixture of the two natures, He is not half-God and half-man. Therefore He is called the God-man. For example, sometimes our Lord would say things from His deity only: **The Jews said to Him, "Now we know that You have a demon. Abraham died, and the prophets {also}; and You say, 'If anyone keeps My word, he shall never taste of death.' Surely You are not greater than our father Abraham, who died? The prophets died too; whom do You make Yourself out {to be}?" Jesus answered, "If I glorify Myself, My glory is nothing; it is My Father who glorifies Me, of whom you say, 'He is our God'; and you have not come to know Him, but I know Him; and if I say that I do not know Him, I shall be a liar like you, but I do know Him, and keep His word. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw {it} and was glad." The Jews therefore said to Him, "You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham?" Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I am [or before Abraham came into being, I existed eternally, because I am the great I am]" (Joh 8:52-58).**

Sometimes the Lord Jesus Christ would speak from His humanity, and not His Deity: **After this, Jesus [notice He's called Jesus, emphasis on His humanity], knowing that all things had already been accomplished, in order that the Scripture might be fulfilled, said, "I am thirsty" (Joh 19:28).** Deity does not get thirsty, only humanity does. **"You heard that I said to you, 'I go away, and I will come to you.' If you loved Me, you would have rejoiced, because I go to the Father; for the Father is greater than I (Joh 14:28).** Here is speaking from His humanity! **"For just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, even so the Son also gives life to whom He wishes. [That's from His deity] "For not even the Father judges anyone, but He has given all judgment to the Son," in order that all may honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him (Joh 5:21-23).** He's now speaking as God, from His deity.

Sometimes He made statements from both natures, or from His hypostatic-union. **"What then if you should behold the Son of Man [humanity] ascending where He [deity] was before? (Joh 6:62).**

It's vital that you understand the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union, because there are cults out there that will point to scriptures where the Father is said to be greater than the Son, and they deny the deity of our Lord Jesus Christ. Our Lord said, **"I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but through Me" (Joh 14:6).**

*"Let it be known to all of you, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead--by this {name} this man [the sick man that Peter healed] stands here before you in good health. He [Jesus Christ] is the stone which was rejected by you, the builders [a reference to verse 5, the Jewish rulers and elders and scribes gathered*



*together in Jerusalem], {but} which became the very corner {stone.} [a reference to our subject, dispensationalism]. "There is salvation in NO ONE ELSE; for there is no other name under heaven that has been given among men, by which we must be saved. Our Lord is the only way, the truth, and the life and; no one comes to the Father, but through HIM" (Act 4:10-12).*

Why the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union, when Christ, who is God, had to become a man?

1. Jesus Christ had to become perfect humanity to be our Savior, to be our high priest, to be the mediator between God and man, and to fulfill the promise of the Davidic covenant which said that David would have a son who would rule forever.
2. Jesus Christ had to become true humanity to be the Savior of the world because as God, Jesus Christ could not have anything to do with sin except judge and reject sin. Only humanity could bear our sins.
3. Undiminished deity took upon Himself true humanity in order to be the Savior, **Since then the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise also partook of the same** [the same nature - flesh and blood], **that through death He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil; and might deliver those who through fear of death were subject to slavery all their lives (Heb 2:14-15).** This was the fulfillment of the promise of the Abrahamic covenant.
4. Jesus Christ had to become true and perfect humanity in order to receive the imputation and judgment of our sins on the Cross (1Pe 2:24).
5. Jesus Christ had to become true humanity to be the mediator between God and man (Job 9:2; Job 9:32-33; 1Ti 2:5-6). He had to be equal with both God and mankind to be a mediator between both parties. Therefore, Jesus Christ had to be both undiminished deity and true humanity in one person forever.
6. Jesus Christ had to become true humanity to be a priest. A priest must be a man in order to represent man before God. Jesus Christ became true humanity to be our high priest after the order, or pattern, of Melchizedek (Heb 7:4-5, 7:14; 7:28; Heb 10:5; 10:10-14). What does that mean? In Psa 110, Christ is the One being addressed; the Father is speaking to the Son. **(A Psalm of David.) The Lord says to my Lord: "Sit at My right hand, Until I make Thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet. The Lord will stretch forth Thy strong scepter from Zion, {saying}, "Rule in the midst of Thine enemies." Thy people will volunteer freely in the day of Thy power; In holy array, from the womb of the dawn, Thy youth are to Thee {as} the dew. The Lord has sworn and will not change His mind, "Thou art a priest forever According to the order of Melchizedek" (Psa 110:1-3).** Melchizedek was a true historical person rather than a theophany as some teach. Melchizedek was a king, he was a priest under the family priesthood system, therefore, a perfect illustration and a perfect pattern of the unique priesthood of the Lord Jesus Christ - for the Lord Jesus Christ is a king as well as a priest.
7. Jesus Christ had to also become true humanity to be a king and rule forever. He had to be the son of David to fulfill the Davidic covenant to Israel (2Sa 7:8-16; Psa 89:20-37).

The dispensation of the Hypostatic-union was therefore the most unique expression of the fantastic power of God ever known to man. It began with the virgin birth. Long before 70 AD when Jerusalem was destroyed, Israel stopped functioning as a client nation to God. Around 4 B.C., we have the virgin birth of our Lord Jesus Christ which was the beginning of the first Christocentric dispensation, the Hypostatic-union, or what we call the Incarnation of Jesus Christ. During the time of the dispensation of the Hypostatic Union, Judea was under Rome and was not a client nation. The only reason Judea was still there was so that the Jews in their homeland could have the freedom to make a decision regarding the Lord Jesus Christ as their Messiah. This is why they were preserved, and they were given one more chance. Starting with the dispensation of the Church-age, in 30 A.D., God then another 40 years before Jerusalem was destroyed. During that time God used the gift of tongues to evangelize the Jews. For, as the apostle Paul said, **For indeed Jews ask for signs. (1Co 1:22).**

Therefore, in 1Co 14:22 **So then tongues are for a sign, not to those who believe, but to unbelievers;** So, if the Jews wanted another sign, here it is, the gift of tongues.

When the day of Pentecost had come, there were Jews living in Jerusalem, from every nation around the world. **And when this sound occurred, the multitude came together, and were bewildered, because they were each one hearing them speak in his own language. And they were amazed and marveled, saying, "Why, are not all these who are speaking Galileans? "And how is it that we each hear {them} in our own language to which we were born? "Parthians and Medes and Elamites, and residents of Mesopotamia, Judea and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the districts of Libya around Cyrene, and visitors from Rome, both Jews and proselytes, Cretans and Arabs-- we hear them in our {own} tongues speaking of the mighty deeds of God" (Act 2:6-10).** This was a sign fulfilling a Jewish prophecy, the sign of tongues was given to the Jews from 30 A.D., to 70 A.D., just as Isaiah had prophesied in Isa 28:11-13).

In the dispensation of the Hypostatic union we have the fulfillment of the first prophecy given to mankind **And I will put enmity Between you [Satan] and the woman, And between your seed [the devil is the father of the unbelievers, Joh 8:44] and her seed [the Lord Jesus Christ]; He shall bruise you on the head [take away the poison and power of the serpent], And you shall bruise him on the heel [a reference to the unfair and unjust treatment of our Lord prior to the Cross]" (Gen 3:15).**

The dispensation of the Hypostatic-union began with the virgin birth (the incarnation) which refers to the only impeccable birth in human history, the birth of the Lord Jesus Christ. The virgin birth means that no male was involved in the procreation of our Lord. The scriptures are crystal clear on this (Isa 7:14; Luk 1:35).

The Lord Jesus Christ came into the world without the imputation of Adam's original sin, and therefore without an OSN. The virgin birth was necessary if the Lord Jesus Christ was to be offered on the Cross as a perfect sacrifice to God the Father for us. The necessity of the virgin birth is based on the fact that the OSN is passed down to each member of the human race through the male species. This is because the woman was deceived in the Garden, the man was not (1Ti 2:14). Mary had an OSN just like everyone else, in fact, she admitted that she was a sinner, and in need of a Savior (Luk 1:46-47). Mary also offered a sacrifice for sin according to the prescriptions of Leviticus chapter 12, as recorded in Luk 2:21-24. That she was a virgin at the conception of Christ is evidenced by the Biblical record of Luk 1:34. The virgin birth therefore becomes very important for all of us to understand as it relates to the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union. The virgin birth was the only way to become a member of the human race apart from spiritual death and the imputation of Adam's original sin to the genetically formed OSN. No virgin birth means no salvation. The Lord Jesus Christ had to enter the human race without an OSN, and live a perfect life to qualify as our Savior on the Cross. Not only did He have to be born minus spiritual death, but He also had get to the Cross minus spiritual death. That means for 33 years He had to live a life free from personal sin (Heb 4:15).

The first Adam was tempted and he fell, the last Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ, did not. In His deity, He was **not able** to sin, but in His humanity, he was **able not** to sin. No one was ever tempted like the Lord Jesus Christ. He had years of intense pressure because Satan tried to head off from the Cross, when the Lord arrived at the Cross He was impeccable. When He was hanging on the Cross He was hanging there as the only member of the human race who was totally innocent and sinless. The virgin birth, therefore, allowed the Lord Jesus Christ to accomplish two victories in the Angelic conflict. The first victory - the First Advent which consummated with the cross, the death, burial, resurrection, ascension, and session of the Lord Jesus Christ. The second victory will be at the Second

Advent, where the Lord Jesus Christ takes over the ruler-ship of the world and "makes His enemies His footstool."

So, beginning with the virgin birth, our Lord offered up Himself to satisfy the justice and righteousness of God. The human body of our Lord Jesus Christ was offered to God the Father by the humanity of Jesus Christ. He was impeccable even during those 3 hours on the Cross. All of the time prior to the Cross and on the Cross, He remained perfect, impeccable and without sin. In fact, in Mat 27:12 **while He was being accused by the chief priests and elders, He made no answer.** He remained perfect, impeccable and without sin. **The soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole {Roman} cohort around Him. And they stripped Him, and put a scarlet robe on Him (Mat 27:27-28).** He remained perfect, impeccable and without sin. **And after weaving a crown of thorns, they put it on His head, and a reed in His right hand; and they kneeled down before Him and mocked Him, saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!" And they spat on Him, and took the reed and {began} to beat Him on the head.** [He still remained perfect, impeccable and without sin]. **And after they had mocked Him, they took His robe off and put His garments on Him, and led Him away to crucify {Him} (Mat 27:29-31).** But He still remained perfect, impeccable and without sin.

*And when they had come to a place called Golgotha, which means Place of a Skull, they gave Him wine to drink mingled with gall; and after tasting {it,} He was unwilling to drink. And when they had crucified Him, they divided up His garments among themselves, casting lots; [He still remained perfect, impeccable and without sin]. and sitting down, they {began} to keep watch over Him there. And they put up above His head the charge against Him which read, "THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS." [But, He still remained perfect, impeccable and without sin]. At that time two robbers were crucified with Him, one on the right and one on the left. And those passing by were hurling abuse at Him, wagging their heads, and saying, "You who {are going to} destroy the temple and rebuild it in three days, save Yourself! If You are the Son of God, come down from the cross." In the same way the chief priests also, along with the scribes and elders, were mocking {Him,} and saying, "He saved others; He cannot save Himself. He is the King of Israel; let Him now come down from the cross, and we shall believe in Him. "He trusts in God; let Him deliver {Him} now, if He takes pleasure in Him; for He said, 'I am the Son of God.'" And the robbers also who had been crucified with Him were casting the same insult at Him. (Mat 27:34-44).*

He still remained perfect, impeccable and without sin. All of the time, prior to the cross and upon the cross, He remained perfect, righteous and without sin. He never became sin, which is a blasphemous doctrine. He did however become a "sin offering." He was being judged the righteous one for the unrighteous ones.

While God the Father used both His justice and omnipotence, to judge the Lord Jesus Christ, it was the omnipotence of God the Holy Spirit that sustained the humanity and impeccability of Christ. Therefore, for those 3 hours when He was being judged for our sins He was the sinless sin offering. The dispensation of the Hypostatic union was therefore the most unique expression of the fantastic power of God ever known to man.

Every problem and adversity our Lord faced, He faced by operating in the power of the Holy Spirit revealing the tremendous assets we would have as members of the Church-age, His future church.

There were six trials for the Lord Jesus Christ, and with the exception of one short interrogation, these all six trials were unfair and unjust in every way. On trial was the unique Person of the universe undiminished deity and true humanity combined in one Person forever, the Lord Jesus Christ! And, how did He face these problems and pass these different tests, as He glorified God the Father

in the midst of the appeal trial of Satan and in the fallen angels, in the historical phase of the angelic conflict called human history?

Every problem and adversity He faced, He faced by operating in the power of the Holy Spirit. We all need to learn how to handle the injustices of life and the unfairness that we will all inevitably all face. That is by learning from our Lord how to operate in the power of the Holy Spirit by giving the matter over into the Lord's hands. "Servants, be submissive to your masters with all respect, not only to the good and gentle masters, but also to those who are perverse and unreasonable ones; for this is grace, if for the sake of conscience toward God, anyone bears up under sorrows when suffering unjustly." (1Pe 2:18-19).

Some people in authority are perverse, but you are just as responsible to submit to their authority. You serve them and do your best job as unto the Lord. And such a believer has a PVTD and desires to fulfill their calling. The weak believer complains and rejects authority, and so becomes a loser. It is very important to have a soul filled with doctrine so that you can handle unjust treatment in the same manner that you handle fair treatment. We must be very careful that we do not allow our conscience to become filled with garbage when we encounter the injustices of life and the unfairness that we observe. If you have a strong conscience, you will leave it in the Lord's hands and those who treated you unfairly will be put to shame without you ever trying to defend yourself or answer back

# THE TREE OF LIFE FROM THE N.E. BIBLE CONFERENCE 2008.

08/10/08

We begin this conference with this phrase: **"To whom much is given, much is required"** Our Lord said **"Everyone who has been given much shall much be required; and to whom they entrusted much, of him they will ask all the more"** (LUK 12:48).

*"Be on your guard! If your brother sins, rebuke him; and if he repents, forgive him. (LUK 17:3)*

The Greek word "aphiemi" translated "forgive" means to give up resentment, excuse a guilty party, to forget an offense never bringing it up again, not even to discuss it. It means that you never remind someone of their past.

Looking back at the obstacles that many of you have overcome the past few years, I am thankful for your continued support which has allowed this ministry to go forward. Only in Heaven will it be revealed all you have done. Our Lord said **"For whoever gives you a cup of water to drink because of your name as followers of Christ, truly I say to you, he shall not lose his reward"** (MAR 9:41). Many of you have had the privilege to overcome the obstacles that Satan and his kingdom of darkness have placed in your path. God has been preparing all of us, as a body of believers, to learn the importance of one word: LOVE.

We are going to look at the doctrinal principle of first taking care of your soul, and by that I mean your relationship with God, and then your household, your family, your church, etc. After those areas of your life are taken care of you're ready to go into the entire world. That's why we read **but you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be My witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and then even to the remotest part of the earth"** (ACT 1:8). Consider what our Lord said to His disciples after He had risen from the dead, **"And that repentance for forgiveness of sins should be proclaimed in his name to all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem."** (LUK 24:47).

We must take care of the areas closest to us before we can take care of those who are at a distance. It all begins with you and your personal love for God. **"Do not stare at me because I am swarthy [burnt from the heat], For the sun has burned me. My mother's sons were angry with me; They made me caretaker of the vineyards, But I have not taken care of my own vineyard. (SOS 1:6).** As an application for us, this is a picture of a believer getting burnt out from serving others, not setting aside enough time to nourish themselves through the intake of doctrine, prayer and fellowship with God. Our Lord taught us to care about fulfilling the Father's plan, glorifying God in the angelic conflict, and not letting others hinder you from your calling, and your personal sense of destiny (LUK 14:18; LUK 14:19; LUK 14:26; MAT 10:35). As we go on in this passage we read, **"Catch the foxes for us, The little foxes that are ruining the vineyards, While our vineyards are in blossom"** (SOS 2:15). This verse deals with the matter removing certain hindrances in our life. Spiritually, it refers to the blossoming vines spoken of in verse 13, these vines representing bearing the fruit of spiritual life. Big foxes go after the fruit of the vine, but little foxes break the tender vine branches. When damage is done by big foxes, you still have a chance to bear some fruit, but with the damage done by little foxes, the chance of bearing fruit is nearly destroyed. Unless we are very attentive, the spiritual life can be completely spoiled by little foxes. If certain areas in our life are unwatched those things can ruin the spiritual life. Don't let the little things spoil your spiritual life, the petty things, personality conflicts, etc. Don't let the details of life, even more importantly, the pressures of serving God, draw life out of you, instead be renewed by the intake of doctrine, and the power of prayer. The apostle John writes the same thing when he tells us that we need to have a deposit made before we make a withdrawal.

*By this the love of God was manifested in us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world so that we might live through Him. In this is love, not that we loved God, but [here is the deposit made for us] that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another. (1JO 4:9-11).*

The secret to loving is living as one who knows he is loved. This is one of the most important principles in relationships. Remember Paul's prayer to the Ephesians; **so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; and that you, being rooted and grounded in love, (EPH 3:17)**. Are you grounded in love, that is impersonal unconditional love, which has virtue, or do you easily fall apart? Many people tell us to love, but only God teaches us how to love, and then gives us the power to do it. This is what God commands: **And this is His commandment, that we believe in the name of His Son Jesus Christ [and then after salvation, what?], and that we love [have impersonal unconditional love which has virtue] one another, just as He commanded us (1JO 3:23)**. How can we forgive the back-stabbers we meet, love, and marry? How can we love as God loves us? We want to, we even long to, but how can we? We can, simply by abiding in the One who is love, and learning the way He thinks. **"Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, so neither {can} you, unless you abide in Me," (JOH 15:4)**.

The apostle Paul gave us the finest chapter on impersonal unconditional love in 1CO 13:4. Impersonal unconditional love, which is a virtue that you can have by studying God's word and applying it, **is patient, kind, and is not jealous; does not brag, and is not arrogant**. In 1CO 13:5 impersonal unconditional love **does not act improper, is never selfish, is not resentful, does not think evil**. How many believers do you know that have these qualities? In 1CO 13:6-7 impersonal unconditional love, which is a virtue that you can have by studying God's word, **does not gloat over other men's sins, rejoices with doctrine; overlooks faults, believes the best, hopes all things, endures all things**. Are you patient, kind, not jealous? Are you arrogant, do you act unbecomingly; are you easily provoked? Do you rejoice in unrighteousness, do you bear all things, believe all things, hope all things, endure all things? If you failed in these areas, remember that you are what you are by the grace of God. You should be as PHI 1:6 tells us, **confident of this very thing, that He who began a good work in you is going perfect it until the day of Christ Jesus** (the rapture). So, the greatest manifestation that we are living the spiritual life is whether or not we believe this; **But now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love (1CO 13:13)**.

Let's look at a few Biblical expressions of love:

*He who covers a transgression seeks love, but he who repeats a matter separates intimate friends (PRO 17:9).*

*"But I say to you, love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you Impersonal unconditional love is revealed even toward your enemies, and if you have it, you will even pray at times for those who are persecuting you (MAT 5:44).*

*"If you love Me, you will keep my commands. (1JO 14:15).*

*"He who has My doctrines and keeps them, he it is who loves Me; (JOH 14:21).*

*He who does not love Me does not keep My doctrines; JOH 14:24).*

Those that have impersonal unconditional love stay with doctrine. **"For this reason, we [pastors] work hard to the point of exhaustion, and we hang in there tough [keep on contending], because we have confidence in the living God, Who is the Savior of all men, especially of believers" (1TI 4:10)**. These men are responsible to reveal the deception of this world system which is designed to take you away from the reason you have been created. In every generation of the Church-age, God supplies the spiritual gift of pastor-teacher so that positive volition among His people can be fed. God uses prepared men, and He provides prepared men for every believer who has positive volition.

**The Joint analogy**

The joint analogy to the pastor-teacher is another very important principle. Let's note some principles concerning the joints:

1. All parts of the body are linked by joints or ligaments. Joints are those parts of the body where bones or elements of a skeleton join.
2. Joints permit motion and coordination of the human body. In 1Co 12 the different parts of the body are mentioned which represent different spiritual gifts in the Royal Family of God. At the moment of salvation we all received at least one spiritual gift. Different parts of the body represent the variety of differences among believers from the standpoint of spiritual gifts, growth, progress, function, and personality.
3. Joints provide the unity of the body, and give it cohesion. Joints are the point of contact, and the connection between various parts of the body. Cohesion refers to the union of the different parts of the body functioning properly. Just as there are differences in joints of the body, so there are differences among pastor-teachers. The pastor-teacher has to communicate day after day. His responsibility is to inculcate his congregation with Bible doctrine, which is an entirely different type of ministry than evangelism. Therefore, pastors have many different types of personalities. All the members of the Royal Family of God are analogous to the body of Christ, and they are linked together by the doctrinal teaching of the pastor. The emphasis of this doctrinal teaching must focus on the mystery doctrine of the Church age, found in the New Testament epistles. Christianity is not changing your personality to a certain mold, but it is growing spiritually through the perception of doctrine. The pastor's function must not be related to his personality, but to the content of his message. You can receive limited blessing from reading the Bible for yourself, but you can never learn how to execute the spiritual life just from that method. It is the spiritual gift, that God gave the pastor-teacher to be equipped to dig out, and communicate the truth of the mystery doctrine of the Church-age. So the principle is without joints, you go nowhere, both physically and spiritually.

"A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another, even as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all men will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another." (JOH 13:34-35) At the moment of salvation every person becomes a new creature in Christ. Being a new creature and being in union with Jesus Christ, demands a new set of instructions or commands for the dispensation of the Church-age believer. These are summarized under two key words: **Love** and **Discipleship**. The New Commandment is based on the fact that Christ is glorified, He is absent from the earth, He is seated at the right hand of the Father, awaiting operation footstool, and therefore we have entered into the intensified stage of the angelic conflict. The new commandment is obviously based upon some new provisions that did not exist before this dispensation. The baptism of the Holy Spirit whereby every believer at the point of salvation is entered into union with Jesus Christ. This means that he has the life of Christ-eternal, the righteousness of Christ, the sonship of Christ, the heirship of Christ, the priesthood of Christ, the election of Christ, the destiny of Christ, and eventually he will reign with Jesus Christ. The indwelling of Christ is also another factor. For the first time in all of history every believer is indwelt by God the Son. For the first time in history every believer is a priest, is an ambassador and therefore the personal representative of Jesus Christ. Ambassadorship could not exist until after the incarnation, until Christ was absent from the earth, and therefore every believer is now in fulltime Christian service.

It is to your advantage that you operate in the impersonal unconditional love: Let's look at some principles concerning this type of agape love.

1. At the point of salvation every believer passes the point of propitiation which places him under maximum divine love (1JO 2:2).
2. Therefore, God is now free to love every believer with maximum love **in spite** of the believer's spiritual status in this life.
3. Agape is a specialized love related to the mentality of the soul.
4. When used in connection with God it has a broader expanse, it means that God loves us in spite of the fact that He knew ahead of time what we were like. So it is related to the omniscience of God.
5. The noun agape, in many areas of the New Testament, is a reference to one of the new power options, the filling of the Spirit, (ROM 5:5; 1JO 2:5, GAL 5:22).

So agape love is not just the love of God, it's a mental attitude or a way of thinking. This is why even the unbeliever can have agape love:

*"And this is the judgment, that the light is come into the world, and men [agaped] loved the darkness rather than the light; for their deeds were evil. (JOH 3:19)*

*For they loved the approval of men rather than the approval of God. (JOH 12:43)*

*"A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another, even as I have loved you, that you also love one another. (JOH 13:34)*

What is this thing called love? In our amplified translation of PHI 1:9 we saw that the apostle Paul prayed for the Philippian church, **In fact, I pray this, that your virtue-love may excel to the maximum still more and more by means of metabolized doctrine resulting in all spiritual discernment.**

The Biblical subject of love therefore begins with learning how to love! God's love, or impersonal unconditional love, is not an emotion or a feeling; it is a system of thinking. Whether it's personal or impersonal love concentration is needed. Love, as a system of thinking, is something that needs to be learned. This is why we have such passages as: **And we have come to know and have believed the love which God has for us. (1JO 4:16).** Love is something that we have to come to know, and believe. **The love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us. (ROM 5:5).** PHI 1:9 says **In fact, I pray this, that your virtue-love may excel to the maximum still more and more by means of metabolized doctrine resulting in all spiritual discernment.** 1TH 4:9 says **Now as to the love of the brethren, you have no need for anyone to write to you, for you yourselves are taught by God to love one another.**

True biblical love is something that needs to be taught. Personal love is based on attractiveness, and rapport with the object. However, impersonal love is based on the virtue of the subject. Personal love is a possessive and subjective attitude toward a few. Impersonal love is an objective, and relaxed attitude toward the entire human race. Personal love is the expression of man's ego. Impersonal love is the expression of man's virtue. Personal love is vulnerable to arrogance and hypersensitivity. Impersonal love is free from arrogance, including jealousy, hatred, bitterness, vindictiveness, guilt, self-pity, implacability, and revenge. Personal love only has virtue as it relates to God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. The virtue of impersonal love then is a great problem solving device toward people. You must remember that personal love in the human race has no built-in virtue. Personal love in friendship, romance, or marriage must depend on something outside of that love for its virtue. There is no capacity for love apart from virtue:

*Devote yourselves to prayer, keeping alert in it with an attitude of thanksgiving; praying at the same time for us as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak. Conduct yourselves with wisdom toward outsiders, making the most of the opportunity. Let*



*your speech always be with grace, as though seasoned with salt, so that you will know how you should respond to each person. As to all my affairs, Tychicus, our beloved brother and faithful servant and fellow bond-servant in the Lord, will bring you information. For I have sent him to you for this very purpose, that you may know about our circumstances and that he may encourage your hearts; and with him Onesimus, our faithful and beloved brother, who is one of your number. They will inform you about the whole situation here. Aristarchus, my fellow prisoner, sends you his greetings; and also Barnabas's cousin Mark (about whom you received instructions; if he comes to you, welcome him); and also Jesus who is called Justus; these are the only fellow workers for the kingdom of God who are from the circumcision, and they have proved to be an encouragement to me. Epaphras, who is one of your number, a bondservant of Jesus Christ, sends you his greetings, always laboring earnestly for you in his prayers, that you may stand perfect and fully assured in all the will of God. For I testify for him that he has a deep concern for you and for those who are in Laodicea and Hierapolis. (COL 4:2-13)*

Hierapolis had many false religions, and yet Christianity became very solid in the face of religion and cults. The city had been a religious cultist city under the stronghold of Satan and yet Christianity emerged right in the midst of this environment. This is why Epaphras was deeply concerned. He knew that there were many distractions, and he didn't want those believers with PVTD to fall away. In verse 14, we come to a man who was not only a distinguished physician, in fact, Paul's personal physician, but Luke is a demonstration of the fact that a man can be great in his profession, and even greater as a believer. **Luke, the beloved physician, sends you his greetings, and also Demas (COL 4:14).** Luke is the writer of the book of Luke, and the first half of the book of Acts. He was a well educated Gentile from Antioch. He was a physician or a doctor, an historian and a true intellectual. He was a very brilliant and very observant person and he was one of Paul's most devoted and faithful friends. Luke apparently had only one patient and keeping that one patient alive was actually keeping the rest of the world alive. Most of all, Luke was a man as true as steel with Christian character and integrity. Luke attended to Paul's health, kept his writings, guided him in his courses, encouraged him in his sorrows, inspired him in his labors, and had fellowship with him in doctrine. This is why the Apostle spoke of him as the "beloved physician," and "my fellow worker." Luke was a true friend which is a very rare thing to find. Remember that the Bible does warn us to be very careful in the selection of friends. Friendships are the types of relationships which can sneak up upon you and take you for a ride or take advantage of you. That's why David tells us to be careful of the familiar friend who you think that you can trust and then you find out you shouldn't have in PSA 41:9. A true friend, if you have any, is the one who knows all about you and still likes you. Be very careful who you allow to get real close to you! Because if that person is an opportunist, one who takes advantage of any opportunity to achieve a personal goal, you will be shocked at how fast they will take advantage of you. Be careful for those who become your friend because of what they can get from you, as PRO 19:6 teaches. Remember this principle: Prosperity makes friends, adversity tries them. Most of us have had certain so-called friends who were there simply because we were signing their pay checks, or because of what they could get from us. However, when a little adversity comes in, these individuals go running to the highest bidder. Then there are those so called friends who flatter you with their speech as the friend in PRO 27:14. In fact, the loss of prosperity will test the reliability, and the faithfulness of your friends. There are also friends who will forsake you when you need them the most as in MAR 14:50. There are also the ones who really shock you. Then there are those who claim to be your friends and who claim to love you who will turn against you when you're faced with tremendous adversity, **"All my familiar friends scorn me, And those I love have turned against me." (JOB 19:19).** It is a tremendous wake up call concerning the nature of humanity when you realize that there were people in your life who you truly loved, and who you would lay down your life for, who

turn against you for the right price. It is a very shocking experience to have someone that you trust turn on you for personal gain.

Remember this principle: A **doubtful** friend is worse than a **certain enemy**.

If there is anything that is priceless to have in life, it is true friends. "**A true friend loves at all times and as a brother is born for adversity (PRO 17:17)**. They will stick up for you and defend you when you're not there. Friendship makes prosperity marvelous and lightens adversity by dividing and sharing it. Between true friends, there is also no need for justice. True friends do not forsake you in times of disaster, humiliation or defeat. When you're prospering, everyone is your friend! When you go through adversity, you will discover who your enemies really were!

We continue our study with the subject of relationships in the Body of Christ, and that means the subject of fellowship. This is a very important principle to look out for when it comes to relationships in the local assembly. Reaction and Distraction can take place in Christian fellowship, and friendship which is why you should be very careful to choose your friends wisely, and never let someone stop you from continuing to take in doctrine, and this includes anyone in the congregation. Many individuals are led astray from the plan of God, and Bible doctrine, simply because they refused to separate from those involved in religion, self-righteousness, legalism, and apostasy! One of the main reasons why most believers refuse to do that is simply because of the false view they have on the doctrine of fellowship. They think that fellowship means putting your doctrinal differences aside and loving each other. In reality, the love that the Bible commands us to have is a love based on doctrine. As the apostle Paul said, **And this I pray, that your love may abound still more and more by means of epignosis knowledge and all discernment, (PHI 1:9)**. What about our fellowship with one another? We must make sure that fellowship with believers does not take us away from the plan of God. This can also happen because of personality conflicts or divisions between people! If you are going to enter into fellowship with other believers, there are a few biblical principles that you should follow:

*PSA 119:63 the writer who was under extreme pressure said, I am a companion of all those who respect Thee, and of those who keep Your doctrines.*

*PSA 101:6 David said, My eyes shall be upon the "faithful" of the land, that they may dwell with me; he who walks in integrity is the one who will minister to me.*

*PSA 101:7 on the other hand, he who practices deceit shall not dwell within my house; he who speaks falsehood shall not maintain his position before me.*

If you have fellowship with believers based on your fellowship with God, you have something very rare in Christianity today. Notice what Paul said concerning what true fellowship with other believers should be based on. **If therefore there is any encouragement in Christ, [and there is, says the first class condition], if there is any comfort from love, if there is any fellowship of the Spirit, if any affection and compassion, Make my happiness complete by being of the same mind [this is thinking the same things from doctrinal orientation and grace orientation] maintaining the same virtue love, united in spirit [soul in the original]. Do nothing from selfishness [lust] or empty conceit [arrogance], but with humility of mind [from doctrine resident in the soul] let each of you regard one another as more important than himself; Do not merely look out for your own personal interests, but also for the interests of others. Have this mind in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus (PHI 2:1-5)**. That's the means and the results of having true godly fellowship based on integrity and virtue love.

If your fellowship with others is based upon these principles you will not enter reaction or distraction when there are problems between each other. You will solve your problems as adults and not let the one who desires to cause division, who is Satan, get the best of you. You don't grow through Christian fellowship, you just learn about how much you've grown. How much you can take. How much you can handle. How much grace, love and patience you really have. Wrong experience with

God results in wrong experience with people, it doesn't matter how well you get along with others. For example, when it came to crucifying the Lord Jesus Christ, Herod and Pilate became friends with each other. Some believers who couldn't stand each other come together when it comes to hating someone else. It's only a matter of time before they bite, and devour each other and enter into spiritual cannibalism.

Wrong fellowship with God results in wrong fellowship with people. If you are believer in Jesus Christ, the plan of God for you calls for God to be your number one priority over people. If God is not your number one priority, then Bible doctrine, which explains invisible God, is not your number one priority. Inevitably you are going to run into some people in your local assembly who rub you the wrong way. All of us rub someone the wrong way at some time, so do not let a personality conflict cause you to be distracted from God's plan for your life, and God's local assembly for your growth. Social life with Christians has varying consequences. It can either be a distraction or a source of encouragement to perception of doctrine. Spiritual growth and the execution of the PPOG and subsequent glorification of God occurs only through perception of doctrine, not through Christian fellowship. Most of the problems we face in life, we face alone, and therefore we are to derive our strength from within, not from people without! This is what it means to be spiritually self sustained! The apostle Paul said, **I can do all things through HIM who strengthens me. (PHI 4:13)**. Not through people, but through Him!

HEB 13:5-6 reminds us that people will leave you and forsake you; but the Lord will not!

Christian fellowship is nice to have if there is no legalism involved, but Christian fellowship cannot advance the believer in God's plan, purpose, or will for his life. If you have to ever make a choice between fellowship or doctrine, you better choose doctrine or you will be a loser! If you have fellowship with positive believers who have virtue, integrity, and who recognize the privacy of your priesthood and yet can have a wonderful relationship with you, you will make some of the greatest friendships in this life. The advantage to such friendships is that you are not depending on them; you're depending on the Lord.

*And do not be conformed to this world [the ways of the world], but be transformed by the renewing of your mind [having your mind or thought pattern renewed with doctrine], that you may prove what the will of God is [God's plan for your life], that which is good [your advance to the different stages of spiritual growth] and acceptable [the execution of the PPOG] and perfect [reaching spiritual maturity]. For through the grace given to me I say to every one among you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think [in other words, don't be arrogant and proud]; but to think so as to have sound judgment [or to be a rational person, which we are going to see that believers in reversionism also lose their ability to be rational or reasonable and sensible], as God has allotted to each a measure of faith or a standard of thinking from doctrine." (ROM 12:1-3)*

Assembling together for Bible study, and other forms of worship, must never be confused with Christian fellowship. **"Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together as is the habit of some, but for the purpose of encouragement" (HEB 10:25)**. The present active participle of the Greek verb "parakaleo" means to be encouraged. So we assemble for the purpose of encouragement, and that encouragement is the perception of Bible doctrine, not Christian fellowship. Someone may inspire you to come to Bible class once, but that alone cannot keep you there. What keeps you coming to Bible class is your own motivation from your own understanding and perception of doctrine, and making it the number one priority in your life. Your Christian fellowship with other believers is inconsequential! It is your fellowship with God that counts! Many believers cannot assemble with others for Bible doctrine and encouragement from the Word of God. While some believers are isolated from Christian fellowship, they are not isolated from the communication of Bible doctrine. God always supplies a right pastor with doctrine for positive believers. For some positive believers, doctrine is provided through face-to-face teaching in a local church. For others, doctrine is communicated

through tapes, audio, video, books, radio, etc. God always supplies a right pastor-teacher with doctrine for the positive believer. While the isolated Christian cannot assemble himself with other believers, he still fulfills the concept of HEB 10:25 through his daily perception of doctrine on the internet, tapes, video, audio, etc. Under the principle of supply and demand, the demand of positive volition is for accurate Bible teaching regardless of the geographical location. Therefore, accurate Bible teaching can only come through someone who is prepared, and who is teaching line upon line, precept upon precept, especially the mystery doctrine for the Church-age. In conclusion, Christian fellowship or social life with other believers at best is a result of taking in doctrine, whether you assemble with other believers or get it on your own in isolation. Positive believers should not assemble in a local church if there is false doctrine being taught. For a believer who is positive, Bible doctrine is never denied. Bible doctrine is denied to no believer.

In our study of Christian fellowship we now move to the subject of being single and dating. God has a will concerning your role as a single person. God is not a respecter of persons, and you are not the exception to the rule. He has a directive will for the believer who is single as well as for the believer who is involved in romance or dating. We are all born single, and we will all experience a certain amount of time in the single life. Most people will end up married, and we assume that they will have dated to some extent. Since it is inevitable that people will end up in a romantic relationship, what must occur in the life of a single person to prepare them to have success in the personal love of a romantic relationship? First, personal love for another member of the human race is not commanded in the Bible. As a single believer the plan of God for your life is the same whether you will ever get involved in a romantic relationship or not. Though we are not commanded to have personal loves for people, we are commanded to have personal love for God, and if we don't we will be under a curse:

*If anyone does not love the Lord, let him be accursed. Maranatha. (1CO 16:22).*

Before attraction motivates you to begin a dating relationship, it is vital that you love the Lord first. If not, the curse of not loving the Lord will carry over into your relationship. Learning to love God will solve the problems of loneliness. The Church is not a lonely hearts club. It is a place where you learn to love God so you can enjoy your alone time. If you're not happy by yourself, what makes you think that others are going to enjoy being with you? In romance, false exteriors are usually put up that veil the true individual. The real you is who you are when you're alone. Part of dating is to take the time to see the real person behind the veil. Therefore, as a single person, your first love should be God the Father, God the Holy Spirit, and God the Son. Dating is optional, it is your choice if you want to get involved in romance. The believer who is trained in doctrine knows that personal love is a creator of problems in life. The problems that are created in personal love can only be solved with the problem solving device of impersonal unconditional love. Therefore, the goal of the single believer is to develop impersonal unconditional love before any romantic relationships are attempted. Personal love for God is motivational virtue in the Christian way of life. It is characterized by confidence in God, and courage towards the human race. After a certain amount of time set by God to enjoy his new found confidence, the believer is placed in providential preventative suffering.

This suffering comes in four categories: people testing, thought testing, system testing and disaster testing. After passing these tests the believer reaches the second stage of spiritual adulthood. At this stage the believer has maximum love for God and maximum impersonal unconditional love for all. It is here that you can safely date! The people you love are the greatest test, because they have the potential to let you down more than anyone else, and they will let you down. Everyone has an OSN, and since personal love emphasizes the attractiveness of the object, that object will let you down. You are not to put another person on a pedestal, or make a role model out of them. You know what's in man and your only role model is the lord Jesus Christ.

Dating can be a positive experience or a negative one. Which experience it will be is revealed in the first stage of the man-woman relationship. There are three stages in the man-woman relationship. The first stage is attraction. This first stage is that characteristic of a person which elicits interest or attention, hence, an attractive quality in another person. Attraction is generally overt and emphasizes physical appeal. It can include many things, such as allurements, enticement, or fascination. Attraction may include physical beauty, overt personality, or seeing the fulfillment of one's personal standards (the knight in shining armor). Attraction is the reconnaissance stage of the man-woman relationship. It has to do with the superficialities of life, such as dress, appearance, personality, manners, smell [before you reach SA don't bathe], sex appeal. The attraction stage has not yet faced the facts of life. Another person's problems may be the catalytic agent that destroys the relationship. Concentration on the object of love in the attraction stage has a very narrow field of vision, often resulting in the erroneous conclusion that the object of your love is the only person in the world for you. People who get married in the attraction stage have very little chance of success, but it can be overcome by strong spiritual growth.

The second stage of the man-woman relationship is compatibility. Compatibility is the capacity of a man and a woman to remain together without undesirable after effects. Compatibility is a mutual tolerance, motivated by three categories of virtue-love: personal love for God the Father, impersonal love for all mankind, and occupation with the Person of Christ. Compatibility is a total adjustment to the other person so that he or she is the most important person in the world to you. While attraction is the blind stage of romance, compatibility is the enlightened stage. In this stage you have learned the strengths and weaknesses of the object of your love, and you have already resolved most of the problems of relationship. Whatever the sins, failures and weaknesses of your partner, they do not diminish your love for him or her. Compatibility is the problem-solving stage of romance; therefore, it is the best time for marriage. Those involved have used the privacy of their own priesthood to solve the problems. In compatibility both male and female take responsibility for their own decisions. Tolerance and understanding prevail in this stage. When attraction in romance becomes disappointment or disillusion, you can end the relationship forever. When attraction in marriage becomes disappointment or disillusion, you cannot jump out, and be in the directive will of God. Compatibility must be established before marriage, not after marriage. Do not get married in the attraction stage, but first attain compatibility. This stage will blend in with the problem-solving devices. Compatibility is the stage of virtue-love. No decision should be made about marriage until you have all the facts; and all the facts are not in until you have reached this stage. The greatest manifestation of compatibility is conversation. A successful marriage is a long conversation that seems all too short. Your moment-to-moment compatibility is in conversation. Premarital sex destroys those standards of virtue upon which compatibility is based. Premarital sex causes the fornicators to use emotion as the strength of their love, and emotion has no strength. The strength of romantic love is virtue, which is produced by learning, thinking and solving problems using Bible doctrine.

The third stage of the man-woman relationship is rapport. This is the harmonious stage of romance and marriage. This is the status quo of sympathy and empathy, the spiritual identification with the object of your love. This is the fusion of opposites in the understanding of feelings, thoughts, and attitudes of the object of your love. This is the fulfillment of the divine mandates of marriage:

*"Wives, be subordinate to your husbands as is fitting in the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and do not be bitter against them." (COL 3:18)*

*"Wives, be subordinating yourselves to your own husbands as to the Lord." (EPH 5:22)*

*"Husbands, love your wives just as Christ also loved the Church and gave Himself as a substitute for her." (EPH 5:25)*

The husband is required to have impersonal love in marriage. The wife is required to have enforced and genuine humility, objectivity and teachability. This means that the husband teaches the wife in marriage. His personal and impersonal love motivates him to teach her. Rapport is where the wisdom of application of metabolized doctrine pays great dividends in human relationships.

### **Operating in the Royal Family.**

*Finally, [or from now on], be strong or start becoming strong in the Lord, and in the strength of His might. Pick up and put on the full armor from God, that you may be able to stand firm against the schemes of the devil. (EPH 6:10-11)*

The schemes of the devil attacks both the grace of God, and the judicial decisions of God. So the very fact that we are told to clothe ourselves in the armor, and that we have to put on each piece, and we are told how to use each piece, reveals that every one of us is engaged in this battle. It is also another command for the believer to put on the spiritual life which can only be done through rebound (1JO 1:9).

These different weapons mentioned in this passage refer to the believer recognizing that there is an intense invisible warfare that we are all apart of. The first two items mentioned in this verse has to do with truth, or doctrine and the breastplate of righteousness, or operating in the Royal Family honor code. It all begins with understanding what it means when it says "put on the breastplate of righteousness," which is the Greek noun "dikaiosunes" which means righteousness, integrity, virtue, correct thinking. "Dikaiosune" is used for the righteousness of God which is imputed to us at the moment of salvation. This gives us the potential for having great personal integrity. However, in this context it is used for the attainment of divine integrity through consistent perception, metabolization and application of Bible doctrine.

The breastplate of righteousness is the virtue and the honor attained through the perception of Bible doctrine. The belt came first, and then we are to put on the breastplate. The belt is the absolute truth of the word of God, or Bible doctrine, and the breastplate is attached to that truth. This simply means that all integrity and the fulfillment of the Royal Family honor code comes from Bible doctrine. However, you will never have this integrity and operate in the Royal Family honor code unless you first of all desire truth. Then, you have to listen to truth so that you have knowledge of truth. Thirdly you have to think truth, and this is the basis for Christian integrity. We are under God's plan, God's will and God's purpose, this virtue, honor and integrity is required of us.

It doesn't start with some system of morality, or some system of doing something that you consider good. Bible doctrine makes it very clear that honor and integrity are infinitely greater than morality. Honor and integrity can only be attained by learning the truth, knowing the truth, thinking the truth, and applying the truth. That is the entire integrity package.

What is the Royal Family honor code?

a. The Royal Family honor code or putting on the breastplate of righteousness is a system of spiritual integrity mandated by God and revealed in the mystery doctrine of the Church-age. It is really based upon one simple principle.

b. The Royal Family honor code or putting on the breastplate of righteousness relates to personal integrity on the part of believers in relationship with other persons. In fact, the honor code or putting on the breastplate of righteousness is a supplement to impersonal love for all believers.

As a part of the Royal Family honor code, the believer needs to understand that he is born again into a status quo of aristocracy. The Church-age is the dispensation of the Royal Family of God. Therefore we must have royal function. The great enemy to the honor code is gossip, maligning, and slandering others. Those are the number one sins that destroy the Royal Family honor code and make it impossible to put on the breastplate of righteousness.

**"Therefore, having laid aside the lie, each one of you speak the truth with his fellow-believer, since we are members one of another." (EPH 4:25).** The lie is anything which contradicts the honor code.

Twenty principles:

1. The standards of aristocracy do not condone gossip, maligning and slander ROM 14:4.  
So right away, you know when someone is not operating under the Royal Family honor code and the standards of aristocracy, just by the words coming out of their mouth. Aristocracy doesn't condone gossip, maligning and slander.
2. The standards of aristocracy do not condone the violation of privacy and sticking your nose into the affairs of others (1PE 4:15).
3. The standards of aristocracy do not condone a passive slothful relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ (MAR 12:30).
4. The standards of aristocracy do not condone acting independently of God and the PPOG (1CO 1:12).
5. The standards of aristocracy do not condone coming short of God's righteousness (MAT 5:20).
6. The standards of aristocracy do not condone immorality, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed (EPH 5:3).
7. The standards of aristocracy do not condone putting aside doctrine and loving each other, JOH 13:34-35. Our love is to manifest we are students of doctrine in JOH 13:34-35.
8. The standards of aristocracy do not condone arrogance, jealousy, implacability with revenge motivation (PRO 6:16-18).
9. The standards of aristocracy do not condone sowing discord or strife between the brethren (PRO 6:19).
10. The standards of aristocracy do not condone the rejection of Bible doctrine from one's right pastor (HEB 13:17).
11. The standards of aristocracy do not condone stealing money or being dishonest for monetary gain (1PE 5:2).
12. The standards of aristocracy do not condone emotional sins such as fear, worry, anxiety, anger and hatred (ROM 14:23).
13. The standards of aristocracy do not condone legalism, self-righteousness, and rejection of authority (GAL 5:1).
14. The standards of aristocracy do not condone morality as a substitution for Christianity, TIT 3:5.
15. The standards of aristocracy do not condone blessing from God through human good or dead works, HEB 6:1.
16. The standards of aristocracy do not condone blessing from God through human achievement or self-sacrifice rather than grace (COL 2:6).
17. The standards of aristocracy do not condone discrediting any pastor who communicates Bible doctrine (ROM 14:4).
18. The standards of aristocracy do not condone thinking evil and presumption, 1CO 13:7.
19. The standards of aristocracy do not condone distraction and withdrawing from Bible doctrine (1TI 4:1).
20. The standards of aristocracy do not condone apathy, indifference, and wrong priorities toward the plan of God (PHI 3:14).

It's not just the superiority of weaponry by which wars are won, but it's also through information and intelligence. Likewise the same is true in this great spiritual invisible battle in which we are waging in spiritual warfare. Not only do you have an individual testimony in the angelic conflict, but you also have a corporate testimony in your marriage. Most of you are familiar with the overall commands, or mandates that are given to all believers in all the relationships we have:

- a. Love one another as Christ loved the Church (1JO 3:16).

Then there is the mandate to submitting to one another because of your respect of God (EPH 5:21). Both husband and wife are to be mutually involved in intimacy (EPH 5:33). Of course, the husband and wife are to love each other unconditionally, and impersonally. Especially the mandate in EPH 5:25 **Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself up for her.** Most husbands can benefit from spending a good deal of time reflecting on the kind of love the Lord Jesus Christ loves the Church with. We can't love them in the measure that He loved the Church when He was being judged for our sins, because that would be impossible. None of us could ever fulfill a mandate like that. In many cases we have difficulty in forgiving their sins, let alone praying for them. It's just like the mandate for the woman. Wives, be subject to or respect your husbands, as is fitting in the Lord (EPH 3:18). The wife must learn to respect and honor herself before she can honor and respect her husband. However, now watch this statement carefully; if you can become objective instead of subjective and look at your marriage as one of the greatest weapons in the most significant arena's in life for the demonstration of the grace and love of God in the angelic conflict.

Then you have begun to enter into the greatest mysteries of marriage in the Church-age. **This mystery is great; but I am speaking with reference to Christ and the Church (EPH 5:32).** The information about marriage in the dispensation of the Church-age, also called the mystery age, is some of the greatest forms of intelligence for the defeat of the greatest creature genius, and his plot in human history. The spiritual intelligence we have right now concerning the institution of Christian marriage, not marriage in general, but Christian marriage, which was once classified information, concealed and restricted from both angels and mankind, is what the Bible calls a mystery. The apostle Paul laid out the divine laws of marriage, which are;

1. **Husbands, love your wives (EPH 5:25).**
2. **Wives, respect your husbands (COL 3:18).**
3. **Forgive each other, just as God in Christ also has forgiven you (EPH 4:32).**

When the apostle Paul laid out these divine laws of marriage, he then throws in two verses. In EPH 5:31 **For this cause a man shall leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and the two shall become one flesh.** In EPH 5:32 **This mystery is great;** What mystery? The mystery is based upon what Paul stated in verse 31, that the **two shall become one flesh.** The original divine design of sex in the garden was a type or a preview of something even greater to come in the Church-age concerning the relationship of Christ and His Church, His future bride. Think of it, Satan had a plan to destroy the institution of marriage in the garden where sex was the ultimate expression of their love for each other. Sex was not created originally for procreation, but for recreation and enjoyment. There was no subjectivity or self-consciousness. One of the greatest manifestations of those attacks was the destruction of the original divine design concerning sex. Optimum satisfaction in sex is related to virtue in the soul, not sexual athleticism. It's a generation of self-destructive fools who scoff at virginity, and promote premarital experience as some kind of normal lifestyle and virtue. That generation is described, **Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; Who substitute darkness [human and Satanic viewpoint] for light and light for darkness; Who substitute bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! (ISA 5:20).**

*Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, that the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves, whomever they chose. Then the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. (GEN 6:1-4).*

Demons had sex with women, which was an attempt to keep Jesus Christ from coming into the world. In fact, sex is being used in a similar way today to the same thing. Sex was designed by God for



the man and woman to recover a piece of paradise and the blessings lost by the first man and the first woman. Yet fornication ruins that provision, robs the couple of that piece of paradise, although the sensation is pleasing in fornication until boredom sets in. Fornication substitutes the sweetness of the cycle of sexual response with the bitterness of dissatisfaction, loss, guilt and condemnation. However, there's still more to this mystery. When a man let's his sexual and physical aggressiveness overflow to others, he is ruining someone else's right-woman.

*Drink water from your own cistern, And fresh water from your own well. (PRO 5:15)*

The Hebrew word for "drink" is "shathar" which means to drink and enjoy, have your thirst quenched, to banquet, to feast. It is used for the right woman meeting the thirst for right man and vice-versa. There is a definite shock of recognition when a person finds a mate whom God has designed for them. However, promiscuity destroys discernment so that when the one that God did design for him or her comes around, the shock of recognition will be dulled and obscured. The word for "cistern" is "bowr" which means a covered well. The right woman is to be covered to everyone else, and only the right man is to pull the cover off. The right man is covered to everyone else and only the right woman is to pull the cover off. The wrong woman is one who advertises, trying to show what she has, trying to attract the males of human race. Remember that there is restoration and reconstruction of any infirmities in this area, even if you're a married person now, and you have failed in the past. There is instantaneous grace recovery when you rebound, and then there is continued rehabilitation from perception, metabolization and application of Bible doctrine. The point is if a woman keeps trying to splash everyone, she'll be a dry well when the right one comes along. Therefore, the water which is a reference to the response of the woman is to wait in the well until the right one uncovers and then she meets his thirst. In other words, she waits for the one who has the right to drink from it.

When a man's spring overflows to others it falls into the streets adultery and fornication take place. When a man let's his springs, his sexual and physical aggressiveness overflow to others, he is ruining someone else's right-woman.

**Let them be yours alone, And not for strangers with you. (PRO 5:17)**

Premarital sex always creates handicaps in marriage, both related to the soul and to the body. The man will tend to use his wife as a vessel for his own gratification rather than regarding her needs, and carefully having sex with her according to understanding and with self-control. Self-gratification is not a virtue and is associated with self-absorption. Likewise in the case of the female who has had premarital sex, there's always the danger of thinking of someone else who supposedly had some better technique, or with whom she had more passion. Of course usually she had more passion for her first love because that passion was meant to be for her husband who was designed to be her first lover. So there's a problem there, but don't forget the restoration part of this. The worry, fear, and guilt that arise from premarital sex also hinders the woman's ability to have normal orgasms even if she is with the right man for her.

*Let your fountain [your physical sexual aggressiveness] be blessed, (PRO 5:18)*

This means to be blessed and to produce happiness. There is a direct connection between premarital virginity and post-marital happiness. This is something that parents need to take and transfer to their children. Parents need to do more than just to forbid their children about these things and warn them of it, they need to tell them things about it.

# OUR LORD'S SAYINGS ON THE CROSS.

08/17/08

In the dispensation of the Hypostatic union, we have been noting that the most dramatic exhibition of the character and nature of God is revealed by the divine love and divine omnipotence in the person of our Lord Jesus Christ. We are going to focus on the end of the dispensation of the Hypostatic-union by noting the sayings or phrases of our Lord when He was on the Cross.

## **The first phrase:**

*And when they came to the place called The Skull, there they crucified Him and the criminals, one on the right and the other on the left. But Jesus was saying, "Father, forgive them; for they do not know what they are doing." And they cast lots, dividing up His garments among themselves. (LUK 23:33-34)*

The Lord prayed for their forgiveness before He was judged for their sins. These are the same people that had slapped Him, beaten Him, spit upon Him, lied about Him, ridiculed Him and scourged Him! These were the very ones who cried out, "crucify Him, crucify Him." Yet the first thing Jesus said on the Cross was a prayer for His enemies. He opened His public ministry with a prayer (LUK 3:21), and He closed His public ministry with prayer.

*Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus was also baptized, and while He was praying, heaven was opened, and the Holy Spirit descended upon Him in bodily form like a dove, and a voice came out of heaven, " You are My beloved Son, in You I am well-pleased." (LUK 3:21-22)*

The Father would remain well-pleased with His Son, and yet at the Cross He would have to forsake Him for our sake. At this point our Lord could no longer minister to the poor, needy, the sick, lame and blind, for He was now confined to a Cross. Our Lord could not come down from the Cross, and at the same time provide for our so great a salvation. This should be a great encouragement to you as a believer, as you meditate on these words, "**Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.**" When our Lord cried, "**Father, forgive them,**" He was praying for the lost, for those who were bound for hell. The first of the seven great cries on the Cross had no direct reference to Himself. It was, "**Father, forgive them.**"

Though there is an implication to the cruelties He experienced, please notice that He does not say, "I forgive them." That is taken for granted. He didn't focus in on the fact that they were doing any wrong to Him, but rather to His Father. They were insulting the Father by not honoring the Son.

*In order that all may honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him. (JOH 5:23)*

The cry, "Father, forgive them," is an unselfish cry as though He was not even suffering Himself. If there had ever been a time in the life of the Lord Jesus Christ when He might have confined His prayer to Himself, it would seem to be now, while on the Cross. However, the Lord began His prayer on the Cross by pleading for others. We see His soul of compassion as He was being crucified! This unselfishness is something we are told to have as well:

*Do not merely be regarding your own personal interests, but also for the personal interests of others. Keep on thinking this [doctrine] within yourselves which was also resident in Christ Jesus," (PHI 2:4-5)*

This prayer wasn't just for others, but it was for His cruelest enemies. It was a prayer for those who were murdering Him. It was a prayer which included the Scribes and Pharisees, Pilate and Herod, the Jews and Gentiles. If we knew nothing more of Him but this one prayer, we should honor and respect Him for it. The first major point which we see on the Cross in the character of His intercession is graciousness. Those for whom our Lord prayed did not deserve His prayer. They had done nothing which was worthy of being prayed for. They were undeserving individuals who had conspired to put Him to death. They had lied about Him, accused Him falsely, and were crucifying Him. They were utterly undeserving of a single good word from the Savior. They didn't ask Him to pray for them, it was the last thought in their minds to say, "Intercede for us!" He prays for those who reject His word, and therefore think how much more for those who love Him and His word.

Notice another principle in His prayer. In LUK 23:34, when He said "**Father, forgive them;** [notice what He said next] **for they do not know what they are doing.**" He actually found something good to say about His enemies. "**They do not know what they are doing**" were His words. It's almost as if He recognized that they were all simply pawns of the devil. He has the same attitude today. He knows our precise condition at this moment, and the exact state of our heart with regard to the suffering, and the temptation that we may be facing. Even more than that, He foresees the trials, and the temptations which are awaiting us. In His intercession He prays for us. Our Lord's prayer also brings out another very important factor - the blindness of the human heart (mind): "**They know not what they do.**" Those who crucified Him were ignorant of doctrine. They did not recognize the Savior of the world. They did not realize that here was the One who was being judged for their sins, taking their place, and providing their salvation. Yet our Lord Jesus Christ had made it clear many times. There was no excuse for their ignorance. The light of the glorious Gospel had shined upon them. Our Lord Jesus Christ, in His grace, was not willing that any should perish, and He prayed for them. However, the human heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked.

*And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving, that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God. (2CO 4:3-4)*

Man's greatest need is the need for forgiveness and cleansing of sin. The penalty of sin is death is spiritual death. He took our place, He was judged for our sins, and today His prayer on the Cross is still being answered, as many come to Jesus Christ and receive Him as Lord and Savior!

### **The second phrase.**

*And one of the criminals who were hanged {there} was hurling abuse at Him, saying, "Are You not the Christ? Save Yourself and us!" (LUK 23:39)*

Both of the thieves turned against the Lord Jesus. Both blasphemed against Him, but, one of the thieves repented, he completely changed his attitude, to use the word in its proper connotation. He had a complete reversal of mental attitude not in regard to sin, but in regard to the Person of Jesus Christ:

*And one of the criminals who were hanged {there} was hurling abuse at Him, saying, "Are You not the Christ? Save Yourself and us!" But the other answered, and rebuking him said, "Do you not even fear God, since you are under the same sentence of condemnation? And we indeed justly, for we are receiving what we deserve for our deeds; but this man has done nothing wrong." And he was saying, "Jesus, remember me when You come in Your kingdom!" And He said to him, "Truly I say to you, today you shall be with Me in Paradise." (LUK 23:39-43)*

He recognized that Jesus Christ was a perfect Man. He also recognized His deity, for he used the title for deity "kurios." There was nothing he could do for his salvation! He was nailed upon a cross. He could not join anyone's church or go through the rite of baptism! He could not weep in front of an altar, nor could he raise his hand or walk down an aisle! But he turned to the Lord Jesus Christ for help, and he went to exactly the right Person! He also recognized that Jesus had a kingdom. The Lord Jesus responded to this statement of faith by promising him a place in Paradise or Abraham's Bosom, the abode of all Old Testament saints. These two thieves on the cross picture the world today. One believed in Jesus Christ, and was eternally saved. The other rejected Him, and was eternally lost. **"He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him" (JOH 3:36).** The world is divided by its attitude toward Jesus Christ. Your attitude toward Him determines your eternal future!

### **The third phrase.**

*Therefore the soldiers did these things. But there were standing by the cross of Jesus His mother, and His mother's sister, Mary the {wife} of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. When Jesus therefore saw His mother, and the disciple whom He loved standing nearby, He \*said to His mother, "Woman, behold, your son!" (JOH 19:25-26)*

Imagine the anguish in a mother's heart, watching her Son slowly and painfully die. She must have been torn with terrible grief. The Lord Jesus Christ never called her "mother." He always addressed her as "woman." He sought to emphasize that she was the mother of His humanity, but she was not the mother of God! Anticipating some of the great dangers that would come in the future relative to her place in the Plan of God, He was always careful to avoid the title of "mother." **Then He said to the disciple, "Behold, your mother!" And from that hour the disciple took her into his own {household.} (JOH 19:27)**

Here are the words of responsibility. (EXO 20:12). In His dying moment, when He was in the midst of terrible agony and pain, He took time to think of the one who was the mother of His humanity and to make provision for her. We see here a beautiful picture, even in the end, of how Jesus Christ fulfilled the Law in every detail. Every negative, as well as positive, aspect of the Law was met by the Lord Jesus Christ; **"Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill. For truly I say to you, until heaven and earth pass away, not the smallest letter or stroke shall pass away from the Law, until all is accomplished." MAT 5:17-18)**

Today we are not under the Law. Christianity begins where the Law stopped.

That does not mean we are to be lawless. Jesus, in fulfilling the Law, made provision for us to move on into the supergrace life. The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance [self- control]: against such there is no law (GAL 5:22-23). The very character of Christ in His humanity can be produced in us by the Holy Spirit when He controls the life. We are no longer under the Law, but under grace. Grace is God's provision of the Holy Spirit, who

indwells every believer. The Holy Spirit controls when the believer is filled with the Spirit through the use of 1JO 1:9.

#### **The fourth phrase**

*And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, "Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?" which is translated, "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?" (MAR 15:34)*

These words, found in Matthew and Mark, as well as in Psalm 22:1, were literally screamed. In this cry, Jesus Christ made it clear that the God the Father with whom He had eternal and unbroken fellowship had to break that fellowship at this moment. Thus we know immediately that this is the time when Jesus Christ "bore our sins in his own body on the tree" (1PE 2:24), this was the unspeakable agony of the Cross, the spiritual death prophesied in PSA 22:1. The fourth cry indicated that He was being judged for us. This is why the Father had to turn His back upon Him. Our sin separated Him from the His Father, even as we were separated from them. The wrath of God deals deadly blows. One was meant for your sins. Jesus Christ stepped in front of you and took the blow. **But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him (ROM 5:8-9).** In the eternal state, there will be one resurrection body that has scars on it, it will be His.

Many misinterpret out Lord's sufferings as an appeasement to the wrath of the Father but this is totally wrong. Jesus Christ did not appease the wrath of an angry God, He satisfied the perfect justice of a holy and loving God. For God so loved the world (JOH 3:16). Everything in God's nature, every fiber of His justice and righteousness, rails against sin. God can have nothing to do with sin. All that God is is against sin, and Christ was made a sin offering. Why did Jesus have to die? Death is the wages of sin, and He had no sin. He had to die because Jesus is the only Savior, and His death is His only saving act. His death was necessary, and it was made so by the character of God. This was not an angry or vengeful God. In fact, just the opposite, for God the Father sent His beloved Son as the Lamb without blemish to be poured out for us sinners. The resulting propitiation is the basis for God being merciful and gracious toward us.

#### **The fifth phrase.**

The fifth cry on the Cross can be identified by the word suffering, **After this, Jesus, knowing that all things had already been accomplished, in order that the Scripture might be fulfilled, \*said, "I am thirsty" (JOH 19:28).** The thirst of Jesus indicates His humanity, for deity does not thirst. Again it focuses our attention on the importance of the humanity of Christ, for if He were deity alone He could not suffer the penalty of sin. This saying of the Savior, "**I thirst,**" followed the three hours of darkness, during which the light of God's countenance had been withdrawn from the Lord. This cry, then, tells of the intensity of what He had suffered, the awful severity of the conflict through which He had just passed. Even though His sufferings were like no other, great as was His thirst was, it was not desire for the relief of His body that now opened His lips. Far different, far higher, was the motive which prompted Him. The very fact that He did now "thirst" evidences His perfect submission. He that had caused water to flow from the smitten rock for the refreshment of Israel in the wilderness, had the same infinite resources at His disposal now that He was on the Cross. In the volume of that Book which expressed the will of God, it was written that He should thirst! Oh, that we might have the same attitude toward the Scripture! That we might have the joy and the realization and the reverence, the absorption and the interest that the Lord Jesus Christ had in the Scripture!

He simply says, "I thirst," the vinegar is extended and the prophecy is fulfilled. He had hung on that cross for six hours, and had passed through suffering unparalleled: nevertheless His mind was perfectly clear and His memory entirely unimpaired. He had before Him, with perfect distinctness, the whole truth of God. He knew the entire scope of the Messianic prophecies. He overlooked nothing.

### **The sixth phrase.**

The sixth saying on the Cross can be described by the word victory.

*When Jesus therefore had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And He bowed His head, and gave up His spirit. (JOH 19:30).*

When the Lord Jesus Christ said "**it is finished**" He evidenced the fact that salvation was complete. Nothing could be taken away from it and above all, nothing could be added to it. It was purely a matter of GRACE. No one has ever deserved this salvation, and there never will be any member of the human race who deserves something as wonderful and as marvelous and as precious as the blood of Jesus Christ, which, as a representative analogy of His spiritual death, cleanses from all sin. Consequently, when He said, "It is finished", He made it very clear that to add anything to the finished work of salvation is sheer blasphemy! That is why the Scripture reiterates over and over, "He that believes in the Son has eternal life." "**It is finished**" is a single word in the original Greek "tetelestai!" It was the shortest, and yet the fullest of His seven sayings on the Cross. Eternity will be needed to fully understand all that it contains. All things had been done which the law of God required; all things established which prophecy predicted; all things brought to pass which the types foreshadowed; all things accomplished which the Father had given Him to do; all things performed which were needed for our redemption. Nothing was left undone.

### **The seventh phrase.**

The seventh saying on the Cross can be described by the word contentment.

*And Jesus, crying out with a loud voice, said, "Father, into Thy hands I commit My spirit." And having said this, He breathed His last. (LUK 23:46)*

When the Lord Jesus Christ died on the Cross, it was voluntary.

*"For this reason the Father loves Me, because I lay down My life that I may take it again. No one has taken it away from Me, but I lay it down on My own initiative. I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to take it up again. This commandment I received from My Father." (JOH 10:17-18)*

Upon His physical death, His human spirit went into the presence of the Father, His soul went into Hades to a compartment known as paradise and His body went into the grave to wait for that glorious moment some three days later when the body would be rejoined by the soul and the spirit, and Jesus Christ would rise from the dead - literally and bodily. The seventh cry was the beginning of the end; and yet the end was a new beginning, for Jesus Christ would arise from the grave in resurrection body, walk among men for a short time, then ascend into the presence of the Father to sit at His right hand as our great High Priest and make intercession for us forever. The Father has been propitiated by the spiritual death of His Son. Jesus, through spiritual death, fulfilled the analogy to the blood sacrifice of the Old Testament; He was then ready to dismiss His Spirit. All references to the blood of Christ refer to His spiritual rather than to His physical death.

So these are the seven sayings of Christ on the cross.

The first dealt with the word forgiveness for His enemies.

The second dealt with salvation (LUK 23:39-42).

The third dealt with the word compassion (JOH 19:26-27).

The fourth dealt with anguish (MAT 27:46).

The fifth can be identified by the word suffering, **JOH 19:28 "I am thirsty."**

The sixth can be described by the word victory, **JOH 19:30 "It is finished!"**

The seventh and final saying can be described by the word contentment, **LUK 23:46 "Father, into Thy hands I commit My spirit."**

# THE CHURCH. THE RAPTURE. THE TRIBULATION.

08/24/08

We are noting the sixth, and final, principle that the Lord uses which guarantees the continuance of the human race until the end of human history: divine division and provision of the different dispensations. Throughout human history there are different dispensations given for the continuance of human history. Dispensations are periods of time in human history expressed in terms of divine revelation for that period. Dispensations are the means that God uses by which believers, living at a specific time in history, can adjust to God's will; God's plan and God's purpose for their lives. God's plan is not the same for every dispensation.

There are six dispensations in history and they fall into three categories:

The first is the Theocentric dispensations which refer to the Old Testament periods of time emphasizing and glorifying God the Father's purpose in the divine provision relating to the angelic conflict. There are two of these: The age of the Gentiles in the Old Testament, from Adam to the Exodus generation, 1441 B.C.

The age of the Jew or Israel, from 1441 B.C. to the first Advent of Christ, 4-5 B.C.

Secondly, there are two Christocentric dispensations where the Lord Jesus Christ is the center of the dispensation: The Hypostatic Union, 4-5 B.C. to His death, burial, resurrection, and ascension, 30 A.D.

The Church-age, 30 A.D. to the Rapture, which has not yet occurred.

Finally we have two Eschatological dispensations: The Tribulation, from the rapture to the Second Advent of Christ. The Millennium, from the Second Advent, to the last Judgment.

Those six dispensations are divided into three categories. In each dispensation, there is one member of the Godhead or the Trinity exalted.

We have completed our look at the third dispensation, the Hypostatic-union, which is also the first of the two Christocentric dispensations. Next we take a look at the fourth dispensation, the dispensation of the mystery, the Church-age. In the Church-age, the dispensation of the mystery, our role and our goal is to become invisible heroes glorifying our Lord Jesus Christ. Our Lord accomplished the strategic victory of the angelic conflict through His salvation ministry on the Cross, plus his physical death, burial, resurrection and ascension. The believer accomplishes the tactical victory of the angelic conflict through his advance to spiritual maturity.

The Church had its beginning on the day of Pentecost, 30 A.D. - 33 A.D.. The Church-age began with the baptism of the Holy Spirit by which the royal family of God is formed. **The first account I composed, Theophilus, about all that Jesus began to do and teach, until the day when He was taken up, after He had by the Holy Spirit given orders to the apostles whom He had chosen. To these He also presented Himself alive, after His suffering, by many convincing proofs, appearing to them over {a period of} forty days, and speaking of the things concerning the kingdom of God. And gathering them together, He commanded them not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait for what the Father had promised, "Which, {He said,} you heard of from Me; for John baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now" (Act 1:1-5).** The baptism of the Holy Spirit is not an experience; it is God the Holy Spirit entering each Church-age believer into royalty. Things cannot be the same in this age as they were in the past age, after the death of Christ has taken place, His resurrection, His ascension and the advent of the Holy Spirit. Just like things cannot be the same in the coming age as they are in this age, after the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ when He comes to reign on earth. Then Satan will be bound, demons will be imprisoned, Israel will be restored and Old Testament prophecy will be fulfilled.

There are four reasons why the Church began at Pentecost: First, there could be no Church in the world until Christ's death. The Church's relationship to that death is not a mere anticipation, but is



based wholly upon His finished work and His precious blood. Secondly, there could be no Church until Christ arose from the dead to provide her with resurrection life (Rom 4:25). Thirdly, there could be no Church until He had ascended upon on high to become the Head. The Church is a new creation with a new federal headship in the resurrected Christ. The Church could not survive a moment without His intercession in heaven (2Co 13:8). That's why you don't touch the Church, she belongs to the Lord. Fourth, there could be no Church on earth until the advent of the Holy Spirit. The Church is a temple for the habitation of God, it is regenerated, baptized and sealed by the Spirit. We have entire movements today who have turned the baptism of the Spirit into an experience. They are all ignorant of the formation of the royal family of God, and resultant positional truth and union with Christ. The day of Pentecost was a celebration of a brand new dispensation, the Church. It was a day when the gift of apostleship was manifested by Peter and the gift of evangelism, miracles, tongues, and interpretations.

**The Dispensational Orientation or the Church as the Mystery.** The Church was a mystery from Old Testament ( **Rom 16:25-26; Eph 3:1-9**). Under the concept of the doctrine of the mystery, the Church was never known before this dispensation. It's doctrines were never proclaimed by Old Testament writers. The Church-age began in Acts chapter 2, and will continue until the royal family of God is completed. Then you have the rapture of the Church (1Th 4:16-17). This is when all members of the Church receive their resurrected bodies. This falls under the concept of royalty has its privileges. Our privilege is to have a resurrected body before any person who is born again in Old Testament. After the Lord Jesus Christ, the firstfruits, we will be the first to have a resurrected body. When all the royalty is in a resurrection body, God does a great thing. He let's the Jewish age run out, the last seven years called the Tribulation. Then the Bride of Christ, the royal family of God, comes back with Him, and He becomes the ruler of the world. It is then that the Lord Jesus Christ presents the royal family of God to the world as His bride (Rev 19:5-16). This is when the winners of the morning star are presented (Rev 2:26-28). So the royal family of God, the Church is presented first. So much privilege has been given to us because we are a part of the Church-age and are under mystery doctrine. Mystery doctrine is Church-age doctrine which was unknown to those in the Old Testament. Most of the mystery doctrines of the Church-age are found in the Epistles. This is why we have a New Testament. The epistles clarify and keep us out of the Jewish age. God says in effect, stay out of the dispensation of Israel! Do not try to be a new Israel. Do not try to live by the Mosaic Law. Do not try to live by the Levitical sacrifices or the Levitical priesthood. This is why Paul teaches that if you are minus mystery doctrine you are minus the means and the ability to glorify God (**1Co 2:1-8; Eph 1:6-9**).

Mystery doctrine is pre-designed around the baptism of the Holy Spirit, or being in union with Christ. Let's notice some principles concerning some of the mystery doctrines of the Church:

1. Certain people would become royalty at the moment of salvation which was a mystery to the Old Testament (Eph 3:6; 5:32). There is no family of God information in the Old Testament.
2. The baptism of the Holy Spirit and positional sanctification (1Co 1:2; 1:30; 12:13). Every believer lives in the holy of holies in this dispensation.
3. Every believer would actually be indwelt by God the Holy Spirit (1Co 3:16, 19; 6:19-20). On the day of Pentecost every believer was indwelt by God the Holy Spirit.
4. The indwelling of the Lord Jesus Christ. Obviously this did not happen in the Old Testament (Gal 2:20; Joh 14:20).
5. A new contract, the old covenant or contract was done away with (Heb 12:24).
6. The new priesthood. The fact that every believer is a priest is a dramatic change from the Old Testament. The universal priesthood of the Church-age believer was never revealed before (Rev 1:6; 20:6; 1Pe 2:5, 29).

7. The new ministry of God the Holy Spirit. For the first time in all of history every believer is commanded to be filled with the Spirit, walk in the Spirit, grieve not the Holy Spirit.
8. The completed canon of Scripture. Until the canon of Scripture was completed there were certain systems of revelation which were common in the Old Testament such as voices, angels, dreams, visions, trances, all of which were used by God to communicate doctrinal principles. However under the doctrine of the mystery the Scripture is closed and completed.
9. A new type of service. For the first time in history every believer is called to full time Christian service as an ambassador for Christ (2Co 5:20; Eph 6:20).
10. The mystery of the Bride of Christ which is His body, the Church (Eph 5:32). We are said to be "in God" (1Th 1:1). God is "in us" (Eph 4:6). We are "in Christ" (Joh 14:20). Christ is "in us" (Col 1:27). The uniqueness of the church age is absolutely different from any other dispensation. We have a new classroom, a new means of spiritual growth, a new means of communication (Eph 3:18; Heb 10:25).

The Church-age is the greatest opportunity afforded to individual believers in Christ in all of human history. We now have the privilege of becoming a person with a purpose under the greatest plan from God. Our impact is not only extensive and invisible in human history, but it also extends into the angelic conflict with the elect and fallen angels. As a new spiritual species, you have a greater spiritual impact than Israel had in the Old Testament. You must regard yourself as a member of the royal family of God, with your very own invisible assets plus an absolutely perfect and wonderful plan guaranteed to keep you on top of life as long as you live. You live in the age of the greatest potential dynamics to ever exist in human history.

So, there are two Christocentric dispensations: The first Christocentric dispensation, the Hypostatic Union, terminated with a Resurrection that of the Lord Jesus Christ. The second Christocentric dispensation will also terminate with a resurrection that of the Church and that resurrection is referred to as the Rapture. The Rapture of the Church is when the Lord Jesus Christ comes back in the clouds of the air to take His church or His bride out of the world to forever be with Him. A key point to remember is the doctrine of imminence. Many signs are given to the nation Israel which would precede the Second Coming which is a totally different event than the Rapture. This is so the nation would be living in expectancy when the time of His coming should draw near! Although Israel could not know the day nor the hour, they could know, through these signs, that their redemption is drawing near! To the Church however, no such signs were given. The Church is told to live in the light of the imminent return of the Lord Jesus Christ (Phi 3:20; 1Th 1:10; 1Ti 6:14; Jam 5:8).

Immanency means impending, or threatening to occur immediately. Immanency is used technically for the fact that no prophecy has to be fulfilled before the Rapture occurs. The Rapture will occur when the last member of the body of Christ is saved. This is why the Church-age is the only dispensation in which there are historical trends, and no prophecy. The Church-age began with an event prophesied, the baptism of the Spirit. Our lord prophesied this in the upper room discourse and just before He ascended. The Church-age ends with the Rapture, which was also prophesied. There is no prophecy between these two events. This means that the Rapture is imminent. It could occur at any time. No one knows the day or the hour. The resurrection of the Church, like our dying, is completely out of our control. Just as we have no control over the time and manner of our death, we have no control over the time and manner of the Rapture.

*Behold, I tell you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we shall be changed. For this perishable must put on the imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then will come about the saying that is written, "Death is*

*swallowed up in victory. "O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?" The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law; but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your toil is not in vain in the Lord. (1Co 15:51-58)*

While there are many things happening today that tell us the Lord's return may very well be imminent, we know that it did not happen for all those generations of Christians who came before us. However, if the only value of living in "expectancy of the Lord" rested in being satisfied by the Lord's actual return during their lifetime, then the fact that Christ has not yet returned would mean that they waited and watched in vain. However, the Lord commanded us to have this "expectant" attitude knowing full well that millions of Christians would be taken to heaven through death before He returned. Therefore, there must be something important about living as though we expect our Lord to return at any moment. One of the reasons that we are to think like this is because a conviction that we could be caught up into heaven at any moment would impart an added seriousness to our lives. When we stop and think about the fleeting nature of our earthly life that should cause us to make every moment count for eternity. It should also remind us of our true citizenship in a world to come which is based upon eternal rather than earthly values. This is the attitude that should certainly characterize our Christian life. Recognizing that at any moment we could be taken to heaven in the Rapture presents a challenge to examine the reality of our faith.

The last two dispensations are called the Eschatological Dispensations. Eschatology is the theological category of last things or future things. We have Two **Eschatological dispensations**: First the Tribulation, from the Rapture to the Second Advent of Christ. Secondly, the Millennium, from the Second Advent, to the last Judgment. The Tribulation is found in prophecy concerning the course of events in the final seven years of the Jewish dispensation. We must begin this subject with some prophecy concerning the future of planet earth! There is a time coming on this earth which the Bible talks about more than any other period of time in all of human history, including the time that the Lord Jesus Christ walked the shores of Galilee. The removal of all believers from the earth at the Rapture of the Church (1Th 4:13-18), announces the beginning of the Tribulation. Because the Church and Israel are two distinct groups with whom God has a divine plan, one has to be taken away while the other is dealt with.

*But we do not want you to be uninformed, brethren, about those who are asleep, that you may not grieve, as do the rest who have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive, and remain until the coming of the Lord, shall not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus we shall always be with the Lord. Therefore comfort one another with these words. (1Th 4:13-18)*

The Tribulation period starts with the rapture of the Church. It terminates with the Second Advent, or the Second coming of Christ. So, we have the Rapture and the Second Advent and in between we have a short seven year span called the Tribulation. The Tribulation is the Doomsday Dispensation. This period goes from the Rapture of the Church to the Second Advent of Christ, approximately seven years. Rev 6-19 gives the trends of history during this period. This dispensation can also be called: Daniel's 70th Week, the Time of Satan's Desperation. It is Satan's last attempt to try to continue to rule the world. The Tribulation period is prophesied in many passages in the Old Testament: Jer 30:4-8; Zec 14:1-9; Dan 9:26-27; Isa 34:1-6, 63:1-6; Dan 11:40-46; Eze 38-39; Zec 12:1-3. It is prophesied by our Lord in Mat 24-25. The Tribulation gathers up into seven short years all of man's failures and intensifies them, so that a great portion of the earth's population is destroyed by self-determination from bad decisions. So, there is a time coming on this earth which is called

"Satan's Time Of Desperation" "The Day Of Wrath" "The Hour Of trial." It is a period of the greatest power struggle in all of human history. It involves not only people but angelic creatures as well. It is not a time that you would want any of your family members, friends, neighbors, and if you truly understood it, even your enemies to have to go through. It is a great period of wrath on this earth from God and from Satan (Zep 1:14-18). It is a time of great judgment on the earth like never before (Rev 6:12-17). It is said to be a great time of indignation (Isa 26:20-21). A time of trial (Rev 3:10). Destruction (Joe 1:15). Darkness (Joe 2:2). Desolation (Dan 9:27). Punishment (Isa 24:20-21). According to the Word of God, this is a time that could take place on this earth tomorrow, because of the immanency of the Rapture.

The Tribulation is the time when Satan seeks to destroy the Jewish population of the earth. That is why anti-Semitism is evil. Anti-Semitism is a person, a group, an organization, or a nation who is hostile to the Jews. This persecution and hostility to the Jews will reach its peak in the Tribulation period. The Church, the body of Christ will **not** go through this period. This is because the Rapture is used in a technical theological sense for the resurrection of the royal family of God. Since the Church or royal family of God is the first spiritual building to be completed, it is resurrected after our Lord. The Church is the second phase of the first resurrection following the resurrection of Christ. The next phase will be the Old Testament saints at the Second Coming, seven years later. The final phase will be after the 1,000 year Millennial reign of Christ. The Rapture of the Church is God's means of terminating the Church-age and delivering us from the wrath to come (1Th 1:10). This is why Tit 2:13 calls the Rapture or the appearing of the Lord Jesus Christ, "**Our blessed hope or happy guarantee, even the appearance of the glory of our great God and Savior, Christ Jesus.**"

The Church-age terminates with the transferring of the Church into the Lord's presence. The Lord Jesus Christ will remove the Church from this world when that terrible Tribulational period comes. Such verses as Eph 3:1-6; Col 1:25-27; Rom 16:25-26, all make it crystal clear that the Church was a **mystery** and was **not known** in the Old Testament. The Church, therefore, could not have been in view in the Old Testament prophecy concerning the Tribulational period. There can be no question that this period will see the wrath of God poured out upon the whole earth. Rev 3:10 calls it "**that hour which is about to come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell upon the earth.**" The Church does not go through any part of the Tribulation. God never mixes Israel and the Church. When one is operative, the other is not. Each dispensation has a separate plan and purpose. God's plan for Israel was a ritual plan; God's plan for the Church is the PPOG.

# THE ROYAL FAMILY HONOR CODE AND SPIRITUAL SELF ESTEEM.

09/07/08

*From now on, start becoming strong [plural] by means of the Lord, and in the strength of His might. Pick up and put on the full armor from God, that you may be able to hold your ground against the schemes or the strategies of the devil. Because our struggle is not against blood [people's souls] and flesh [their old sin nature], but against the rulers [these are the archons like Abaddon and Beelzebub], against the powers [demon officers who have phenomenal authority], against the world forces of this darkness [kosmokratoras meaning demons who specialize in possessing or influencing the cosmos or world rulers] against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places or against the spiritual forces of evil in the atmosphere around the earth, the stellar universe and in the presence of God. Because of this, pick up and put on the full armor from God, that you may be able to hold your ground in the day when evil attacks you, even after you have achieved or accomplished everything, hold your ground. Because of this, hold your ground, [after you] have buckled on your combat gear around your waist by means of doctrine, and [after you] have put on the breastplate of righteousness, (Eph 6:10-14, corrected translation).*

The first piece of armor is the most important; it is the belt or the harness of truth. This is metabolized doctrine in the soul that is ready for application. The rest of the armor is anchored by the belt, so it is the foundation. Next we have the breastplate of righteousness. This is the attainment of divine integrity through consistent perception, metabolization and application of Bible doctrine. So the breastplate of righteousness or integrity is the virtue and the honor attained through the perception of Bible doctrine. There is a similar passage where again Paul uses the breastplate to refer to integrity and Spiritual Self Esteem:

*But since we are of the day, let us be sober, having put on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet, the hope of salvation. (1Th 5:8)*

This means we are to be self-controlled, well balanced and therefore to be in the state of Spiritual Self Esteem. This is a potential, and it is what God requires, but we may or may not achieve it, it all depends on our volition. Inasmuch as we are under God's plan, God's will and God's purpose, this virtue, honor and integrity is required of us. It doesn't start with some system of morality, or some system of doing something that you consider good. Bible doctrine makes it very clear that honor, and integrity are infinitely greater than morality. The Bible also makes it clear that we can only attain this by learning the truth, knowing the truth, and then thinking (applying) the truth. That is the entire integrity package.

The righteousness of God, belongs to God alone, it is a part of His perfect and eternal essence. However, God has provided the thinking, or the mind of Christ, which is Bible doctrine, as our means of attaining the honor, the virtue and the integrity of God. The integrity which God has made available for the believer is developed from living in His righteous word (Bible doctrine) which has to be resident in your soul. It is doctrine in your soul which gives you the integrity or the spiritual strength to handle any situation in life. To be strong spiritually is to operate in the integrity of God which comes from applying doctrine to your particular circumstances in life. This can only come from the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine, and the metabolization and application of it to life. When you live in the doctrine which the Lord tells you to live in, you are living in the righteousness or the integrity of God.

After salvation there is an experiential righteousness which is the breastplate of righteousness, and that is infinitely greater than any system of morality that has ever been designed by man (Mat

5:48; Mat 19:26). This experiential righteousness is called the breastplate of righteousness, but remember that the breastplate of righteousness is actually the integrity of God being provided for us. This brings us to a doctrine which will reveal to us what it means experientially to put on the breastplate of righteousness.

### **The Doctrine of the Royal Family Honor Code.**

Point 1. Definition and Description.

a. The Royal Family honor code, or putting on the breastplate of righteousness, is a system of spiritual integrity mandated by God and revealed in the mystery doctrine of the Church-age. It is really based upon one simple principle, "**And the King will answer and say to them, 'Truly I say to you, to the extent that you did it to one of these brothers of Mine, {even} the least {of them,} you did it to Me' (Mat 25:40).**

b. The Royal Family honor code, or putting on the breastplate of righteousness, relates to personal integrity on the part of believers in relationship with others. In fact, the honor code is a supplement to impersonal love for all believers. Again, that's why the Bible says, **But since we are of the day, let us attain spiritual self esteem, after we have put on the breastplate of doctrine, and virtue love, (1Th 5:8).** The honor code is an extension of impersonal love for all believers, and it centers around two words, Integrity and Truth.

Integrity is defined as adherence to spiritual, moral, and ethical principles related to *truth* and *honesty*. We are taught to operate within the four laws of Christian behavior:

**The Law of Christian Liberty:** The law of liberty is directed toward self. Biblically, the believer has the right to engage in activities that are not sinful, and that will not tempt him to sin (1Co 8:4; 1Co 8:8-9).

**The Law of Love:** This law is the function of impersonal love directed toward all believers, including the arrogant, legalistic, and the lascivious ones. This is impersonal love directed specifically toward weaker believers. The law of love is especially important when dealing with new believers who are not educated in Bible doctrine, and with educated believers who are still offended by things that are actually legitimate. Under this principle, we are taught to avoid offending or putting a stumbling block in front of a weaker believer. The law of love works with the law of liberty to help us refrain from any activity that may lead another Christian astray, even though that activity may be perfectly legitimate. Under this law, the strong believer denies himself certain permissible activities, strictly for the benefit of weaker believers; however, he must never compromise or confuse this with legalism.

**The Law of Expediency:** This law is related to the believer as a witness for Jesus Christ. Every believer is an ambassador for Christ, and at times must refrain from certain forms of recreation, or deny himself things he desires. This is not because they are wrong, but because they may hinder an unbeliever from seeing the true issue of salvation (1Co 9:16-23).

**The Law of Supreme Sacrifice:** This law is directed toward God, and relates to personal love for God the Father and occupation with the Lord Jesus Christ. It generally applies to mature believers who forsake normal living, and legitimate functions in life in order to serve the Lord in a special way. This is the highest law of the Christian way of life; Paul functioned under this principle (1Co 9:1-16).

The honor code has its foundation in the function of spiritual principles as related to truth and integrity. Believers need to understand that at the moment of salvation they are born into the Royal Family with all the rights, privileges, and responsibilities of aristocracy, and that aristocracy has standards. The Royal Family honor code requires nothing less than the honor, integrity, and virtue that only come through the knowledge of doctrine by the power of the Holy Spirit, and the spiritual growth that results. There are 16 Standards that aristocracy does not condone:

1. Gossip, maligning, or slander.

2. The violation of privacy or interfering in the affairs of others.

3. Apathy or indifference toward the Lord Jesus Christ or the plan of God.
4. Acting independently of God and the Pre-designed Plan of God (PPOG).
5. Immorality, impurity, evil desires and thoughts or greed.
6. Distraction or withdrawal from doctrine (the religious idea of putting aside doctrine and "loving one another").
7. Arrogance, jealousy, implacability, or revenge motivation.
8. Sowing discord or strife among the brethren.
9. The rejection of doctrine from one's pastor-teacher.
10. Dishonesty for monetary gain.
11. Fear, worry, anxiety, anger, or hatred.
12. Legalism and self-righteousness.
13. Morality as a substitute for spirituality.
14. Attaining blessing from God through human good, dead works, human achievement, or human self-sacrifice, or any other function apart from God's grace.
15. Discrediting any pastor-teacher, especially those who communicate Bible doctrine.
16. Failure to love the brethren. How is love manifested? Supreme sacrifice.

**Point 2. The Application of Bible Doctrine and the Royal Family Honor Code.**

The honor code, or putting on the breastplate of righteousness, is simply an application of Bible doctrine. The application of doctrine under pressure, and in the angelic conflict, and spiritual warfare, requires at least the attainment and function of Spiritual Self Esteem. This is the basis for concluding everything related to integrity. This is also the basis of operations for our relationship with other people. With the attainment of Spiritual Self Esteem the believer learns enough Bible doctrine to make application to every experience in life. This is why Paul said, **For the whole law is fulfilled in one word [logo-subject], in the statement, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." (Gal 5:14).**

One of the great problems of believers is not having self-esteem, which even many unbelievers have. Because many believers lack human self-esteem, they lack the ability to apply any truth or Bible doctrine to their experience. This lack of human self-esteem puts them into a vacuum, and they suffer from many problems of dependency. You are to be dependent on God, but independent from problems. This does not mean you are free from having problems, but freedom from being controlled by those problems.

There can be no Royal Family honor code without this self-esteem. Lack of human self-esteem can only be resolved by the attainment of Spiritual Self Esteem, it is one of the keys to life. With no self-esteem, whether human or spiritual, you are disoriented to life. Without self-esteem you cannot entertain yourself or handle simple problems like loneliness, and problems related to social life. Lack of self-esteem in almost everything in life is disastrous. The greatest disaster is failure to learn, understand, and think in terms of the Royal Family honor code. Many people who accept Christ as their Savior have no self-esteem, and so the PPOG provides the opportunity for Spiritual Self Esteem. Once you enter Christianity without human self-esteem your only chance for having any self-esteem is the attainment of spiritual self-esteem which is far greater than human self-esteem. Human self-esteem can sometimes be frustrating, but spiritual self-esteem is never frustrating.

So many believers lack SSE. Either they have heard the doctrinal principles and rejected them, or else they have never taken the time to learn about who God has made them to be. Remember what the apostle Paul said in 1Co 15:10, **But by the grace of God I am what I am.** God does not make losers! God has made us brand new creatures, we are a brand new spiritual species. There is no place in the church of Jesus Christ for a low self image, and lack of confidence. If a believer is going to put on the Royal Family honor code and the breastplate of righteousness, he must realize that he is a member of the Royal Family of God. He is an aristocrat, and as we mentioned, aristocracy has

standards and protocol. Therefore, the application of Bible doctrine and the Royal Family honor code becomes very important.

Principles concerning Spiritual Self Esteem:

1. Spiritual Self Esteem is that virtue and integrity developed from living in the PPOG whereby the believer's confidence is based on Bible doctrine which he has learned through perception, metabolization and application. The believer's respect for self is linked to grace-orientation.
2. The secret to spiritual self-esteem is respect for God.
3. Spiritual self-esteem is never a system of self-improvement based on advice, counseling, or dependence on others. The only dependence for the attainment of spiritual self-esteem is dependence on faithful Bible teaching from whomever is your right pastor-teacher.
4. Under spiritual self-esteem, you are free from legalistic bullying, people dependence distractions, flattery, counseling and dependence.
5. In fact, spiritual self-esteem is the declaration of independence of your Royal priesthood.
6. Spiritual self-esteem solves the problems of inadequacy, peer pressure, role model arrogance, all the subtleties of arrogance, and fear. SSE is the foundation or stability in the Christian way of life.
7. Spiritual self-esteem never feels threatened by just or unjust criticism.
8. Spiritual self-esteem avoids withdrawal and stuffing your problems and failures into your subconscious.
9. Spiritual self-esteem is the status of solving the unsolvable problems and pressures of this life. It always addresses the problems or failures by using the problem solving devices to make corrections and keeps moving with occupation with Christ.

*"He who gets wisdom, loves his own soul; he who keeps understanding will prosper." (Pro 19:8)*

Wisdom is the end result of perception and metabolization of doctrine. Wisdom is the application of that doctrine to experience. The application goes toward God, toward self, and toward others. The first line of this verse defines Spiritual Self Esteem, **He who gets wisdom, loves his own soul**. The second line is doctrinal inculcation, **he who keeps understanding will prosper**.

Biblical documentation also includes:

*However, you also, each one of you individually, let him love his wife as himself. (Eph 5:33)*

The phrase "as himself" is Spiritual Self Esteem. **(Eph 5:33)**.

And one of the scribes came and heard them arguing, and recognizing that He had answered them well, asked Him, *"What commandment is the foremost of all? Jesus answered, "The foremost is, 'Hear, O Israel! The Lord our God is one Lord; and you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength. The second is this, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. There is no other commandment greater than these." (Mar 12:28-31)*

Loving your neighbor as yourself is Spiritual Self Esteem resulting in impersonal love for all mankind.



# THE DOCTRINE OF MOTIVATION.

09/21/08

The Doctrine of Motivation:

Definition: Motivation means inducement, incentive, influence, or ground for something, the goal or the object of one's actions. Motivation can be either thinking or emotion.

Let's note some principles about God:

a. God's love is eternal; it has always existed; there never was a time when it did not exist. It has no beginning.

God's love has no beginning, because God is eternal. Therefore, His love is eternal.

b. God's love exists with or without an object.

c. God's love has always existed along with the righteousness and justice of God, because they are all a part of the same person. Therefore, the love of God can never be understood apart from understanding the righteousness and justice of God.

d. God's love has always existed as a part of the integrity of God. God's love didn't begin at creation for His creatures. God is love, has always been love, and will always be love. It does not diminish or increase. It is perfect as a part of His integrity. His righteousness always does what is right and His justice always does what is fair. God is always right, and always fair in dealing with us, and now in a fallen state, all His creatures are treated fair and right by means of His merits in grace is to begin to understand His love.

e. The fact that God is eternal means that God has no beginning. Therefore, God does not have motivation, rather He is motivation. To be motivated by something God would have to be under the influence of that something which would make it greater than Him. God is not motivated, He is motivation. Be sure that you understand that God is never motivated by anything. He has always been love, and therefore the Cross (the ultimate expression of His love) has always been a part of His thinking concerning His creatures.

f. Motivation has a beginning with the existence of mankind. Mankind has motivation in the soul.

All of mankind is motivated, whether that is good or bad motivation is the issue in the Christian way of life. Motivation always has a beginning for mankind, but the essence of God has always existed, therefore God is motivation. See how great a love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called children of God; and such we are (1Jo 3:1). To the Church-age, God gave the most power to live in His love. To be given the most assets and the most power is great motivation. To know we've been given the most assets and power is to know the integrity and love that God has toward us by means of grace. If the love of the Father would do this for us, as much as it cost Him, won't He do everything else? To be called children of God by means of His love is to be a member of the one true Royal family. Isn't that motivating?

And we know that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose. For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the first-born among many brethren; and whom He predestined, these He also called; and whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified. What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who is against us? He who did not spare His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how will He not also with Him freely give us all things? (Rom 8:28-32)

The fact that God so loved the world that He gave His own Son shows that God is motivation, and God is love. When you learn this love it begins a motivation in us to respond to God's many and interconnected doctrines. God's integrity motivates us, and this includes righteousness and justice as well as love. God does not have to be motivated, because He knew all that would ever happen billions of years before it ever occurred. Motivation in the soul is the result of Bible doctrine in the stream of consciousness, which produces personal love for God. His communication of His love towards us produces the reciprocal effect, and we love Him. Therefore we are motivated by our love for God, and we don't quit.

We are afflicted in every way, but not crushed; perplexed, but not despairing; persecuted, but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed; always carrying about in the body the dying of Jesus, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our body. For we who live are constantly being delivered over to death for Jesus' sake, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our mortal flesh. So death works in us, but life in you. (2Co 4:8)

God is love and His eternal love for you always was, and it will never change. Therefore, stop trying to impress God! You were set free by God, and the pastor/teacher is your vehicle to knowing the Word of God, because you cannot simply study it on your own. A major part of humility is to be teachable, and to be teachable you have to submit to a pastor/teacher. This is freeing to understand since we can understand the immutability of God in His dealing with us. God's love will always be there for us, and therefore God does not need to be motivated. However, when it comes to us, we are in time and we require motivation. Our motivation comes from our love for God. The positive believer is motivated to press on when others would quit. David was motivated by the integrity of God in both prosperity and terrible adversity.

*"And after He had removed him, He raised up David to be their king, concerning whom He also testified and said, 'I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after My heart, who will do all My will.' (Act 13:22)*

What was David after? What motivated David to keep going after monumental failures? Well, what is in God's heart? The answer is Righteousness and Justice manifested by Love and Grace. This was David's motivation and this should be ours as well. David's motivation is expressed in terms of the integrity of God (Psa 89:14; Psa 32:5).

Because God's justice would be satisfied at the Cross, in grace He not only forgave David the sins that he committed, but He also removed the guilt of wrongdoing from his life. How can God do this? For God, the Cross was a conclusion. The Cross has been forever since eternity past. We think of God in terms of time, but there never was a time when the divine decrees were not in His mind. God's justice and righteousness were satisfied so that He could treat mankind in love and grace, and this has been His mind forever. God never has to be motivated.

*For the word of the Lord is upright; And all His work is done in faithfulness. He loves righteousness and justice; The earth is full of the lovingkindness of the Lord. (Psa 33:4-5)*

Doctrine, faithfulness, righteousness, justice, unfailing love and grace, this was David's motivation. Are you motivated as a believer who is after God's own heart? Has the Righteousness, Justice manifested by the Love and Grace of God, all revealed in Bible doctrine, motivated you to stick with the plan of God for your life no matter what? (Psa 18:30-35). Since we require motivation to keep going in our learning the capacity to love with the love of God, God has provided that motivation.

Human motivation has a beginning in reciprocity, we love because God first loved us, this happens when the Word of the Lord is a part of the soul. God's eternal integrity motivates the believer, but the believer cannot motivate God. Unfortunately mankind, even believers, is motivated to follow the cosmic system and the doctrines of demons. There is both good and bad emotion; there is both good and bad motivation, but none of it belongs to God.

*I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who is to judge the living and the dead, and by His appearing and His kingdom: preach the word; be ready in season and out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with great patience and instruction. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but wanting to have their ears tickled, they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires; and will turn away their ears from the truth, and will turn aside to myths. But you, be sober in all things, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry. For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure has come. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the course, I have kept the faith; in the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved His appearing. Make every effort to come to me soon; for Demas, having loved this present world, has deserted me and gone to Thessalonica; (2Ti 4:1-10)*

You will be motivated by what you love. If you love self you will be motivated to live for self. If you love the cosmic system you will be motivated to pursue the things of the world. If you love God you will be motivated to have a closer walk with Him. God motivates us, we do not motivate God. Motivation has a beginning, but God does not have a beginning. God does not have motivation. Motivation is a human function, not a divine function. Therefore, motivation can only be used of God as an anthropopathism. God functions on His eternal integrity with emphasis on the love of God. Integrity is not motivation; it is on a much higher plain. God's integrity motivates us, and this includes righteousness and justice as well as love. God does not have to be motivated, because He knew all that would ever happen billions of years before it ever occurred.

Blessing or discipline from God originates from His eternal integrity. When God disciplines us, His righteousness and justice have not changed; therefore, neither has His love toward us.

*Those whom I love, I reprove and discipline; be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him, and will dine with him, and he with Me. (Rev 3:19-20)*

The Righteousness of God is the principle, it is the standard of integrity that approves or disapproves. The Justice of God is the function, it is the execution of His integrity that blesses or disciplines. The

Love of God is the demonstration of His integrity that provides divine solutions and motivation; principles related to spiritual growth. What the Righteousness of God demands, the Justice of God executes, and the Love of God demonstrates; all expressed by the Grace of God. Divine love is the key to God's integrity as a point of reference, not God's motivation. Omniscience always functioned under the integrity of God, so that divine love is the point of reference, not motivation.

Good and pure motivation begins with knowledge of Bible doctrine and reciprocal love for God. We do not advance in the spiritual life without simultaneous action from persistence in perception of doctrine and motivation from reciprocal love for God. Motivation begins with knowledge of Bible doctrine as epignosis. Motivation is the thinking and action of Bible doctrine in the stream of consciousness.

Summary.

- a. God operates on His integrity, not on motivation.
- b. Motivation is a human function, whether it is emotion or thinking, not a divine function.
- c. God motivates us; we do not motivate God.

Conclusion.

God motivates us through divine revelation of Himself in the infallible word of God.

God makes His motivation perspicuous through the mentorship of God the Holy Spirit, Joh 14:26.

*But our Mentor, whom the Father will send in My name, will teach you all things and will cause you to remember all that I said to you. (Joh 14:26)*

# FOR THEY ARE NOT ALL ISRAEL WHO ARE DESCENDED FROM ISRAEL.

Beware of hypocrites who attack the teaching of doctrine.

09/28/08

*I am communicating doctrine, I am not lying, my conscious bearing joint testimony with me in the Holy Spirit, but I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my right lobe, For I could wish that I myself would be accursed. Consequently, separated from Christ, but it cannot be, for the sake of, or on behalf of my brethren, the racial Jews. My fellow countrymen, national Jews. According to earthly descent, (Rom 9:1-3)*

**Who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption and as sons and the glory [that is the Shekinah glory], and the covenants [or] the unconditional covenants, and the deposit of the law, and the temple service [which means the service of God in the temples] and the promises, which says From whom [the Jews or Israelites] are the fathers, [the regenerate ancestors, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob], in fact, from whom is The Christ, the One who came in the flesh, the One who is God, ruler over all, extolled, praised, eulogized forever, Amen. However, this [the rejection of the Jews concerning their spiritual heritage] this rejection is not to imply as though the word of God has failed. (Rom 9:4-6)**  
**(Corrected translation)**

The phrase **For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel**; means that if you have the genes of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and the twelve Patriarchs, you are a Jew, or a part of Israel, as far as your physical birth and descent is concerned. As far as the imputation of human life at birth that's true, but Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob were regenerate. The origin of the Jewish nation adds up to the fact that it is the spiritual seed of Abraham who is the true Israel. This is the big issue in the Koran. The Koran says this is not true:

(Sura 2:138. *(Our religion is) the Baptism of Allah. And who can baptize better than Allah. And it is He Whom we worship.*

Sura 2:139. *Say: Will ye dispute with us about Allah, seeing that He is our Lord and your Lord; that we are responsible for our doings and ye for yours; and that We are sincere (in our faith) in Him?*

Sura 2:140. *Or do ye say that Abraham, Isma'il Isaac, Jacob and the Tribes were Jews or Christians? Do ye know better than Allah. Ah! who is more unjust than those who conceal the testimony they have from Allah. but Allah is not unmindful of what ye do! He remembers his people's sins.*

Sura 2:141. *That was a people that hath passed away. They shall reap the fruit of what they did, and ye of what ye do!*

The Bible, the word of God, says that Abraham became a Jew at age 99 (Gen 17:1). The Koran says that is not true. So, you have the Koran, which supposedly dropped out of the sky on a stone tablet, or you have the Bible which contains 66 books, written by 40 different authors, over 1500 years, in 3 different languages on 3 different continents, with no historical errors or contradictions. The entire Bible, from Genesis to Revelation, bears the mark of Divine inspiration. Therefore, you have a choice, you can follow a book that dropped out of the sky on a stone tablet written by Allah, the moon God. Or you can follow a book that 2Pe 1:21 says **was not made by an act of human will, but men moved by the Holy Spirit spoke from God**. A book whereby God the Holy Spirit so supernaturally directed the human writers of Scripture, that without waving their human intelligence, individuality, literary

style, personal feelings or any other human factor, His own complete and coherent message to man was recorded in perfect accuracy in the original languages of Scripture. The very words of which bears the authority of divine authorship.

*But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right or the power to become children of God, {even} to those who believe in His name. (Joh 1:12)*

Now, who did He give this right or power to? **"To those who believe in His name."** Not to those who asked Jesus to come into their heart, or asked Jesus to come into their life. Not to them that raised their hands, or said a prayer, or who felt sorry for their sins, or who were baptized, or who walked an isle but, **To those who believe in His name.** To believe in His name means to believe that He is what His name claims to be, which is the word of God. He is the King of kings, the Lord of lords, the Lord our righteousness, Emmanuel, God with us, wonderful counselor, the mighty God, the Father of eternity, the Prince of peace, the great I AM, the Lord of all.

*But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right or the power to become children of God, {even} to those who believe in His name, who were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. (Joh 1:12-13)*

This is a reference to what is known as common and efficacious grace. We become members of the Royal Family of God the same way racial Israel becomes true Israel, by the grace of God.

There are seven propositions, or conclusions, we can draw with regard to the subject of the grace of God:

1) In His grace, God does reveal to mankind that God exists. All you have to do is look at the Bible, and then look at current events and you'll see that is true. Evidence that there is a God and that God exists and the soon return of the Lord Jesus Christ is overwhelming. It could be any moment, and there are many signs given in the word of God of what to watch for (Mat 16:1-3). We are told just before our Lord comes back the signs of the times or the trends, especially in the client nation would begin with Israel's rebirth (Mat 24:32-33). As Jesus prophesied, the Jews were scattered during the Jewish-Roman war of AD 70 (Luk 21:24). Also prophesied to occur before Christ's return, the nation of Israel was miraculously reborn on May 14, 1948. There also would be a decline of morality (2Ti 3:1-4). We see a shocking breakdown in our society in this generation more than ever before. There would be famines, violence and wars (Mat 24:7). There would be an explosion of travel, knowledge, education (Dan 12:4). In all of history, the vast increase in travel has come in just the last 50 years of both ground and air transportation. Then you have the increase in education, with the advance of science and computers. Explosion of cults and the occult (Mat 24:5). Counterfeit spirituality is everywhere with cults and false christs, psychic phenomena, spiritism, satan worship, witchcraft, nature worship, aliens, UFO's, USO's. There would be a one World order (Mat 24:15; Dan 7-12). Increased centralization of world financial and political power is a prelude to the soon-coming world power system in the hands of "Antichrist," who will be the incarnation of Satan, and he will deceive most of the world (Dan 7-12, Mat 24:15, Rev13). The Bible also tells us that in the last days that there will be a form of godliness (2Ti 3:5). Today many churches deny the eternal truths of Scripture and power of the Holy Spirit, replacing them with ungodly, temporal and "politically correct" values.

2) God reveals Himself through the Bible or the Word of God.

3) God has a plan for the Church.

4) God's plan is based on a policy; God's policy is always called grace.

- 5) The grace of God is divided into three categories: Pre-salvation grace (Tit 2:11). Salvation grace (2Co 6:1-2). Post-salvation grace (Col 2:6).
- 6) The Church-age believer is saved by grace; therefore, we are required by God to live by grace.
- 7) Every believer owes both the plan and the grace of God a hearing.

As God expresses His love to those whom He saves by the gracious things He has done, Christian service for God should also be based upon "grace." Salvation must be understood and treated as a gift from God, and Christian service and faithfulness must be the expression of the believer's love and gratitude to God. This is the confidence a believer can have that he is fulfilling the plan of God. That he is not just claiming to be a child of God, but he is living as though he is a child of God.

*For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand, that we should walk in them. (Eph 2:10)*

This is what Rom 9:6 is saying, For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel; For they are not all believers who claim to be believers; They are not all Christians who are claim to be Christians;

So again, our entire verse says, **However, this rejection** [of the Jews concerning their spiritual heritage] **is not to imply as though the word of God has failed. For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel; (Rom 9:6).** This simply means that if you have the genes of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and the twelve Patriarchs, you are a Jew, or a part of Israel, as far as your physical birth and descent is concerned. As far as the imputation of human life at birth, that's true, however, as we have seen, Abraham was regenerate, Isaac was regenerate, and Jacob was regenerate. Remember Gal 3:28 says, **There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.** However, many of the Jews thought that all they had to be was Jewish, and that made them qualified for all the promises of God given to Abraham's seed. They thought that they were somehow special to God even though they did not even seek to know Him. A lot of believers are like that. They think that they are special to God, and yet they have no idea about His basic doctrines in the Bible. They make statements like "My Lord and Savior does this for me and my God does this." Yet they don't even know God. They don't worship God, they don't obey God. Many of them will go to heaven without ever having even read the Bible.

So, the promises were given to the spiritual seed of Abraham, not to the natural seed. The spiritual analogy, and application, for us is that many Christians think that all they have to do is believe in Christ, and that makes them qualified for all the promises of God given to them in Christ. However, these promises are given to those believers who live the spiritual life. These promises are not to those who like the Jews, go through some religious system or formula, and do not have a personal relationship with the Lord. That kind relationship is revealed by a spiritual relationship with His people. This is why the apostle Paul says;

Now the promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. He does not say, "And to seeds," as referring to many, but rather to one, "And to your seed," that is, Christ. (Gal 3:16)

Abraham's seed, in this context, is the Lord Jesus Christ. Remember that the seed of Abraham is both real (the Lord Jesus Christ) and spiritual (all those who believe in Christ). He didn't promise this to the Jews because of their birth, or because they are descended from Abraham. No one has these promises by any natural birth, but only by the new birth: **"Ye must be born again."** The Jews are claiming that they were special people to God simply because they were related to Abraham physically rather than spiritually.

*As He spoke these things, many came to believe in Him. Jesus therefore was saying to those Jews who had believed Him, "If you abide in My word, {then} you are truly disciples of Mine; and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." They answered Him, "We are Abraham's offspring, and have never yet been enslaved to anyone; how is it that You say, 'You shall become free?'" Jesus answered them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, everyone who commits sin is the slave of sin. And the slave does not remain in the house forever; the son does remain forever. If therefore the Son shall make you free, you shall be free indeed. I know that you are Abraham's offspring; yet you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you. I speak the things which I have seen with {My} Father; therefore you also do the things which you heard from {your} father." They answered and said to Him, "Abraham is our father." Jesus said to them, "If you are Abraham's children, do the deeds of Abraham. But as it is, you are seeking to kill Me, a man who has told you the truth, which I heard from God; this Abraham did not do. You are doing the deeds of your father." They said to Him, "We were not born of fornication; we have one Father, {even} God." Jesus said to them, "If God were your Father, you would love Me; for I proceeded forth and have come from God, for I have not even come on My own initiative, but He sent Me. Why do you not understand what I am saying? {It is} because you cannot hear My word. "You are of {your} father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own {nature;} for he is a liar, and the father of lies." (Joh 8:30-44)*

Those who are related to Abraham spiritually are those who are born again; those who are related to Abraham physically are the Jews - unregenerate. **He does not say, "And to seeds," as referring to many, but rather to one, "And to your seed," that is, Christ. (Gal 3:16).** This explains the singular of the word **seed**. To Abraham's seed (singular) is Christ. In the Church-age we are in union with Christ, therefore we are also Abraham's seed, singular. This passage teaches that Abraham's seeds grow as the Jewish nation - those who are descended from him. However, the Jewish nation does not have salvation simply by being descended from Abraham, or by keeping the law, but only by believing in the promise seed, the Lord Jesus Christ. Both of these principles were problems to the Jews. Like many Christians, and those who claim to be Christian, they followed a set of rules or formulas, thinking they were pleasing God (Rom 10:2).

*What I am saying is this: the Law, which came four hundred and thirty years later, does not invalidate a covenant previously ratified by God, so as to nullify the promise. (Gal 3:17)*

This means that you cannot please God by following a set of rules, laws, or a formula to receive the promises of God, or to please God. You cannot turn the spiritual life into some man-made formula. That includes doctrinal ministries.

*"God is spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth." (Joh 4:24)*

Notice spirit comes first. You need truth, or doctrine, but it has to be based upon a spiritual life.

*"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life. (Joh 6:63)*

*What I am saying is this: the Law, which came four hundred and thirty years later, does not invalidate a covenant previously ratified by God, so as to nullify the promise. For if the inheritance is based on law, it is no longer based on a promise; but God has granted it to Abraham by means of a*



*promise. Why the Law then? It was added because of transgressions, having been ordained through angels by the agency of a mediator, until the seed should come to whom the promise had been made. (Gal 3:17-19)*

Notice that the law was added to reveal all the transgressions that the Jews were committing, until the seed came. The seed is a reference to Christ. Once the reality came, the shadows were gone.

*And when you were dead in your transgressions and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He made you alive together with Him, having forgiven us all our transgressions, having canceled out the certificate of debt consisting of decrees against us and which was hostile to us; and He has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross. When He had disarmed the rulers and authorities, He made a public display of them, having triumphed over them through Him. Therefore let no one act as your judge in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day- things which are a mere shadow of what is to come; but the substance belongs to Christ. (Col 2:13-17)*

We are not to get so technical about the written word or the principles of doctrine that we become inflexible and forget about the importance of the living word, the Lord Jesus Christ. The way you do that is found in the next two verses; Let no one keep defrauding you of your prize by delighting in self-abasement and the worship of the angels, taking his stand on visions he has seen, inflated without cause by his fleshly mind, and not holding fast to the head, from whom the entire body, being supplied and held together by the joints and ligaments, grows with a growth which is from God (Col 2:13-17).

In verses 18-19 we have the religious attack. Whenever you start talking about legalism inevitably you start talking about religion. The devil is the father of all religion and Christianity is not a religion. Christianity is a relationship with God. Religion is seeking to gain the approbation of God by human works. Line upon line, and precept upon precept, and doctrinal principles are vitally important. However, they are designed to teach us to take care of our own vineyard, and increase our spiritual life. Christianity is God working on man's behalf; religion is man seeking to work on God's behalf. So they are antithetical in every way. Therefore, one of the great attacks of Satan against the truth, and against Christianity, is the religious attack manifested in every generation especially with program spirituality.

Some people succumb to the religious attack by catering to asceticism in their old sin nature. Asceticism is simply a strict adherence to rules, regulations, and formulas. The principle is that religion attacks in different ways because there is a great deal of difference between taking pleasure in self-effacement, and in the worship of angels. One has a religious source in the old sin nature, the other has a religious source outside of the soul of the person who becomes a sucker to it. Religion involves the worship or the teachings of demons. It is possible for those who are born again believers to get involved with worship, or the teachings, of the fallen angels. This attack of religion is based upon two principles. The first is that Satan attacks the authority of the Bible. He says that what you dream, what you have in a trance, what you see when you get ecstatic, is just as real or more real than what the Bible says, therefore go for ecstatic. This is where the holy-rollers get into the picture. So this is an attack upon the authority of the Word of God. Secondly, it emphasizes feeling and ecstatic experience as having merit. How you feel becomes more important than what the Bible says. This results in what Col 2:18 says, **inflated without cause by his fleshly mind**. The inflation without cause means to be inflated with pride or arrogance. Literally meaning, **"being inflated with arrogance."** The passive voice indicates the subject, the reversionistic believer, receives the action of the verb through one of these attacks of religion.

# SPIRITUAL MECHANICS MUST BE PARLAYED INTO SPIRITUAL DYNAMICS. PART 2.

The Doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments.

10/12/08

*Let no one keep on declaring you ineligible [of your prize is implied by the Greek verb katabrabeuo] by delighting in self-abasement and the worship of the angels, taking his stand on visions he has seen, inflated without cause by his fleshly mind, (Col 2:18)*

This passage says that you become ineligible for your reward for glorifying God by succumbing to the attack of religion. In our day this is done through rituals like program spirituality, and obsession with doctrinal information. The term self-abasement refers to false humility, and the fact that most people are impressed by outward appearance, tone of voice, language, or what they, or someone else, may give up, especially if it causes them pain or inconvenience. False humility is not a Christian virtue, it is an attack of religion.

There is a second system of religion besides rituals, program spirituality, or statistical obsession in Col 2:18 that we need to beware of: That is the worship of angels. "Worshipping of angels" actually means religious worship, and it involves the worship of the teachings, or the doctrines of demons (fallen angels).

*But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons. (1Ti 4:1)*

It is possible for born again believers to get involved with the worship, or the doctrines of the fallen angels without even knowing it. Notice the phrase in Col 2:18, **taking his stand on visions he has seen, inflated without cause by his fleshly mind**, this refers to dreams, visions, and hallucinations. This attack of religion is based upon two principles: First, Satan attacks the authority of the Bible, he says that what you dream, see in a trance, see when you get ecstatic, or experience, is just as real, or more real than what the Bible says. This is an attack upon the authority of the Word of God. Second, it emphasizes feeling and ecstatic experiences as having merit, and that how you feel as being more important than what the Bible says. This results in "**being inflated without cause by his fleshly mind**".

The phrase "inflation without cause" is a present passive participle of the Greek word "phusioo" which means to be inflated with pride or arrogance. Literally it means being inflated or puffed up with arrogance. The passive voice indicates the subject, and the reversionistic believer receives the action of the verb through one of these attacks of religion.

Notice in the next verse the problem this type of believer has, and why they are not having a personal relationship with the Living Word, the Lord Jesus Christ, through the written word, Bible doctrine. I want you to really pay attention to this because Satan is a genius at taking truth and distorting it. That's why the solution to these attacks are given in verse 19 which mentions two individuals: One is the Lord Jesus Christ, and occupation with Him, the other is a divinely appointed officer in the local assembly called the joints and ligaments. **And not holding fast to the head, from whom the entire body, being supplied and held together by the joints and ligaments, grows with a growth which**

**is from God (Col 2:19).** The present active participle of "krateo" is the word used for "holding" and it means to seize, apprehend, to be occupied with someone, or something. The term "the Head" is the accusative singular noun "kephale" which refers to the Lord Jesus Christ, and His absolute sovereignty over His body, the Church. It is not only used for the head, but it is used for superiority, for the chief, or the principle one to whom all are subordinate. When a believer is occupied with the Head, the Lord Jesus Christ, that believer will reveal it by living a life manifested by fruit from the daily function of perception, metabolization, and application toward doctrine. The concept of Christ as the head of the Church is found in such passages as Eph 1:22-23; Eph 5:23; Eph 2:16; Eph 4:4-5; Col 1:18; Col 1:24.

It is only through Bible doctrine that we have capacity to love Jesus Christ. **Thus says the Lord, "Let not a wise man boast of his wisdom, and let not the mighty man boast of his might, let not a rich man boast of his riches; but let him who boasts boast of this, that he *understands and knows Me*, that I am the Lord who exercises lovingkindness, justice, and righteousness on earth; for I delight in these things, declares the Lord" (Jer 9:23-24).** With doctrine as the working object of faith, the believer has maximum response causing him to be designated "philos Theos," a "lover of God." Not just a lover of God's word, Bible doctrine, but God Himself.

Let's note some principles.

1. When a believer is occupied with the Head, his life is based upon the glorification of the Lord Jesus Christ. **If then you have been raised up with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. (Col 3:1-2)**

2. Occupation with the Head, the Lord Jesus Christ, is the standard operating procedure for the Christian life, and it demands that we take in doctrine and become occupied with the person of Christ. **"Be concentrating on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our doctrine, who because of the exhibited happiness, He endured the Cross and disregarded [by the use of the problem solving devices] the shame [imputation of our sins], and He sat down at the right hand of God" (Heb 12:2).**

3. Occupation with Christ is illustrated by the doctrine of right-man, right-woman (Eph 5:25-32; 1Co 11:7).

4. Occupation with the Head, the Lord Jesus Christ, is manifested by the function of perception, metabolization, and application toward doctrine, and the believer responding to the love of Jesus Christ. **Therefore, putting aside all filthiness and all that remains of wickedness, in humility receive the word implanted, which is able to save your souls. But prove yourselves doers of the word, and not merely hearers who delude themselves (Jam 1:21-22).**

5. Occupation with the Head, the Lord Jesus Christ, includes total dependence on grace provision leading especially to this function in the supergrace life. **"Delight yourself in the Lord; And He will give you the desires of your heart. Commit your way to the Lord, Trust also in Him, and He will do it. He will bring forth your righteousness as the light And your judgment as the noonday (Psa 37:4-5),**

6. Occupation with Christ is related to both stability and inner happiness. **"I have set the Lord continually before me; Because He is at my right hand, I will not be shaken. Therefore my heart is glad and my glory rejoices; My flesh also will dwell securely Psa 16:8-9).**

7. Occupation with Christ is the basis for blessing in suffering. While reversionism intensifies suffering, occupation with Christ minimizes suffering. **And He has said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for power is perfected in weakness." Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, that the power of Christ may dwell in me. Therefore I am well content with weaknesses, with insults, with distresses, with persecutions, with difficulties, for Christ's sake; for when I am weak, then I am strong (2Co 12:9-10).**

8. Occupation with Christ is based on the believer's entrance into the supergrace life (Heb 3:1-6).

The second half of this verse deals with God means of protecting you from religion, rituals, program spirituality, or even obsession with knowledge, **and not holding fast to the head or occupied with Christ], from whom the entire body [the church], being supplied and held together by the joints and ligaments, grows with a growth which is from God (Col 2:19).**

We live in a world that is deceived, and that deception is revealed by men who are told that have to lay down their life, and study until they are exhausted. **For this reason, we [pastors] work hard to the point of exhaustion, and we hang in there tough [keep on contending], because we have confidence in the living God, Who is the Savior of all men, especially of believers (1Ti 4:10).** These men are responsible to reveal the deception of this world system which is designed to take you away from the real reason you have been created and why you are here.

The phrase the **"joints and ligaments"** is an interesting phrase, remember that the Lord Jesus Christ is the head of the body, He is not the joints or the ligaments. We will see that the joints refers to the pastor-teacher, and the ligaments refers to the unity which results from doctrinal communication. What supplies and holds together the body of Christ? We have the phrase "by the joints" which is the preposition "dia" plus the definite article "toon" plus the noun "hafoon" translated joints. Next we have a conjunction "kai" translated "and" then ligaments which is the noun "sundesmoon." The joints refer to the ministry of the pastor-teacher who is used to communicate to the body. The word for ligaments is used in the N.T. as a bond which holds things together. Therefore the unity that must exist in the body of Christ as the Lord Jesus Christ communicates to certain parts of the body through the pastor-teacher, is based upon the communication of doctrine. The communication of Bible doctrine from whoever is your right pastor teacher will pull together all kinds of personalities, nationalities, both male and female.

Let me explain why the joints and ligaments has to refer to a particular gift in the body of Christ, and why it is the pastor teacher. The phrase "the body of Christ" is used to designate all Church-age believers in their relationship with Jesus Christ. It speaks of literal members of the royal family using the physical body as the analogy. **For just as we have many members in one body and all the members do not have the same function, So we, who are many, are one body in Christ, and individually members one of another (Rom 12:4-5).**

The joints and the ligaments has to refer to certain members of the body who provide nourishment and unity. Therefore, joints and ligaments refer to the pastor-teacher who communicates the doctrine which provides nourishment, proper function and unity in the body of Christ. If the apostles and prophets were still around then it would also refer to them, but it cannot refer to the evangelist because he provides gospel information for those outside of the body.

So, the joints and the ligaments refer to certain members of the body of Christ who have the specific

function of supplying motion, coordination, strength, and body action. Again, the joints refers to the point of contact that the Lord Jesus Christ, the head of the body, uses to communicate with His own body and therefore the teaching ministry of the pastor-teacher. Ligaments is used in the N.T. as a bond which holds things together, and therefore the unity that must exist in the body of Christ as the Lord Jesus Christ communicates to parts of the body through the communication of doctrine.

### **The Doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments.**

#### **Point 1. The joint analogy to the pastor-teacher.**

In the physical body, all members (parts) of the body are linked by joints or ligaments. Joints are those parts of the body where bones or elements of a skeleton join. Joints permit motion and coordination of the human body. Ligaments are tissue used to connect joint extremities and can also be tough tissue used to support an organ of the body. In 1Co 12 different parts of the body represent different spiritual gifts in the royal family of God. When the body of Christ is mentioned as His Church spiritual gifts are often mentioned in the same passages.

*Now there are varieties of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are varieties of ministries, and the same Lord. There are varieties of effects, but the same God who works all things in all persons. But to each one is given the manifestation of the Spirit for the common good. (1Co 12:4-7)*

Notice that there are different effects in the body, but it's the same God who works all things in all persons. **For even as the [physical] body is one and yet has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ. (1Co 12:12)**

*But now God has placed the members, each one of them, in the body, just as he desired. (1Co 12:18)*

Joints and ligaments provide motion, coordination, strength, and body action. At the moment of salvation, one of the forty things we receive is a spiritual gift. Different parts of the body represent the variety of differences among believers from the standpoint of spiritual gifts, growth, progress, function, and personality. Just as there are differences in joints of the body, so there are differences among pastor-teachers. The spiritual gift is given to many different types of personalities. Men with the gift of evangelism have personalities designed to attract, and hold the attention of unbelievers so they might understand the issue of the gospel. However, the word "joint" does not apply to the evangelist, but only to the pastor-teacher, the one who communicates doctrine for the body's spiritual growth. Just like the joints in your physical body have to function everyday, the pastor-teacher has to communicate doctrine everyday. His responsibility is to inculcate his congregation with Bible doctrine, which is an entirely different type of ministry than evangelism.

Pastors have different types of personalities. However, the casting director is God the Holy Spirit. **But one and the same spirit works all these things, distributing to each one individually just as He wills (1Co 12:11).** The spiritual gift is given, however every pastor must have preparation and persistence. He must teach line upon line, precept upon precept. Pastors who teach doctrine have a variety of personalities, vocations, attitudes, activities, and functions in life. All the members of the royal family of God are analogous to the "Body of Christ," all linked together by the doctrinal teaching of the pastor. The emphasis of this doctrinal teaching must focus on the mystery doctrine of the Church-age, found in the epistles. The pastor's function must not be related to his personality, but to the content of his message. The less the message content, the more the emotional preaching and nonsense. You can receive limited blessing from reading the Bible for yourself, but you can never

learn how to execute the PPOG from that method.

## **Point 2. Joints Are the Basis for Exercise and Building Strength in the Body.**

First, without joints, the human body would degenerate and deteriorate. Likewise, without the faithful function of pastor-teachers, the body of Christ or royal family of God would lack spiritual growth and retrogress from lack of spiritual food, vitality, and power. This is the reason why believers get involved with asceticism, religion, legalism, and emotionalism. They do not stay occupied with the Head of the body, and they reject the joints and ligaments that the Lord supplies for spiritual growth.

Secondly, muscle is constructed from consistent exercise, which involves the use of the joints. Repetitious beneficial exercise involves the consistent function of the joints which is analogous to the faithful and consistent teaching of Bible doctrine by your right pastor-teacher.

*But have nothing to do with worldly fables fit only for old women. On the other hand, discipline yourself for the purpose of godliness; (1Ti 4:7)*

The organization of your time, the setting up of your priorities is very important. Godliness is simply a lifestyle for the "spiritual" believer. It requires self-discipline and organization to execute the PPOG even if you have Bible doctrine as your number 1 priority. There are many times when you do not want to come to Bible class. Many legitimate and even illegitimate reasons are given. However, it takes a lot of self-discipline to get here. Then once you get here it takes more self-discipline to listen, especially if it's not your favorite subject. **For bodily discipline is only of little profit, but godliness is profitable for all things, it holds promise for this life and the life to come (1Ti 4:8).** There is profit in physical exercise but it's only for a short time. You have to be consistent for exercise to be profitable. Godliness, or living the spiritual life, is the result of consistency in the perception of doctrine. Your consistency is very important because the doctrine you learn today is going to carry you for a short time. That's another reason why doctrines have to be repeated and are repeated in certain books of the Bible.

The word discipline means to drive on or something performed or practiced in order to develop skill. Anyone can exercise even in the spiritual realm, but for a person to stick with it consistently takes character. Exercise for the Royal family in the congregation of the local church means:

- 1) self-discipline
- 2) assembling together
- 3) concentrating on the teaching
- 4) good-manners
- 5) silence.
- 6) not commenting
- 7) not disturbing
- 8) not moving-around
- 9) objectivity
- 10) persistence in spite of distraction.

So, exercise in the spiritual realm is used in the Bible to reveal how we grow spiritually!

*For everyone who partakes only of milk is not accustomed to the righteous word, for he is a babe. But solid food [solid doctrine] is for the mature, who because of practice have their senses trained to discern good and evil. (Heb 5:13-14)*

**Point 3. Joints provide body action.**

By analogy, every function and action in life must be motivated by thought energy, the divine viewpoint printed on the neurons of the brain in the form of metabolized doctrine. Two categories of doctrine cause you to grow spiritually: 1) Epignosis is the metabolized doctrine that goes into your right lobe. 2) Sophia is the metabolized doctrine on the launching pad of your right lobe being applied to experience in life. You can only receive those two categories of doctrine through the function of perception and metabolization of doctrine from the pastor-teacher who communicates the Word of God accurately.

# SPIRITUAL MECHANICS MUST BE PARLAYED INTO SPIRITUAL DYNAMICS. PART 3.

The Doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments. Part 2.

10/19/08

**We are studying The Doctrine of the Joints and Ligaments.  
We have seen Points 1-3 in detail, here is a quick review.**

## **Point 1. The Joint Analogy to the Pastor-teacher.**

In the physical realm, joints provide motion, coordination, strength, and body action. In the spiritual realm, the pastor-teacher is to provide the spiritual information or the ligaments that the body of Christ needs for provide motion, coordination, strength, and body action. The purpose of the pastor-teacher is covered from two viewpoints in the N.T. First, the objective mandate related to the three-fold purpose of the pastor-teacher which is given in Eph 4:12. That threefold purpose is 1) To equip and train the royal family for combat. 2) For the vocation of the ministry, that is the training of future pastors and evangelists. 3) For the edification of the body, that is to teach, study, discipline (public), reprimand (private), and encourage by steadfastness and doctrine. Secondly, the subjective mandate related to the communication of the mystery doctrine for the Church-age. The subjective mandate for the spiritual joints in the body (the pastor-teacher) related to the communication of the mystery doctrine for the Church-age. **"Be diligent [study] to present yourself approved to God as a workman who does not need to be ashamed, handling accurately the Word of God" (2Ti 2:15).** The pastor must be prepared and ready to analyze the Scriptures from the original languages. Pastors without this training in the original languages are dependent upon other pastors who are so trained. The pastor must also avoid being involved in Christian activism, or being distracted by involving himself in Theological controversy.

## **Point 2. Joints Are the Basis for Exercise and Building Strength in the Body.**

Without joints the human body would degenerate and deteriorate. Likewise, without the faithful function of pastor-teachers, the body of Christ, or royal family of God, would lack spiritual growth, and regress from lack of spiritual food and power. Also, muscle is constructed from consistent exercise, which involves the use of the joints. In the physical realm, repetitious and beneficial exercise involves the consistent and constant function of the joints. The constant use of the joints in exercise is analogous to faithful and consistent teaching of Bible doctrine by your right pastor-teacher to give you the doctrine to build spiritual muscle or strength.

*But have nothing to do with worldly fables fit only for old women. On the other hand, discipline yourself for the purpose of godliness or living the spiritual life; for bodily discipline or exercise is only of little profit (for a short time), but living the spiritual life is profitable for all things, since it holds promise for the present life and also for the life to come. (2Ti 4:7-8)*

The most important thing in your life is your consistency in the spiritual realm. All of your blessings from God depend upon living the spiritual life, and having the spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics. The one thing that you have in this life as a believer which will be profitable for you forever is spiritual living. The principle of exercising and training in the spiritual realm definitely has its place in the function of the joints. If you want to have a capacity for life and enjoy life, it is good



discipline or spiritual exercise which makes you great. God will promote the spiritual believer in His timing, and therefore it will be a divine promotion and not man's promotion. This is because you have learned to wait on the timing of God (Psa 27:14; Psa 37:7-9; Psa 37:34; Pro 24:13-15).

The key word in 1Ti 4:7 is the Greek word *gumnazo* translated *discipline* which means to exercise. *Gumnazo* is used because it requires great self-discipline and training to be consistent, and no believer will ever be protected from apostasy and backsliding without self-discipline. The word also means to exercise naked which the Greeks would do. This implies that when the believer disciplines himself for the purpose of living the spiritual life, he realizes that he is naked before God. Therefore, he does not try to cover his sin or his guilt (Pro 28:13). Also when a Greek exercised in the gym, he exercised naked, but before he went back on the street he put his robe on and people did not see the development in his body. Instead they saw the results, his life, health, and ability to handle problems. The analogy is that in the local assembly you are trained by the joints and the ligaments, out of the local assembly you reveal the results or the fruit of that training. The point is that you can have no capacity to enjoy life without doctrine and you can't have doctrine without discipline. So no one is ever going to reach the ultimate spiritual life without a system of discipline. We are all to be under a spiritual trainer, the joints and the ligaments (pastor-teacher) who teaches doctrine.

### **Point 3. Joints Provide Body Action.**

By analogy, every function and action in life must be motivated by thought, the divine viewpoint printed on the neurons of the brain in the form of metabolized doctrine. Joints provide body action, which refers to the believers who grow spiritually, produce, function, glorify God, and become winners. Winners are believers who live in the PPOG, learn doctrine, pass momentum tests, advance to maturity, fulfill the plan of God, and glorify Jesus Christ through the spiritual mechanics being parlayed into spiritual dynamics. On the other hand, carnal believers who live in the cosmic system, are servants of Satan, are constantly under the control of their old sin nature. They are involved in religion, rituals, program spirituality, obsession with knowledge of doctrine, and cannot be distinguished from unbelievers. Winners are described in Rev 2-3.

### **Point 4. Joints Provide Body Coordination.**

Without the function of the joints, there would be neither body action nor body coordination. If the joints are stiff, you have rigid body action (analogous to the legalistic joints in the spiritual realm). If the joints are free and loose, you have freedom and liberty (analogous to the pastor-teachers who teach you about the grace of God). Without the faithful teaching of the pastor, there would be no fulfillment of the PPOG, and no spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics, and therefore no invisible heroes. Invisible heroes have maximum invisible impact. a). Personal impact. b) Historical impact. c). International impact. d) Angelic impact. e) Heritage impact.

Karl von Clausewitz wrote the book "On War." He wrote ***Every specific calling in life requires special qualities of intellect and temperament.*** Our special calling is the fact that we were elected into the royal family of God at the moment of our salvation. Now our life has meaning, purpose, and definition. ***When these are of a high order and manifest themselves by extraordinary achievements, the mind to which they belong is termed genius. Genius is a superior mental capacity for certain activities.*** By having the spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics and attaining spiritual maturity, you should become a spiritual genius.

***The essence of military genius is to bring under consideration all of the tendencies of mind and soul in combination toward the business of war.*** This refers to our concentration on the message

under the filling of the Spirit.

***We say in combination, for military genius is not just one single quality bearing on war, as for instance courage, but it is a harmonious combination of powers in which one or the other may predominate, but none must be in opposition.*** When we have different parts of the body of Christ in opposition and causing division, we are seeing believers living the fragmented spiritual life in the cosmic system. They will be double-minded, unstable in all ways, and so the book of James tells them to **Draw near to God and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners, (1Jo 1:9); and purify your hearts (PMA), you double-minded (Jam 1:8).**

This means:

- Acknowledgment of personal, post salvation sins (2Sa 12:13; Psa 51:4; 15:18,21; Pro 28:13; 1Jo 1:9; Jer 3:13)
- Appeal to the finished work of Christ as Basis for rebound (instantaneous recovery), Heb 9:14; 1Jo 2:1-2.
- Isolation of the sin (forgetting it) Phi 3:13; Heb 12:15-17.
- Moving on (Phi 3:14; Heb 6:1; Heb.12:12-13).

For us to be in unity, (I'm talking about all of you who consider me to be your joint or pastor-teacher) you must be rightly related to the joint of the body that God has assigned you to (1Pe 5:3). You must learn, and use the spiritual mechanics to strengthen your spiritual skills and have them parlayed into spiritual dynamics. Four

Spiritual Mechanics that you need to learn:

1. Filling of the Holy Spirit,
2. Metabolized Bible doctrine circulating in the soul,
3. Ten problem solving devices,
4. The execution of the PPOG.

Then, the Three Spiritual Skills. You must master these three spiritual skills.

1. The filling of the Holy Spirit is the first spiritual skill in the spiritual life. Without the filling of the Spirit you do not have the power to live the Christian way of life. The filling of the Spirit converts human I.Q. into spiritual I.Q., so that we have equality to learn spiritual phenomena.
2. The second spiritual skill is the word of God circulating in your soul.
3. The third spiritual skill is the problem solving devices deployed on the FLOT line of the soul.

1Ti 4:8 has the phrase **it holds promise for this life**, the word *life* is the Greek word *zoe* which refers to a life which is energetic and enthusiastic. Here is the expanded translation of Phi 3:1-15 taken from the original language.

**But whatever quality of things were gains to me, those things [gains] I have concluded as an expert as loss for the sake of Christ. Not only this but more than this, I conclude as an expert all things [Paul's pre-salvation human celebrityship and achievement] to be loss [singular] because of the surpassing greatness of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, for whom I have forfeited all things, also, I keep on concluding as an expert them to be piles of dung in order that I may win for Christ, and that I may be found in Him, not having my own righteousness derived from the source of the Law, but that [righteousness] which is acquired by means of faith in Christ, the righteousness which comes from the source of the God at the point of faith, that I may come to know Him [and that has been the purpose of this entire study of having the spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics], and the power of [behind] His resurrection and the participation of His sufferings, being conformed to His death; (Phi 3:7-10)**

The ultimate goal is found in Phi 3:10 **that I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection and the fellowship of His sufferings, being conformed to His death;** This is your life, this is the true meaning of life on this earth, "knowing Him". Once we begin to know Him, we can begin to know ourselves. Once we begin to know Him, we can begin to know Our Father, and our Mentor.

*"If you had known Me, you would have known My Father also; from now on you know Him, and have seen Him." Philip said to Him, "Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for us." Jesus said to him, "Have I been so long with you, and yet you have not come to know Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father; how can you say, 'Show us the Father'? Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and the Father is in Me? The words that I say to you I do not speak on My own initiative, but the Father abiding in Me does His works. Believe Me that I am in the Father and the Father is in Me; otherwise believe because of the works themselves. Truly, truly, I say to you, he who believes in Me, the works that I do, he will do also; and greater works than these he will do; because I go to the Father. Whatever you ask in My name, that will I do, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you ask Me anything in My name, I will do it. If you love Me, you will keep My commandments. I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may be with you forever; that is the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, but you know Him because He abides with you and will be in you. I will not leave you as orphans; I will come to you. After a little while the world will no longer see Me, but you will see Me; because I live, you will live also. In that day you will know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you. He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him." Judas (not Iscariot) said to Him, "Lord, what then has happened that You are going to disclose Yourself to us and not to the world?" Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him. He who does not love Me does not keep My words; and the word which you hear is not Mine, but the Father's who sent Me. These things I have spoken to you while abiding with you. But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you. (Joh 14:7-26)*

Nowhere do the spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics mean more than here. We cannot trust anyone further than we know them. So, we must not only learn the doctrines involved but even more importantly we must come to know Him more intimately as the One who presents and upholds those doctrines, for Bible doctrine is His mind. No one can experience eternal life without knowing God the Father and God the Son. You can have eternal life without knowing God the Father and God the Son but you will not experience that eternal life until you come to know them. **Grace and peace be multiplied to you in the [epignosis] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord; seeing that His divine power has granted to us everything pertaining to our natural life and godliness our spiritual life, through the true knowledge [full epignosis knowledge] of Him who called us by His own glory and excellence. For by these He has granted to us His precious and magnificent promises, in order that by them you might become partakers of the divine nature, (2Pe 1:1-4)**

The partakers of the divine nature are those who partake of their new position in Christ experientially and they can only do so through the spiritual mechanics being parlayed into spiritual dynamics. As soon as God touches a believer who has been seeking for Him, He gives that believer an instinct to continue to so and to return to Him more perfectly and be united with Him. Something within the seeking believer aspires him to keep on seeking to a place deep within, to a place of rest. Some receive

it in a larger portion, according to God's design, others to a smaller degree, by God's design. Knowing Him all begins with one very simplistic but valuable word. It is something that is very precious to all of us: Time. Time is something that we cherish especially if we love life. Time is very interesting when you think about the fact that the future can influence the present just like the past can influence the present. We learn from the past, and we have hopes regarding the future. Most believers don't know what to do with their time, in this short life, and yet they want a life which is eternal.

Sanctified time is time set apart to learn of Him, and then the ability to wait on the timing of God as He works within us. Most of God's people have difficulty in realizing and facing up to the fact that God is not on a timetable, and He is not in a hurry in His development of their Christian life (Phi 1:6). Many feel they are not making any spiritual progress unless they are swiftly and constantly forging ahead. It is true that the new believer often begins, and continues growing for some time at a very fast rate. But this will not continue if there is to be a healthy spiritual growth and ultimate spiritual maturity. God Himself will modify and control the pace. Don't worry God is in control.

The writer of the book of Hebrews put it like this: **Now the God of peace, who brought up from the dead the great Shepherd of the sheep through the blood of the eternal covenant, even Jesus our Lord, equip you in every good thing to do His will, which means to strengthen, complete and perfect you and make you what you ought to be and equip you with everything good that you may carry out His will; [while He Himself] works in us and accomplishes that which is pleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ; to Whom be the glory forever and ever. Amen (Heb 13:20-21).**

No one can experience eternal life without knowing God the Father and God the Son. You can have eternal life without knowing God the Father and God the Son, but you will not experience that eternal life until you come to know Them. Knowing Him, however, all begins with that one very simplistic word: Time. We have a tendency not to enjoy when He is working within us accomplishing that which is pleasing in His sight. We would rather have that which is pleasing in our sight. It is a matter of God at work in us in His timing and His ways.

Peter warns us about this in 2Pe 3:14 when he says, "Therefore, beloved, since you are expecting these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, spotless and blameless, Since you are expecting what things? In 2Pe 3:10 the day of the Lord coming like a thief in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed with intense heat, and the earth and its works will be burned up. Then in 2Pe 3:12, looking forward to the coming of the day of God, on account of which the heavens will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat! Therefore beginning in 2Pe 3:14 beloved, since you are expecting these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, spotless and blameless, and regard the patience of our Lord to be salvation or in some cases deliverance for the believer; just as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom or the spiritual insight given him, wrote to you, as also in all his letters, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which the untaught and unstable distort, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction. You therefore, beloved, knowing this beforehand, be on your guard lest, being carried away by the error of unprincipled men, you fall from your own steadfastness, but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen." (2Pe 3:14-18).

The spiritual life matures and becomes productive by the principle of growth. There are no shortcuts to living the spiritual life, no shortcuts to spiritual reality.

# IT HAS ALWAYS TAKEN RESURRECTION LIFE FOR GOD TO EXPRESS HIMSELF IN HUMAN BEINGS.

10/26/08

*For we know that the Law is spiritual, but I am of [or belonging to the realm of] flesh [sin nature], sold into bondage to sin (Rom 7:14). The next verse was written by Paul at least 20 years after becoming a Christian, For what I am doing, I do not understand; for I am not practicing what I would like to do, but I am doing the very thing I hate (Rom 7:15).*

We all have a legitimate desire to please the Lord, it is a desire that increases as we increase our intake of doctrine, and try to have spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics through the use of the spiritual skills. Paul is saying that he really wants to advance spiritually, and please God by reaching maturity, however, there's a problem, these good intentions are hindered by the work of the O.S.N. with it's trends toward sin, good and evil. **But if I do the very thing I do not want to do, I agree with the Law, confessing that the Law is good (Rom 7:16).**

Doctrine helps you recognize your flaws and the control that the O.S.N. has over you. Paul is saying if I keep on doing what I do not want to do, then I realize that the law is good, and the word of God is good because it reveals my helplessness. That of course was the purpose of the law and the commandments, to reveal our helplessness.

*So now no longer am I the one doing it, but the sin nature which is indwelling me. For I know that nothing good of intrinsic value dwells in me, that is in my flesh [sin nature], for the desire is present in me but the doing of the good is not or I cannot do it. For the good of intrinsic value that I desire to do, I do not do but I practice the very evil which I do not desire to do. But if I am doing the very thing I do not wish to do [and I am], I am no longer the one doing it, but the sin nature which dwells in me. I find then the principle, that evil is present with me, the one who desires to do the good [virtuous, noble]. For I joyfully concur with the Law of God with reference to my inner man [doctrine in his mentality]. (Rom 7:17-22)*

This is a positive believer who now sees that doctrine has provided him with standards which now reveal to him, the truth that sets us free.

*But I see a different Law [principle] in the members of my body [bondage to the OSN], waging war against the law of my mind or trying to put him in bondage, and making me a prisoner to the law of the sin nature which is in the members [cell structure] of my body. I am a miserable [wretched] person! Who will rescue me from the body of this death [the old sin nature]? Thanks be to God or grace belongs to God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, on the one hand, with my mind I am myself serving the law of God; but on the other hand, with my flesh [old sin nature in control of the soul], I am serving the law of the sin nature. (Rom 7:23-25)*

And then remember, in the original language of scripture there is no chapter break, **There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. For the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death (Rom 8:1-2).** Paul discovered that the battle between the O.S.N. and living the spiritual life is overcome by a new and powerful principle, that of the Spirit of life, or zoe found in the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul found his answer in

realizing that even as a believer he could not keep the Law, and that religion, rituals, program spirituality, man-made rules only kept him in bondage. Paul no longer felt any obligation to try and change. He had finally accepted the fact that he was totally depraved, and there was no hope of pleasing God unless God did the work Himself. He really understood what he wrote in next verse. **For what the Law could not do, weak as it was through the flesh, God did: sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and as an offering for sin, He condemned sin in the flesh, in order that the requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit (Rom 8:3-4).** Paul made the great discovery that when he stopped relying on self and instead relied on God to express His resurrection, live through him, the righteous requirement of the Law was fully met in him.

Why is there no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus? Why has the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus set us free? Why did God send His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for a sin offering? Verse 4 tells us the reason for the entire grace policy of God, **in order that the requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us.** What is the righteous requirement of the Law? First, the law demands perfection. If you want blessing from God, God demands perfection. Therefore, God had to perfect us before He could bless us. The Law promises blessing to those who are righteous. Who are the righteous? Those who have personally believed in the Lord Jesus Christ.

God is perfect and perfection cannot bless imperfection. Therefore, God must give us something of Himself to make us perfect. At salvation perfect righteousness was imputed to us. Now that we have perfect righteousness, we are qualified to receive fantastic blessing from God. Perfect righteousness qualifies us for grace blessing. In fact, perfect righteousness demands blessing from the justice of God. Not from the love of God, but from the justice of God. For the righteous requirement of the Law to be fulfilled in us, we must receive the blessings that come from being perfectly righteous. What are these blessings? They are blessings that have been designed specially for each one of us. They are defined in general for us in two passages (Deu 7:12-26; Deu 28:1-14).

Why is there no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus? Why has the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus set us free? Why did God send His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for a sin offering? The answer is in the phrase, **in order that the requirement of the Law,** the Greek word for "requirement" is the noun "dikaionoma" which is where we get the word righteousness from, so we translate it **the righteous requirement of the Law.** So, as we have seen, the righteous requirement of the Law first of all demands perfection. Secondly, the Law promises blessing to those who are righteous.

So, what did the Lord Jesus Christ do? Did He abolish the Law or fulfill it? **Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill. For truly I say to you, until heaven and earth pass away, not the smallest letter or stroke shall pass away from the Law, until all is accomplished. Whoever then annuls one of the least of these commandments, and so teaches others, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever keeps and teaches {them,} he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say to you, that unless your righteousness surpasses {that} of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall not enter the kingdom of heaven (Mat 5:17-20).** The Lord fulfilled the Law completely, and therefore the righteous requirement of the Law was fulfilled in Him. **And there is salvation in no one else; for there is no other name under heaven that has been given among men, by which we must be saved (Act 4:12).**

You are in union with Christ, and therefore you share in everything that He has. You share His life which is eternal life (1Jo 5:11-12). You share Christ's righteousness (2Co 5:21). We have a double perfect righteousness: that of the Father's from imputation at salvation, and that of the Son's through union with Him. We share the election of Christ, an escrow election (Eph 1:3-4). We share the destiny of Christ, a protocol pre-destination (Eph 1:5-6). We share the sonship of Christ (Gal 3:26). He is the Son of God; we are sons of God by faith in Christ Jesus. We are the heirs of God and joint-heirs with the Son of God (Rom 8:16-17). We are a royal priesthood, sharing the priesthood of Christ (1Pe 2:5, 9). We are adopted into the royal family of God (Eph 1:5). We are a royal family of kings (Rev 1:6, Rev 5:10). So we share everything Christ is, and everything He has, for the head and the body are united into one spiritual entity. We have fulfilled the Law because of our union with Christ. All of these principles just mentioned reveal some of the grace blessings we received from the day of our salvation.

So in Rom 8:4 **in order that the righteous requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us**, here is the whole issue behind the zoe life and the grace of God, and the believer becoming a recipient of that grace in time. The phrase **might be fulfilled** is "plerothe" which means: 1) To fill up a deficiency. We all have a deficiency after salvation. Our deficiency after salvation is that we lack the blessings that God ordained for those who are perfectly righteous. 2) To fully possess, the righteousness of the Law or the righteous requirement of the Law might fully possess us. For the righteousness of the Law to fully possess us we need to receive what the Law promised to those who would fulfill it. 3) To fully influence, if the perfect righteousness of the Law fully influenced us we would be totally blessed. 4) To fill-up with a certain quality, the perfect righteousness of the law will fill us up with a certain quality of life that will lead us to fantastic blessing.

The law requires perfect righteousness, and the divine righteousness in us meets the requirement. God wants the Law to be fulfilled or filled up in us. At the moment of salvation we have a deficiency. We are all minus divine blessing which is the companion of divine righteousness. Divine righteousness and divine blessing go together. The believer's goal is to glorify God. The believer's means to do this is perfect divine righteousness, and the believer's result is divine blessing. All of this brings glory to God in the angelic conflict, and qualifies the believer to be entered into the historic trial of the angelic conflict as evidence for the prosecution. So maybe you will have these blessings, maybe you will not, it all depends on your daily decisions, for you must make decisions.

Rom 8:4, **in order that the requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit**. Only those who walk according to the Spirit, or live the spiritual life can ever have the requirement of the Law fulfilled in them. When a believer walks according to the Spirit, he develops a capacity that qualifies him to be able to receive his escrow blessings in time, and this is how a believer glorifies God. We glorify God not by what we do, but by allowing what He has done to be manifested in time in our lives. The only way we can glorify God is by growing spiritually so that we can receive the divine blessings. Nothing we can do glorifies God. We glorify God by simply being able to receive what He has done for us. What He has done for us ultimately has been done from His grace. Now that His justice is satisfied his grace is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think.

*And God is able to make all grace abound to you, but just as it is written, "Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, And which have not entered the heart of man, All that God has prepared*

for those who love Him.”  
(1Co 9:8-9)

If Paul concentrated on keeping the Law rather than on trusting in the Lord, his old nature was stimulated and he sinned. When Paul concentrated on trusting the Lord, the Spirit energized his new nature, and he found himself living a righteous life. Our obligation is not to the Law, but to respond to the leading of the Holy Spirit.

*For those who are according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For the mind set on the flesh is death, but the mind set on the Spirit is life and peace, because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God, for it is not even able to do so; and those who are in the flesh cannot please God. (Rom 8:5-8)*

*For if you are living according to the flesh, you must die; but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, you will live. For all who are being led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. For you have not received a spirit of slavery leading to fear again, but you have received a spirit of adoption as sons by which we cry out, "Abba! Father!" (Rom 8:13-15)*

*And we know that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose. For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son, (Rom 8:28-29)*

Paul now understood what he was about write to the Phillippian church, **For I am confident of this very thing, that He who has begun in you an absolute good work will complete it until the day of Christ Jesus (Phi 1:6)**. Many believers feel they are not making any spiritual progress unless they are swiftly and constantly forging ahead. However, don't worry God is in control. **Now the God of peace, who brought up from the dead the great Shepherd of the sheep through the blood of the eternal covenant, even Jesus our Lord, will equip you in every good thing to do His will (Heb 13:20-21)**. This means He will strengthen, complete and perfect you, and make you what you ought to be, equip you with every good thing that you may carry out His will. This includes the execution of the spiritual mechanics, the spiritual skills, and the spiritual dynamics, or living in the dynamic spiritual life.

*But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who indwells you. (Rom 8:11)*

Notice this resurrection life, or zoe life, having the spiritual mechanics parlayed into spiritual dynamics can happen to you now, in your mortal bodies. It has always taken resurrection life for God to express Himself in human beings. Resurrection life is exactly what God provides for those who **"live in accordance with the Spirit"** and **"have their minds set on what the Spirit desires."** The spiritual life that God has provided for you is not designed to change your personality or make you different in your personality, as legalists attempt to do. There are all kinds of personalities in the Christian life. Each personality has its very own purpose.

God has given you your very own spiritual life, and you are the only one who can live it. Believers are all different, yet all are in the same hand of God. God has provided for every believer his very own spiritual life with a uniform set of principles and divine mandates, and a means of glorifying Him.



There are changes which occur in you as a result of your Christian life, but there is no mold in the Christian life into which you must fit. All kinds of personalities commit the same sins. The whole issue then, simple as it may be said, is to get to know Him. How do you know if your are truly getting to know Him?

*And by this we know that we have come to know Him, if we keep His commandments. (1Jo 2:3)*

This is how we may discern that we are coming to know Him to perceive, recognize, understand, and become better acquainted with Him: If we keep, guard, bear in mind, observe, practice, His teachings precepts, or commands.

*The one who says, "I have come to know Him," and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him; but whoever keeps His word, in him the love of God has truly been perfected. By this we know that we are in Him: the believer who says he abides in Him ought himself to walk in the same manner as He walked. Beloved, I am not writing a new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning; the old commandment is the word which you have heard [a reference to Gospel all the way back to Gen 3]. On the other hand, I am writing a new commandment to you [basically the proof that a believer is living in the spiritual life], which is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining (1Jo 2:4-8).*

The phrase "light shining out of darkness" is a reference to the surpassing greatness of the power manifested in us by God, and not from ourselves; **The one who loves his brother abides in the light and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But the one who hates his brother is in the darkness and walks in the darkness, and does not know where he is going because the darkness has blinded his eyes (1Jo 2:10-11).** We are back to the subject of impersonal unconditional love being the manifestation of resurrection life alive in you. God have given you everything you could ever need to have this life. The first category of the dynamic spiritual life includes the spiritual gifts and the power of the spiritual life. This is the filling of the Holy Spirit, metabolization of doctrine, and the ten problem solving devices. To abandon your spiritual life is one of the greatest tragedies in life.

The spiritual life is defined in 2Co 4:18 under its simplest concept, "**While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal.**" Many believers do not discover until death how useless their life has been, because they have spent their life trying to prove something in this life to others. When we ignore the power of God found in the filling of the Holy Spirit and metabolized doctrine, we will self-destruct through our own bad decisions, and avoid taking the responsibility for them. This puts us into direct contact with the supreme court of heaven for divine discipline.

True wealth is not measured by God in terms of materialistic things, but in terms of what you have in the right lobe of your soul. Therefore, the emphasis in Scripture is on saving the soul. Thought is wealth. The thinking of doctrine or the "mind of Christ" is provided by God. When we have it circulating in the right lobe of the soul, our spiritual wealth begins to pay great dividends. True wealth is found in such passages as Eph 1:6-7, "**To the praise of the glory of His grace, which (grace) He freely bestowed on us in the Beloved. In Him we have redemption through His blood, the**

**forgiveness of our trespasses, on the basis of the riches of His grace.”** The ”riches of His grace” is our portfolio and extends into every aspect of our life. These riches are provided in grace, you do not earn them, nor do you deserve them.

# THE PLAN FOR THE HUMAN RACE FROM THE ETERNAL AND INFINITE GENIUS OF GOD.

11/02/08

We are living in a day when human viewpoint thinking is irrational and sloppy; a time when the media is trying to shape and control our thinking. The liberals push for ideas and so-called changes that are nothing more than socialism. Socialism is a system of a centralized government that plans and controls the economy. It is a government that takes from the rich, or those who are successful, and gives to what they deem to be the poor, including those who refuse to work. This is a great tragedy, because you should have the right to think for yourself; the right to make your own decisions. The point is that the only hope for straight thinking, or truth, comes from the Word of God, Bible doctrine which is the divine viewpoint of life. This is simply a reminder that we live in challenging times when evil is put out through television, radio, the internet, and on the printed page. So you have to get your facts from the Word of God because basically man has not changed, time has not changed, and history simply repeats itself. As Solomon said "**All things are wearisome; Man is not able to tell {it.} The eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor is the ear filled with hearing. That which has been is that which will be, and that which has been done is that which will be done. So, there is nothing new under the sun. Is there anything of which one might say, 'See this, it is new?' Already it has existed for ages which were before us" (Ecc 1:9-10).** Through our study of the word, we are able to see the tremendous fallacies and the evil propaganda being put out in these United States, almost unchallenged.

Our main passage in Rom 9 has many excellent applications to these present conditions. One application is the importance of avoiding, at all costs, anti-Semitism. Nothing is more disastrous to a client nation to God. The USA is a client nation to God, and one of our responsibilities is to provide a haven for the Jews. Therefore, the more we understand about the Jews from the Word of God, the more clearly we will see the evil & vicious anti-Semitic propaganda that is found in the history books, in the so-called prestigious educational institutions, and in the media.

*I am communicating doctrine, I am not lying, my conscious bearing joint testimony with me in the Holy Spirit, but I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my heart, the right lobe of my soul, so I could wish that I myself would be accursed. Consequently, separated from Christ, but it cannot be, for the sake of, or on behalf of my brethren, the racial Jews. My fellow countrymen, national Jews. According to earthly descent, who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption, and the shekinah glory, and the covenants [by now you know what those covenants are in some detail] and the deposit of the law, and the temple service [which means the service of God in the temples] and the promises, from whom [the Jews or Israelites] are the fathers, [the regenerate ancestors, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob], in fact, from whom is The Christ, the One who came in the flesh, the One who is God, ruler over all, extolled, praised, eulogized forever, Amen. However, this [the rejection of the Jews concerning their spiritual heritage] this [rejection] is not to imply as though the word of God has failed. For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel; (Rom 9:1-6)*

God's plan for the Jew in this life is the same as God's plan for the Gentile; that is freedom to hear the gospel, and freedom to except or reject the gospel. The plan of God goes on with the principle of salvation through faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, who is not only the Savior, but the God of Israel. However, until Jews believe in Christ, the spiritual condition of the individual Jew is no better than a

Gentile or an unbeliever. The only issue in this life is **"What do you think about the Lord Jesus Christ" (Mat 22:42)**. The Apostle Paul said, **"For I am not ashamed of the gospel, for it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes, to the Jew first and also to the Greek" (Rom 1:16)**. It is only after salvation through faith in Christ that the plan of God, and the promises of God, for Israel take effect. This is because after faith in Christ the Jew receives the imputation of divine righteousness and eternal life, and therefore is qualified for blessing from God.

Abraham became a Jew at 99, and at that time he was already a spiritually mature believer. Abraham was a Gentile for the first 99 years of his life, at age 100 he became the first Jew in history. Consequently, the fulfillment of the Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic and New Covenants to Israel demanded the imputation of divine righteousness, and eternal life, and then eventually, in eternity a resurrection body. The problem of Israel is compounded by rejection of Christ as Savior. The real Jew is not the racial Jew, the person who is born with the genes of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, but the real Jew is the born again Jew. That is the Jew who believes in the Shekinah glory, the Lord Jesus Christ. In physical birth, the Jew possesses the genes of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, but simply being the physical seed of Abraham does not save anyone.

Let's review the Plan of God which is a major principle for the correct interpretation of the book of Romans, and in fact, the entire Bible. The first imputation is human life, imputed at birth. That's where we all started as God imputed to each one of us human life. The second imputation comes from the fairness of God, the justice of God, the greatness of the wisdom of God, it is Adam's original sin which is imputed to us, so that we are instantly condemned. God didn't wait around for you to commit your first sin; instead God did you a favor when you were born by immediately imputing Adam's sin to you. By doing that, you received instant condemnation, so that if anyone dies before reaching accountability he is instantly saved since he has already been condemned. Just think of what a terrible thing it would be to be born into this world without the imputation of Adam's sin. All of us have a human father, known or unknown, and it is the human father that transmits the old sin nature. To be born with an old sin nature, and not to receive the imputation of Adam's sin would be a disaster. It would mean that we would have to stay perfect which would be impossible. Instead of going to Heaven, everyone would eventually go to hell, and be separated from God forever. So, God did us a favor when at birth, He instantly condemned us.

The imputation of Adam's original sin was the eternal and infinite genius of God, His Perfect wisdom, and His Perfect plan. First, of all in Gen 2:7 God created the man. **Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being. And the Lord God planted a garden toward the east, in Eden; and there He placed the man whom He had formed (Gen 2:7-8).**

*Then the Lord God took the man and put him into the garden of Eden to cultivate it and keep it. And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, "From any tree of the garden you may eat freely; but from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you shall surely die." Then the Lord God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper suitable for him." (Gen 2:15-18)*

*So the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and he slept; then He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh at that place. And the Lord God fashioned into a woman the rib which He had taken from the man, and brought her to the man. And the man said, "This is now bone of my bones, And flesh of my flesh; She shall be called Woman, Because she was taken out of Man." (Gen 2:21-23)*

And then, you know the rest of the story but I want you to notice the depth of the wisdom of God.

*Now the serpent was more crafty than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, "Indeed, has God said, 'You shall not eat from any tree of the garden?'" And the woman said to the serpent, "From the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat; but from the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat from it or touch it, lest you die.'" And the serpent said to the woman, "You surely shall not die! For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." When the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was a delight to the eyes, and that the tree was desirable to make one wise, she took from its fruit and ate; and she gave also to her husband with her, and he ate. Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings. They heard the sound of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden. Then the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?" And he said, "I heard the sound of Thee in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid myself." And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?" And the man said, "The woman whom Thou gavest to be with me, she gave me from the tree, and I ate." Then the Lord God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" And the woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate." (Gen 3:1-13)*

Having the right man/right woman is not what you think. It's not having the person who is the most compatible with you, or the most agreeable with you. It's the one who causes you to have to get to know God. It's the one who drives you to the problem solving devices. It's the one who pushes you to the realization that you need the grace of God, the mercy of God, and the love of God. That's why even a marriage where one person gets saved, and the other does not can still bring glory to God.

*But to the married I give instructions, not I, but the Lord, that the wife should not leave her husband (but if she does leave, let her remain unmarried, or else be reconciled to her husband), and that the husband should not send his wife away. But to the rest I say, not the Lord, that if any brother has a wife who is an unbeliever, and she consents to live with him, let him not send her away. And a woman who has an unbelieving husband, and he consents to live with her, let her not send her husband away. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified through his wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified through her believing husband; for otherwise your children are unclean, but now they are holy. (1Co 7:10-14)*

The unbelieving spouse is sanctified by the believing spouse. This means that it is divine institution number 2 (marriage) which sanctifies them, this does not refer to positional truth, or the unbelieving spouse being saved. The fact that it is a marriage sanctifies the home in that sense, and the children are legitimate children. The point here is that in a marriage where one spouse is a believer, and the other is not, they can still glorify God by obeying the mandate to stay in the marriage.

Back to the plan of God: We see the genius of God when we look at the fall of man. **Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned (Rom 5:12).**

*But the free gift is not like the transgression. For if by the transgression of the one the many died, much more did the grace of God and the gift by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ, abound to the many. And the gift is not like that which came through the one who sinned; for on the one hand the judgment arose from one transgression resulting in condemnation, but on the other hand the free gift arose from many transgressions resulting in justification. For if by the transgression of the one, death reigned through the one, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will reign in life through the One, Jesus Christ. So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous. And the Law came in that the transgression might increase; but where sin increased, grace abounded all the more, that, as sin reigned in death, even so grace might reign through righteousness to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord (Rom 5:15-21).*

God's great wisdom comes to the rescue when He imputes to us Adam's sin. We only have one testimony, we are sinners, condemned at birth, not condemned because of any sin ever committed. No one is condemned by their personal sins. God saved all of our personal sins, and imputed them all to Christ on the Cross. The issue in salvation is the Lord Jesus Christ because every personal ever committed was imputed to Him and judged. It caused our Lord to scream out, **"My God, My God, why has thou forsaken me."** So, there is no place for arrogance, no place for self-righteousness, no place for salvation by works. God did the work in condemnation, God does the work in salvation. Adam's original sin is imputed to all of us at the moment of birth, and that's condemnation at birth. Condemnation must precede justification for the most obvious reason in the world, because when God imputed life to us, He was imputing human life to an old sin nature in the body. So, we all start at the same place, human life, and we all start with one equality: Adam's original sin is imputed to us, and that imputation sets up the potential for salvation. Once you're condemned then you have a potential for salvation.

So, none of us are ever judged for our sins, Christ was judged for our sins. He was our substitute, He took our place so that everyone has a chance, no one was ever born who didn't have a chance. The tragedy of the Jew is to fail to do what Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob did. That set Abraham up in contrast to his brother Nahor, set Isaac up in contrast to Ishmael, and of course, Jacob in contrast to Esau. So, it was Isaac rather than Ishmael, Jacob rather than Esau who were true Israel. There was a time when Ishmael and Isaac were both equal, however, Ishmael refused to believe in Christ and remained a Gentile. Same thing is true of Esau and Jacob. The heritage that counts, is not from physical birth (the genes of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob), but from the spiritual birth or being born again, and that is the heritage principle.

There is nothing better than instant condemnation from God. The genius of God dealt with the fall of man which resulted in the fall of the entire human race and solved mankind's problem with the justice and righteousness of God.

*Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned, for until the Law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed when there is no law (Rom 5:12-13).*

The sin nature disturbed our relationship with God the extent of that was not as crystal clear until God spelled it out in detail through the Mosaic Law. **Nevertheless death** [this huge separation from

God still dominated mankind=s problem with God and therefore it] **reigned from Adam until Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the offense of Adam, who is a type of Him who was to come. (Rom 5:14)**

Even those who didn't sin like Adam did by disobeying a specific command of God still had to experience this death or separation from God. Adam, who got us into this, is said to a type of the Lord Jesus Christ because He also points ahead to the One who will get us out of it.

*But the free gift is not like the transgression. For if by the transgression of the one the many died, much more did the grace of God and the gift by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ, abound to the many (Rom 5:15).*

Paul is actually stating a spiritual a fortiori [much more], which is the fact that if one man's sin put all mankind in the abyss of separation from God, just think of what God's Gift of salvation through Jesus Christ will do! There's no comparison between death and sin and God=s gracious and generous life-giving gift. The verdict on that one sin was the death sentence; the verdict on the many sins that followed was this wonderful life sentence.

*And the gift is not like that which came through the one who sinned; for on the one hand the judgment arose from one transgression resulting in condemnation [to all], but on the other hand the free gift arose from many transgressions [sins of the world] resulting in justification. For if by the transgression of the one, death reigned through the one, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will reign in life through the One, Jesus Christ. (Rom 5:16-17)*

If death dominated us through one man's sin, can you imagine the breathtaking gift from God through His Son, the last Adam?

*So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous. (Rom 5:18-19)*

Just as one person did it wrong and got us all in this trouble with sin and death, another person did it right and got us out of it. However, more than just getting us out of trouble, He got us into life. The first Adam said no to God and put many people in the wrong; the last Adam, said yes to God and put many in the right.

*And the Law came in that the transgression might increase; but where sin increased, grace abounded all the more, that, as sin reigned in death, even so grace might reign through righteousness to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Rom 5:20-21)*

All that passing laws against sin did was to produce more lawbreakers. Sin didn't, and doesn't, have a chance in competition with the aggressive forgiveness we call grace. When it's sin versus grace, grace wins hands down. All sin can do is threaten us with death, and that's the end of it. Whereas when grace rules, it invites us into life, a life that goes on and on and on.

# GOD NEVER ELECTED ANYONE TO THE LAKE OF FIRE.

11/16/08

We are studying Romans 9-11 which contains some of the most advanced and difficult material in the entire Bible. We are heading into a section of the Bible that some say teaches a doctrine called hyper-Calvinism or double pre-destination, which is an attack on the character and nature of our God. Because we are in difficult territory, we need to be properly prepared. The idea is to be sure we are firm in our doctrine, clear about what the Bible says about election and predestination these vital subjects in our spiritual life.

Once we are equipped properly, we can enjoy some of this fantastic journey with Paul in Romans 9.

Both election and predestination pertain to the sovereign will of God concerning believers. God is sovereign. **Sovereignty** means that God is supreme in rule, and has authority over all things, and that nothing happens without His consent. Both predestination and election relate to the sovereign will of God toward believers. Predestination and election have nothing to do with the unbeliever. It doesn't mean that God does not love the unbeliever, He does, with impersonal unconditional love. It doesn't mean that God does not have a plan or a will for the unbeliever, He does. **This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, who desires all men to be saved** [will of God for the unbeliever] **and to come to the knowledge of the truth** [will of God for the believer] (**1TI 2:3-4**).

**Predestination** is the grace provision of the sovereignty of God for each believer in eternity past, providing everything needed to execute God's will, plan, and purpose for the believer's life. Predestination is synonymous with the PPOG for the Church-age believer. This is God's unique plan designed in eternity past for each believer, and includes their personal sense of destiny. God has provided the believer everything needed to execute His plan for their life. Predestination as the unique grace provision for the believer includes the two power options of the filling of the Holy Spirit and Bible doctrine, as well as the believer's escrow account.

**Election** is the expression of the sovereign will of God under the principle of equal privilege accomplished for the believer by God in eternity past. **Just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we would be holy and blameless before Him. In love (EPH 1:4)**. Under election, God wills His highest and best for every believer. Each believer has equal privilege and equal opportunity to glorify God in the angelic conflict. Again, election and predestination pertain to believers only. God does not predestine anyone to the Lake of Fire. There is no verse in the Bible that says the unbeliever was elected to hell. The Bible never states that God elects anyone to the Lake of Fire. **But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; for you once were not a people, but now you are the people of God; you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy. (1PE 2:9-10)**

We are called to royalty; called to be a people for God's own possession. We are called to step into God's marvelous light; called to His kingdom and glory. He call us so that we might proclaim His excellencies and He will be glorified. We are called so that we might gain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. We are called to be objects of maximum grace. He gives, we benefit, He gets the glory. **Who [God] has saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was granted us in Christ Jesus from all eternity, but now**



**has been revealed by the appearing of our Savior Christ Jesus, who abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel (2TI 1:9-10).**

*For you were called to freedom, brethren; only do not turn your freedom into an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another. (GAL 5:13)*

God has called us to freedom.

God has called us to sanctification (1TH 4:7).

God has called us to peace (1CO 7:15, COL 3:15).

God has called us to a great hope (EPH 4:4).

God has called us to glory (2PE 1:3, ROM 8:30).

God has called us to join one Body (COL 3:15).

God has called us to suffer and patiently endure it so as to walk in the footsteps of Christ (1PE 2:20-21).

God has called us to inherit a blessing (1PE 3:9).

**And we know that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose. For those whom He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brethren; (ROM 8:28-29).** Nothing about hell here. This means that the believer was in the mind of God in eternity past! Billions and billions of years ago, God was thought about you. God knows all about you! Under the doctrine of election, He wants you to have the very best of everything! He wants you to have the highest possible happiness! Only you, with your negative volition toward doctrine, can hinder that personal desire from the sovereignty of God! The foreknowledge of God does not make things happen; the foreknowledge of God merely perceives what is certain to occur. **And these whom He predestined, He also called; and these whom He called, He also justified; and these whom He justified, He also glorified (ROM 8:30).**

Election, along with foreknowledge, predestination, justification, and glorification, all belong only to the believer. We also have to note the subject of free will. God decreed in eternity past that every human being shall be a free person. God never tampers with free-will. The results of man's decisions do and will exist! God does not tamper with your decisions or the effects of your decisions but, God does provide for you the doctrine necessary to meet any situation in life when it occurs. God does not coerce your free-will, however, He does influence your volition through circumstances. God knows how you would respond in any situation, and if He desires to bring in a situation which will cause a negative reaction on your part, and then in turn bring glory to Himself, He has the right to do so!

This brings us to the principle of the potter and the clay! This passage refers to the fact that it is the potter's wheel of authority that shapes the life of everyone, apart from being born again and growing in grace. **ROM 9:14**

*What shall we say then? There is no injustice with God, is there? May it never be! For He says to Moses, "I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion." So then it does not depend on the man who wills or the man who runs, but on God who has mercy. For the Scripture says to Pharaoh, "For this very purpose I raised you up, to demonstrate My power in you, and that My name might be proclaimed throughout the whole earth." You will say to me then, "Why does He still find fault? For who resists His will?" On the contrary, who are you, O man, who answers back to God? The thing molded will not say to the molder, "Why did you make me*

*like this," will it? Or does not the potter have a right over the clay, to make from the same lump one vessel for honorable use, and another for common use? (ROM 9:14-21).*

The point is that the sovereignty of God and free will of man coexist in human history. God has provided His authority and authority He has delegated so that you can steer through life with virtue from humility and have a marvelous life. Whether a person becomes a vessel of honor or dishonor depends upon the function of his own volition with regard to divine authority. God provides a potter's wheel, which is legitimate authority in life, and whether a person becomes a vessel of honor or dishonor depends on the function of his own volition and attitude toward authority. God has delegated authority in life so that the basis of virtue, humility, can be attained.

We need to look at a few more points on election, because they are so important to have at your fingertips when studying Romans 9. The mechanics for the election of the Church is the baptism of the Holy Spirit which occurs at the very moment we believe in Christ. This is one of the forty things we receive at salvation by which each one of us is entered into union with Christ. The election of the Church includes both equal privilege and equal opportunity for every believer. Not only do you have a magnificent destiny under the PPOG, but election says that you have the same privileges and opportunities as all other believers for the execution of that plan. Under election, equal privilege is your Royal priesthood. We all have the privilege of representing ourselves before God. Under election, equal opportunity is logistical grace support and blessing for both winners and losers.

### **Point 2. There are three elections in history:**

- a. Israel under the ritual plan of God.
- b. Christ under the incarnation plan of God.
- c. The church under the pre-designed plan of God.

Israel was elected under the ritual plan of God, **"For you are a holy people to the Lord your God; the Lord your God has elected you to be a people for His own possession out of all the peoples who are on the face of the earth."** (DEU 7:6).

The Lord Jesus Christ was elected under the incarnation plan of God, **"Behold, My Servant, whom I uphold; My elected one in whom My soul delights. I have put My Spirit upon Him; He will bring forth justice to the nations"** (ISA 42:1).

*"Behold, My Servant whom I have chosen (elected); My Beloved in whom My soul is well-pleased; I will put My Spirit upon Him, And He shall proclaim justice to the Gentiles."* (MAT 12:18)

Then the Church under the PPOG, **And so, as those who have been elected of God, holy and beloved, put on a heart of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience;** (COL 3:12).

It's very interesting to note that each election brought a new category of species into history: The **election of Israel** brought in the new racial species, the Jew. This is one of the main reasons why there are problems in Iraq and the Middle East! Then there is the **election of Christ** which brought in the Hypostatic union (undiminished deity and true humanity in one person forever). Jesus Christ is eternal God and therefore different from humanity. Jesus Christ is true humanity and therefore different from eternal God. He had to become true humanity to be our Savior, our great high priest, and our mediator. The **election of the Church** brought in the new spiritual species, the Church or Royal Family of God. This is called the new creature in the Bible.

Israel was elected under the ritual plan of God. In the Jewish age, the Tribulation, and the Millennium, there is an election of born-again Jews. **“And I will give you the treasures of darkness, And hidden wealth of secret places, in order that you may know that it is I, The Lord, the God of Israel, who calls you by your name. For the sake of Jacob My servant, And Israel My elected one, I have also called you by your name; I have given you a title of honor Though you have not known Me” (ISA 45:3-4).** The election of Israel, as with all elections, applies only to those who have personally believed in Jesus Christ. This is why the Bible **For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel.** Jesus Christ was very clearly revealed to the Jews in the Old Testament. Therefore, those who believed in Christ had an election and a plan. Wherever you have an election and a plan, that adds up to having a destiny.

As a believer you need to understand the following: The believer was elected in eternity past for the purpose of inheriting blessing. Election is always related to blessing, not to a violation of human volition or free will! **For you were elected for the very purpose that you might inherit a blessing (1PE 3:9b).** The first thing that is obvious about your blessings being deposited in eternity past is that under the principle of election, you could never work for any divine blessing in time. All divine blessings were **willed** for you by God before you were alive to perform any good deed!

*Worthy of praise and glorification be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ, [He blessed us] just as He elected us in Him before the foundation of the world, (EPH 1:3-4).*

Long before you existed, your blessings were designed just for you! This means that we are not blessed by personality improvement, by morality, by self-sacrifice or by Christian service. This wealth was deposited in eternity past for those believers who reach the point of maturity and who are consistent and have proper motivation from metabolized doctrine. It is God’s desire that every one of us will have His highest and best! God is an optimist and He always thinks in terms of the best. **Therefore, brethren, be all the more diligent to make His calling and electing you sure [a spiritual reality]; for as long as you practice these things, you will never stumble; (2PE 1:10).** Why would we ever have to make His calling us and electing us sure if election meant that God chooses you and your free will has nothing to do with it? What part of election are we to make sure if all that election means is salvation? Are we to try and keep ourselves saved? That’s impossible! (JOH 5:24; ROM 8:1). JOH 10:28 says **“and I give eternal life to them, and they shall never perish; and no one shall snatch them out of My hand.”**

*I pray that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened, so that you may know what is the hope of His calling [His electing you], what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, (EPH 1:18)*

So the question again: Why would we ever have to make His calling us and electing us sure if election meant that God chooses you and your free will has nothing to do with it? The answer is because election has to do with more than salvation. Election has to do with the believer receiving God’s highest and best for their life, all that He has elected them to receive. God has provided equal privilege and equal opportunity for that hope to be fulfilled! That’s why you need to get to know what the last part of this verse refers to;

**“What are the riches (wealth) of the glory of his inheritance in the saints”**

When the believer reaches the different stages of spiritual growth, especially maturity, the escrow account opens up and the believer is able to make some withdrawals. The wealth and the blessings

given to the believer who becomes a winner also extends to the future.

*But God, being rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead in our transgressions, made us alive together with Christ (by grace you have been saved), and raised us up with Him, and seated us with Him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus, in order that in the ages to come He might show the surpassing riches of His grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. (EPH 2:4-7)*

Notice that these riches, these blessings are from God and His grace in His kindness toward us! He could have just given us salvation and saved us from our sins! Instead, He gives us the opportunity to share in the victory of His Son Jesus Christ!

# THE DOCTRINE OF THE THEOLOGY OF THE PLAN OF GOD.

11/23/08

*I am communicating doctrine, I am not lying, my conscious bearing joint testimony with me in the Holy Spirit, but I have a great sorrow and constant pain in my right lobe, so I could wish that I myself would be accursed. Consequently, separated from Christ, but it cannot be, for the sake of, or on behalf of my brethren, the racial Jews. My fellow countrymen, national Jews. According to earthly descent, Who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption and as sons and the glory [that is the shekinah glory], and the covenants [for as we will see the unconditional covenants] and the gift of the law, and the worship of the true God, and the promises, which is of course, the manifestation of the integrity of God. Who are Israelites, to whom is the adoption, and the shekinah glory, and the covenants [and by now you know what those covenants are in some detail] and the deposit of the law, and the temple service [which means the service of God in the temples] and the promises, From whom [the Jews or Israelites] are the fathers, [the regenerate ancestors, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob], in fact, from whom is The Christ, the One who came in the flesh, the One who is God, ruler over all, extolled, praised, eulogized forever, Amen. However, this [the rejection of the Jews concerning their spiritual heritage] this [rejection] is not to imply as though the word of God has failed. For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel; neither are they all children because they are Abraham's descendants, but: "through Isaac your descendants will be named." That is, it is not the children of the flesh who are children of God, but the children of the promise are regarded as descendants. For this is a word of promise: "At this time I will come, and Sarah shall have a son." And not only this, but there was Rebekah also, when she had conceived twins by one man, our father Isaac; for though the twins were not yet born, and had not done anything good or bad, in order that God's purpose according to His choice might stand, not because of works, but because of Him who calls, it was said to her, "The older will serve the younger." Just as it is written, "Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated." What shall we say then? There is no injustice with God, is there? May it never be! For He says to Moses, "I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion." So then it does not depend on the man who wills or the man who runs, but on God who has mercy. (Rom 9:1-16).*

This may seem to some people that God is unfair, and that He violates free will. Nothing could be further from the truth. Before we can go on in Romans 9, we need to understand **the doctrine of the Theology of God's Perfect Plan**. This doctrine explains why we were created, and why we are left here on earth after we have personal faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. It explains the real meaning of life.

## **Point one. Definition and Description.**

The word *theology* comes from two Greek words, *theo* and *logia*, which mean the study of God. Christian theology is simply an attempt to understand God as He is revealed in the Bible. No theology will ever fully explain God and His ways because God is infinitely and eternally higher than we are. Therefore, any attempt to describe Him will fall short.

*Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and unfathomable His ways! (Rom 11:33)*

Have you ever seen anything like the extravagant generosity and riches of God? His wisdom, and the mystery of His will, His ways are way over our heads. We'll never figure it out. Is there anyone around

who can really explain God? Is there anyone smart enough to tell Him what to do? Everything comes from Him, everything happens through Him.

*I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect or the mature status quo. For through the grace given to me I say to every man among you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think; but to think so as to have sound judgment, as God has allotted to each a measure of faith. (Rom 12:1-3)*

Stop thinking of self in terms of arrogance beyond what you ought to think, but think in terms of sanity for the purpose of being rational, and without illusions about yourself. To be conformed to this world refers to thought conformation, which is thinking human viewpoint. It has nothing to do with how you conduct your social life, how you dress or look. Transformation starts with what you think, and your renovation of thought, changing from human viewpoint to divine viewpoint. When we think of ourselves in terms of arrogance we only hurt ourselves. Everyone has some form of rationality, but it is usually related to an illusion of unrealistic expectations. The standard of thinking that we all need comes from doctrine. You have to learn doctrine in order to think divine viewpoint. Bible doctrine in the soul causes the believer to think in terms of common sense. This gives you rational divine viewpoint into your daily life, and you avoid living, and thinking, in the cosmic system. Doctrine in the soul replaces human viewpoint with divine viewpoint. As this happens, a new mental attitude is formed in the mind. Mental attitude is everything, it is the capacity for life.

Knowing about God is the most important knowledge to have. The study of theology is digging into God's Word to discover what He has revealed about Himself, His plans and His desires for us. When we do this, we come to know Him as Creator, Sustainer, and Judge of all things; The Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. To study theology is to get to know God, in order that we may glorify Him through our love, honor and respect, revealed by our obedience to Him and His plan for our lives. For we know that the Lord Jesus Christ not only controls human history, but the entire universe.

## **Point 2. The Essence of God Is Necessary to Understand the Theology of God's Perfect Plan.**

God is perfectly motivated, He has perfect rational, and God has never performed any deed of any kind that was not absolutely, totally and completely perfect in keeping with His perfect mentality, as well as His perfect motivation. That includes you and your life. No matter how things may appear in this life, no matter what you are going through personally, He has everything under control.

God exists in three persons, the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, and each person has identical attributes and qualities. Each member of the Godhead has the same amount of Sovereignty, Eternal life, Holiness, Integrity, Omniscience, Omnipotence, Omnipresence, and Immutability. They are co-equal and co-eternal. When they are regarded from the standpoint of their essence, God is said to be One. They are One in essence because each One has identical essence, and there was never a time in eternity past when this status quo did not exist.

The members of the Godhead perform certain functions. The first person of the Trinity is called the **Father** because He is the author of the divine plan for the human race. He is the One who is said to be sending the Son, and sending the Spirit. The second person is called the **Son**, because He is obedient to

the Father, in the function of the divine plan, whether it is functioning as the Shekinah Glory in the presence of Israel in the Old Testament, or in Hypostatic-union in the New Testament. The third person of the Trinity is called God the **Holy Spirit** because He is never visible, never seen. His purpose is to reveal and glorify the Son in the dispensation of the Church-age. He performs certain dynamics and certain functions through indwelling, through the baptism of the Spirit, and through the sealing of the Spirit. Other various functions are assigned to God the Holy Spirit throughout the Word of God.

Do you see how awesome our God is? How can we ever be concerned about what mere man can do to us? **"Behold, Thou hast made my days {as} handbreadths, And my lifetime as nothing in Thy sight, Surely every man at his best is a mere breath. Selah [rest on that]. Surely every man walks about as a phantom; Surely they make an uproar for nothing; He amasses {riches}, and does not know who will gather them (Psa 39:5b-6).** Yet, people still don't have time to learn, and get to know the God Who is sovereign and above all.

*In God, whose word I praise, In God I have put my trust; I shall not be afraid. What can {mere} man do to me? (Psa 56:4)*

It's important to understand that there are passages in the word of God which definitely refer to, and teach, the Trinity.

*"Listen to Me, O Jacob, even Israel whom I called; I am He, I am the first, I am also the last. Surely My hand founded the earth, And My right hand spread out the heavens; When I call to them, they stand together. Assemble, all of you, and listen! Who among them has declared these things? The Lord loves him; he shall carry out His good pleasure on Babylon, And His arm {shall be against} the Chaldeans. I, even I, have spoken; indeed I have called him, I have brought him, and He will make his ways successful. Come near to Me, listen to this: From the first I have not spoken in secret, From the time it took place, I was there. And now the Lord God has sent Me, and His Spirit" (Isa 48:12-16)*

Does Isaiah 48:16 relate to the Trinity? Well, the first thing we want to do is find out who it is speaking back in verse 12. **"Listen to Me, O Jacob, even Israel whom I called; I am He, I am the first, I am also the last."** Who is the first and the last, or the Alpha and Omega of Revelation? **And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as a dead man. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying, "Do not be afraid; I am the first and the last" (Rev 1:17).** So we know who the speaker is; Jesus Christ, the Creator.

*"Come near to Me, listen to this: From the first I have not spoken in secret, From the time it took place, I was there. And now the Lord God has sent Me, and His Spirit." (Isa 48:16)*

There you have the whole Trinity. The Lord God, Yahweh, and the Holy Spirit. It's very important for us to uphold the doctrine of the Trinity. To deny the existence of the Trinity is a very serious doctrinal error in theology. There are many that deny the trinity, for example: Mormonism, Latter-day Saints, believe that God was once a man, but became God, and that men have the potential to become gods as well. The Jehovah's Witnesses believe that God is one person, Jehovah, and that Jesus was His first creation. They believe He is higher than the angels, but inferior to God. Christian Science believes that God is life, truth and love, and that Jesus, though not God, is the Son of God. Unification Church adherents believe that His mission on earth was not completed, and will be fulfilled through Sun yung Moon. To deny the Trinity means that you are either denying the existence of God the Father, the unique existence of the Son, or the unique existence of the Holy Spirit. To deny any of those is the

ultimate in heresy.

Other passages you need to note: **And after being baptized, Jesus went up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove, {and} coming upon Him, and behold, a voice out of the heavens, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased" (Mat 3:16-17)** All of them are there, present at the same time at the same scene.

*However, you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him. (Rom 8:9)*

*Now there are varieties of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are varieties of ministries, and the same Lord. And there are varieties of effects, but the same God who works all things in all persons. (1Co 12:4-6)*

*The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all. (2Co 13:14)*

*There is one body and one Spirit, just as also you were called in one hope of your calling; one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all who is over all and through all and in all. (Eph 4:4-6)*

*According to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by the sanctifying work of the Spirit, that you may obey Jesus Christ and be sprinkled with His blood: May grace and peace be yours in fullest measure. (1Pe 1:2)*

In the language of the New Testament we have **theos**, used generally for the Father; **pneuma**, generally used for God the Holy Spirit; and **Iesous Christos**, used for the Son, and with that we also have **Kurios** as His title of royalty, battlefield royalty, His third title of royalty. None of the uses of the name of God, whether in the Old or the New Testament, in any way conflict with the concept of the unity and equality of the Godhead, or the oneness of God, nor the distinction of persons in the Godhead, the Father, the Son and the Spirit. The Bible does not seek to prove the existence of God; it simply assumes it to be true. In fact, the Bible teaches that only the fool denies the existence of God. **The fool has said in his heart, There is no God. (Psa 14:1)**. The Bible does clearly reveal that there are three to whom all the attributes of divine essence apply. Therefore, to deny the existence of the three members of the Trinity is to deny the credibility of scripture itself.

We must first of all recognize that man has certain limitations in dealing with the subject of God. There are only three ways that we learn things; three systems of perception: 1) Rationalism. 2) Empiricism. 3) Faith. Everything that you have learned in life has been through one of these systems of perception. **Rationalism** simply means that the mind and the IQ are the criterion for reality. This is perception through reason. **Empiricism** brings the sensory system into the picture, or perception through observation and experimentation. This is the scientific method. Reality in empiricism is what you smell, see, hear, taste, or feel. **Faith** is the means of perception which accepts an established truth as the basis of reality. To operate in faith there must be confidence or belief in the authority and truth of another. This doctrine of the **Theology of God's Perfect Plan** by either rationalism or empiricism would inevitably result in rejection.



Who would you like to have plan your life? You say, you want to plan your own life, but you can't really do that, because we don't know what the future holds, and there's no way we can plan for all the contingencies that may come our way. In some cultures, the parents plan out their children's lives, in other cultures the government plans a person's life. However, what if the all-good, all-loving, all-wise, wonderful God offered to plan your life for you. **Well, God has!**

How can you love someone unless you know them? Obviously you can't. Therefore, knowing the characteristics of God will increase your love for Him. His sovereignty, eternal life, holiness, integrity, omniscience, omnipotence, omnipresence, and immutability. So, God is sovereign, God is supreme in rule, and He has authority over all things. There is no higher authority in the universe than God.

*The Lord kills and makes alive; He brings down to Sheol and raises up. The Lord makes poor and rich; He brings low, He also exalts. He raises the poor from the dust, He lifts the needy from the ash heap To make them sit with nobles, And inherit a seat of honor; For the pillars of the earth are the Lord's, And He set the world on them (1Sa 2:6-8).*

God is king of heaven and earth, eternal, infinite, and self-determining.

*Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times things which have not been done, Saying, "My purpose will be established, And I will accomplish all My good pleasure." (Isa 46:10)*

The sovereign will of God for mankind is expressed entirely in one verse in the Bible, **He desires all men to be saved and to come unto the epignosis knowledge of the truth (1Ti 2:4)**. The very fact that all men are not saved, and that all believers do not come unto the epignosis knowledge of the truth reveals that although God is sovereign He will not violate or coerce human volition. This is a vital principle in recognizing Romans 9-11.

# THE SOVEREIGNTY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUSTICE OF GOD AS IT RELATES TO THE THEOLOGY OF GOD'S PLAN.

12/07/08

We have already seen Point 1 which was the **definition and description**. The word theology comes from two Greek words, "theo" [God] and "logia" [word] meaning the study of God. Christian theology is simply an attempt to understand God as He is revealed in the Bible. No type of theology will ever fully explain God and all of His ways because God is infinitely and eternally higher than we are. Therefore, any attempt to describe Him, His ways and plan will always fall short:

*Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and unfathomable His ways! For who has known the mind of the Lord, or who became His counselor? - With whom did He consult and who gave Him understanding? Or who has first given to Him that it might be paid back to him again? (ROM 33:35)*

*For from Him and through Him and to Him are all things. To Him be the glory forever. Amen (ROM 11:36).*

Everything comes from Him; everything happens only through His consent, and everything ends up with Him being glorified.

## **Point 2. The Essence of God is necessary understand the Theology of God's Perfect Plan.**

Under this point, we noted that God is a person, and as a person He has personality, self-consciousness, as well as self-determination. God recognizes Himself as a personality and as such, He thinks, He decides, He acts rationally. God is perfectly motivated, He is perfectly rational, and God has never performed any deed of any kind that was not absolutely, totally, and completely perfect in keeping with His perfect mentality, as well as His perfect motivation. Whether we are looking at God from the standpoint of what He does, or what He thinks, or how He is motivated, it all adds up to perfection.

We need to think of God in terms of, not only His perfect attributes, but perfect coordination between the attributes, or the essence. God is the supreme being of the universe, and exists in three persons: the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Each person has identical attributes and qualities, and when the attributes are in view, God is One. When personality is in view, the persons of the Godhead are distinguished by the use of some form of the plural, such as Elohim, the name for God in the Hebrew, recognizing the unity of the attributes.

Each member of the Godhead has the same amount of sovereignty, eternal life, holiness or integrity, omniscience, omnipotence, omnipresence, and immutability. They are co-equal, they are co-eternal, and when they are regarded from the standpoint of their essence, God is said to be One. **"Hear, O Israel! The Lord is our God, the Lord is one!" (DEU 6:45)**. This has always been the case, and there never was a time in eternity past when this status quo did not exist. Furthermore, these members of the God-head perform certain functions which differentiate persons in the Godhead.

Under point 2, we need to note the characteristics of the essence of God, because that will increase our love for Him. The first attribute is sovereignty which means that God is supreme in rule, and He has authority over all things. There is no higher authority in the universe than God. **"Know therefore today, and take it to your heart, that the Lord, He is God in heaven above and on the earth below; there is no other."** (DEU 4:39).

*The Lord kills and makes alive; He brings down to Sheol and raises up. The Lord makes poor and rich; He brings low, He also exalts. He raises the poor from the dust, He lifts the needy from the ash heap To make them sit with nobles, And inherit a seat of honor; For the pillars of the earth are the Lord's, And He set the world on them (1SA 2:6-8).*

The sovereign will of God for all of mankind is expressed entirely in one verse:

*He desires all men to be saved and to come unto the epignosis knowledge of the truth (1TI 2:4).*

The very fact that all men are not saved, and that all believers do not come unto the epignosis knowledge of the truth, reveals that although God is sovereign He will not violate human volition. This is a vital principle in recognizing the essence of God, and how it relates to the free-will of man. All three members of the Trinity possess sovereignty:

- **God the Father is the Most High over all the earth (PSA 83:18).**

- The Lord Jesus Christ said, **"All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth."** (MAT 28:18).

- God the Holy Spirit, **But one and the same Spirit works all these things, distributing to each one individually just as He wills (1CO 12:11).**

The second attribute of God is perfect righteousness. This means that He is absolute righteousness or holiness (1SA 2:2; LEV 19:2). God is not simply righteous by comparison with someone else; His righteousness is independent and incomparable. We call some people good and some people bad, yet when we get to know them, we usually find that the bad people have some good in them, and the good people have some bad in them. How do we make these evaluations? Well, we have set up certain standards in our soul, and through relativity and comparison we make evaluations. However, God is totally perfect, and we cannot even compare with His perfection or His righteousness.

How can we who are imperfect ever have fellowship with God who is totally perfect? The answer is that God took cognizance of this fact, and in eternity past He made a provision to solve our problem:

*He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him. (2CO 5:21).*

It's impossible to have perfect righteousness without having perfect character, and a perfect personality. The key to personality is not charisma, or a sparkling intellect; the key to personality is righteousness. True righteousness does not look down their nose at others who appear to be worse than themselves. God is not fooled by such phony righteousness. True righteousness is a very relaxed and wonderful state to be in, as well as a wonderful state to be around.

*"The Rock! His work is perfect, For all His ways are just; A God of faithfulness and without injustice, Righteous and upright is He." (DEU 32:4)*

Notice that the righteousness of God is related to His work, His ways, and His faithfulness. Faithfulness is mentioned along with perfect righteousness because we need to think of God in terms of, not only His perfect attributes, but perfect coordination between the attributes. **"Righteous art Thou, O Lord, And upright are Thy judgments" (PSA 119:137)**. Many times things happen in life that we do not understand. They seem to be unfair, but in the end, you will find out that God was exactly right and just in dealing with the situation the way that He did. **As for God, His way is blameless; The word of the Lord is tested; He is a shield to all who take refuge in Him (2SA 22:31)**. This means that, as believers, we can rely fully on the knowledge that whatever God does in our lives is consistent with His righteous attitudes and actions. The righteousness of God is active. As a primary motive, it incites all that He does; therefore He is righteous in His ways. Though infinitely holy, He maintains a relation to fallen creatures; not with an inactive detached-attitude from them, but a vital, and faithful availability.

The righteousness of God embraces not only His devotion to that which is good and holy, but is also the very basis of His hatred of that which is evil. There is within divine righteousness the capacity for reaction toward others which is both positive and negative. Therefore, in the scriptures, His righteousness is not a self-righteousness that marks and accuses or condemns others, but rather a righteousness that desires to help others with His grace and mercy. The righteousness of God is manifested by His glory. **Then Moses said, "I pray Thee, show me Thy glory!" And He said, "I Myself will make all My goodness pass before you, and will proclaim the name of the Lord before you; and I will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show compassion on whom I will show compassion" (EXO 33:18-19)**.

Just as we saw with sovereignty, all three members of the Trinity possess perfect righteousness as well:

- The Father is said to be perfect righteousness in **ISA 51:8b "But My righteousness shall be forever, And My salvation to all generations."**
- The Son is said to be holy, undefiled and perfectly righteous (**HEB 7:26; 1JO 2:1**).
- The very title of the Holy Spirit signifies that He possesses this divine attribute as well.

The third attribute of God is justice. God's holiness includes His justice as well as His righteousness. As a part of God's justice, God is fair. In fact, it is impossible for God to be unfair. **"Now then let the fear of the Lord be upon you; be very careful what you do, for the Lord our God will have no part in unrighteousness, or partiality, or the taking of a bribe" (2CH 19:7)**. There are two ways in which God expresses His justice to believers:

1. To mature believers, God expresses His justice in blessing.
2. To carnal or apostate believers, God expresses His justice through divine discipline. **For those whom the Lord loves He disciplines, And He scourges every son whom He receives" (HEB 12:6)**.

Justice always administers what righteousness demands. Justice means that in vindicating any believer, God cannot compromise any of His attributes. This means that because the Lord Jesus Christ satisfied the justice of God the Father, God the Father is now free to pardon and justify those who trust in His Son. It also means that God is equally free to condemn those who reject the saving work on the Cross:

*He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (JOH 3:18)*

It was the work of the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross that allowed the justice of God to release the one attribute that most individuals always focus in on, His love. The fact that God's justice is satisfied frees God to love us and bless us. Justice is the source of Grace, and justice is the believer's point of contact with God. Many people cannot conceive of God in any other way but as a God of love. However, justice is as important and as observable as any other characteristic of God's essence:

- God the Father is said to be just (DEU 32:4).
- God the Son is called the righteous judge (2TI 4:8).
- God the Holy Spirit convicts the world of this justice (IOH 16:8).

When it comes to understanding the essence of God, it's important to note that the righteousness and justice of God make up the integrity of God. The integrity of God guarantees that His entire essence is completely involved in all He does or allows. All divine attributes form one, consistent, indivisible whole which is His total person. That is why the love of God is not an isolated attribute. Love is not an emotion or a feeling; it is a system of thinking, and something that needs to be learned. Love is something that we have to come to know and believe. **The love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit Who was given to us**(ROM 5:5).

*Now as to the love of the brethren, you have no need for anyone to write to you, for you yourselves are taught by God to love one another; (1TH 4:9)*

*And we have come to know and have believed the love which God has for us. God is love (1JO 4:16).*

This means that because God is love, or is agape, that He uses agape love (unconditional love) as His problem solving device for the human race. The love of God, or the agape of God, was used as a problem solving device for the matter of man's fall. God's love was the problem solving device for the total depravity of man. God's love motivated Him to send His only begotten Son to die for our sins. However, on the Cross, God's love was set aside. His justice and righteousness judged His Son, whom He loved, for all of our sins.

Love is a system of thinking, not of emoting. If you are going to love God, you must love Him from your system of thinking, from the thoughts in your soul, not your emotions. You will be evaluated by God based upon your thoughts!

*The wicked, in the haughtiness of his countenance, does not seek Him. All his thoughts are, "There is no God." (PSA 10:4)*

You must have these thoughts converted into divine energy through metabolized doctrine. Proper thinking will give you proper motivation. Proper motivation comes from doctrine within, not inspiration from without. God's love cannot operate independently of His integrity, composed of perfect righteousness and absolute justice. This marvelous principle of Bible doctrine demonstrates that the God of love and grace is neither sentimental, nor partial, nor indecisive toward anyone. Grace is divine strength which expresses the love of God, but grace is also the uncompromising policy of the justice of God.

The basis for grace is found in the essence of God. You see, grace does not mean that God overlooks sin, rather that God, as the perfect Judge, has solved the problem of sin. All of God's attributes always function together as a consistent, integrated, perfect whole. God never has the slightest trouble keeping His attributes straight. One never compromises another. Even when He deals with imperfect,

sinful, fallen mankind. This is especially true when He blesses us; He is not lowering Himself to our imperfect level thus destroying His own perfection. The reason He can bless us is that one of His attributes stands guard over all the rest. The justice of God is the guardian of God's essence in all that He does toward imperfect creatures.

There is never a possibility of compromise, because all three Persons are perfect, co-equal, and co-eternal; all Three possess the same integrity. Thus, in Himself, God is free to regard His personality, the fact that He is a Person, as most important. Related to man, however, there is almost unlimited opportunity for compromise. Man violates God's character at almost every turn. Here God must keep His integrity first and foremost. Thus, God's point of contact with us can be only His justice.

*But the Lord of hosts will be exalted in judgment, And the holy God will show Himself holy in righteousness.  
(ISA 5:16)*

The justice of God imputes Adam's original sin to every member of the human race condemning them at birth.

*"Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, And in sin my mother conceived me" (PSA 51:5).*

*"The wicked are estranged from the womb; These who speak lies go astray from birth" (PSA 58:3).*

Sovereignty willed to create.

The righteousness of God demands perfection.

The omniscience of God provides the plan, and so the omnipotence of God condemns mankind at birth.

Thus the justice of God can qualify mankind for a Savior, because condemnation must precede salvation.

Then Love provides salvation:

*For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life. (JOH 3:16)*

When anyone responds to the Gospel, eternal life is given, omnipresence is then with them always, immutability is faithful, and veracity (truth) sets them free.

# THE SOVEREIGNTY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUSTICE OF GOD AS IT RELATES TO THE THEOLOGY OF GOD'S PLAN. PART 2.

12/14/08

We have been noting a fantastic doctrine that is vital for all believers to understand: The Doctrine of the Theology of God's Perfect Plan. We are now noting point 2 in the doctrine which deals with understanding the essence of God. So far we have noted that God is sovereign. Sovereignty means that God is supreme in rule, and has authority over all things (DEU 4:39; 1SA 2:6-8). Next, we saw that God is perfect righteousness (1SA 2:2; LEV 19:2). The Bible teaches that there is no one Holy like the Lord. How can we, who are imperfect, ever have fellowship with God who is totally perfect? The answer is that God was aware of this, and billions of years ago He made a provision to solve our problem (ACT 2:22-23; ACT 4:27-28). God's righteousness demands that His creatures are perfect, and therefore, because man could not meet this requirement, God did it all. This is why the apostle Paul, under the influence of the mentorship of God the Holy Spirit said, **Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God, but on the other, with my flesh the law of sin (Romans 7:24-25).**

*There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death. For what the Law could not do, weak as it was through the flesh, God did: sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and as an offering for sin, He condemned sin in the flesh, in order that the requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. (Rom 8:1-4)*

*"This I command you, that you [impersonally unconditionally] love one another. If the world hates you [despises you, or is jealous of you], you know that it has hated Me before {it hated} you. If you were of the world, the world would love its own; but because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. Remember the word that I said to you, 'A slave is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you; if they kept My word, they will keep yours also." (Joh 15:17-20)*

So, don't be shocked when you, your pastor, or your friends are living the spiritual life, and you hear lies and accusations coming from cosmic, carnal believers who have no idea what living the spiritual life is all about. Men said plenty of lies and false accusations about the Lord Jesus Christ: **"The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Behold, a gluttonous man and a drunkard, a friend of tax-gatherers and sinners!'" (MAT 11:19).** They said that He blasphemed, **Then the high priest tore his robes, saying, "He has blasphemed!" They answered and said, "He is deserving of death!" (MAT 26:65-66).** Our Lord was accused of being insane, and demon possessed, **And when His own people heard {of this,} they went out to take custody of Him; for they were saying, "He has lost His senses." And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem were saying, "He is possessed by Beelzebul" (Mar 3:21-22).** They said our Lord had an unclean spirit (MAR 3:30). He had a reputation for hanging around with sinners, **"This man receives sinners and eats with them." (LUK 15:2b).** They accused Him of being unpatriotic, **and they began to accuse Him, saying, "We found this man misleading our nation and forbidding to pay taxes to Caesar" (LUK 23:2).** In LUK

23:5 they accused Him of always stirring up trouble. In LUK 23:14 they said He causes people to rebel. In JOH 7:12 they said He was a cult leader, and He leads multitudes astray.

Well, you get the picture and the point! However, the Lord can turn the curse of deception and the wrath of man into praise and magnify Himself:

*"For the wrath of man shall praise Thee;" (PSA 76:10).*

*For we can do nothing against the truth, but only for the truth. (2CO 13:8)*

*"No weapon that is formed against you shall prosper; And every tongue that accuses you in judgment you will condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, And their vindication is from Me," declares the Lord. (ISA 54:17)*

There have been people throughout human history that have tried to attack the people of God, and stop Bible doctrine from being taught, and all they have done is to promote doctrine even more. When the Egyptians were trying to stop the people of God through affliction we read, "**But the more they afflicted them, the more they multiplied and the more they spread out**" (EXO 1:12).

The righteousness of God is not something we should shrink away from in fear and guilt, it is something that we should know is for us, and active and motivated in all that God does, including saving us. So, when we talk about the righteousness of God, though He is infinitely Holy, He still maintains a relation to fallen creatures. He does this not by ignoring the depravity of man, but by being active with His love and faithfulness doing something about man's ultimate problem of sin and evil. You see, the righteousness of God alive in us is not manifested by forsaking sin, or cleaning up our act like so many people try to make us do. God's righteousness in us is manifested by our love, our faithfulness, our character, and integrity toward one another, including towards ourselves. It's impossible to reveal God's perfect righteousness in you without having love and compassion for others. Believer's who operate in the righteousness of God are very relaxed, and they are in a wonderful state as well as wonderful people to be around. When we understand God's righteousness, and are not intimidated by it, then, and only then, can we begin to live in the righteousness of God.

How do we live in the righteousness of God? It is so simple, it's right before our eyes: **But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ. (2CO 11:3)**

*Righteous art Thou, O Lord, And upright are Thy judgments. (PSA 119:137).*

Many times things happen in life that we do not understand. They seem to be unfair, but in the end, you will find out that God was just in dealing with the situation the way that He did. His righteousness was working on our behalf, toward us and for us. **As for God, His way is blameless; The word of the Lord is tested; He is a shield to all who take refuge in Him (2SA 22:31).** This means that as believers we can rely fully on the knowledge that whatever God does in our lives is consistent with His righteous attitudes and actions. God's righteousness is not a self-righteousness that accuses, or condemns others, but rather a righteousness that desires to help others know His grace and mercy.

As an individual, you have authority over your own soul. When that soul is filled with God's word you actually have the working material for the very righteousness of God working through you. After all,



you're going to be with Him for all of eternity, you might as well get a little taste of it now. How do we know that?

*"I shall give thanks to Thee with uprightness of heart, When I learn Thy righteous judgments." (PSA 119:7)*

*"At midnight I shall rise to give thanks to Thee Because of Thy righteous ordinances." (PSA 119:62)*

*"My eyes fail {with longing} for Thy salvation, And for Thy righteous word." (PSA 119:123)*

*"Thy testimonies are righteous forever; Give me understanding that I may live." (PSA 119:144)*

So, we have seen God's sovereignty, and righteousness. The third characteristic of the essence of God is the fact that God is also just. God's holiness includes His justice as well as His righteousness. As a part of God's justice, God is always fair, in fact, it is impossible for God to be unfair. **"Now then let the fear of the Lord be upon you; be very careful what you do, for the Lord our God will have no part in unrighteousness, or partiality, or the taking of a bribe"** (2CH 19:7). The justice of God always administers what righteousness demands, and righteousness demands perfection. This is why in the Sermon on the Mount, the Lord made some very challenging statements and commands (MAT 5:38-47). Notice what our Lord says in MAT 5:48, **"Therefore you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.** That's sounds impossible, in fact it is impossible. However, notice that, **"The things impossible with men are possible with God"** (LUK 18:27). So, divine righteousness demands perfection. Therefore, in the immeasurable genius of God, the justice of God imputes Adam's original sin to every member of the human race condemning them at birth (PSA 51:5; PSA 58:3). The righteousness of God demands perfection so that the justice of God could condemn man to qualify mankind for a Savior, because condemnation must precede salvation. Let me break it down for you.

- Sovereignty willed to create. **Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." And God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. And God blessed them; and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it; and rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky, and over every living thing that moves on the earth" (GEN 1:26-28).**

- Righteousness demands perfection; **because it is written, "You shall be holy, for I am holy"** (1PE 1:16).

- Omniscience produces the plan, **For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, that no one should boast. (EPH 2:8). For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand, that we should walk in them. (EPH 2:10).**

- Omnipotence creates mankind, **Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being (GEN 2:7).**

- Justice condemns mankind, **For as through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of the One the many will be made righteous (ROM 5:19).** This is to qualify mankind for a Savior because condemnation must precede salvation.

- Love provides salvation, **For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life (JOH 3:16).** When mankind responds to the Gospel then:

- Eternal Life is given (JOH 3:36), Omnipresence is with you always (MAT 28:20), Immutability is faithful (2TI 2:13), Veracity sets you free (JOH 8:32; JOH 8:36).

Before we go on we need to understand the relationship of righteousness and justice to the essence of God. First of all, justice guards the divine essence. God never has the slightest trouble keeping His attributes straight. One never compromises another. Even when He deals with imperfect, sinful, fallen mankind, especially when He blesses us, He is not lowering Himself to our imperfect level thus destroying His own perfection. The reason He can bless us is that one of His attributes stands guard, as it were, over all the rest. The justice of God, the function of His integrity, is the guardian of God's essence in all that He does toward imperfect creatures. In other words, He doesn't operate toward us just as a father, but really as a judge which is even more edifying for us.

The justice of God is the origin of everything we receive from Him, both blessing and cursing. This is true of unbeliever and believer alike; God functions toward all mankind from His justice, both now and forever. The reversionistic believer's discipline comes from divine justice, so does the mature believer's blessing. Both the unbeliever's eternal agony in the Lake of Fire, and the believer's ultimate sanctification and reward in heaven come from the same Source, the justice of God being first. Everything God does toward us from any of His attributes goes through His justice.

Justice is the final source of all divine action related to mankind. Whatever comes from God to man can come only through justice. God's justice is also our point of contact with Him; therefore, when we come to God, His absolute fairness is the attribute to which we must adjust. This explains why ROM 1:16-17 dogmatically state that God's ability to save man is not His love, not His sovereignty, not His omnipotence, not any divine attribute but justice.

*For I am not ashamed of the gospel, for it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes, to the Jew first and also to the Greek. For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, "But the righteous man shall live by faith." (ROM 1:16-17)*

If God's point of contact with us were His sovereignty, He would choose who would go to heaven; He would program us to mechanically decree every detail of our lives on earth. We would all be robots; human freedom would not exist; the angelic conflict could not be won. This is the position of Hyper-Calvinism which distorts the sovereignty of God.

If God's point of contact with us were His omnipotence, He would be a tyrant. It would be impossible for us to fulfill the will of God because He would do everything Himself by direct decree. He would force people to believe in Christ. Again, there would be no freedom, no volition, no divine establishment; human history could not be permitted to run its course as part of the angelic conflict.

As perfect as these attributes are, they are not the basic frame of reference in God's relationship with us. If God's point of contact with us was His love, human sentimentality, instability, compromise, and emotionalism would develop from this false assumption. Therefore, of all the attributes of God, justice is the only one that protects His entire essence. For this reason, and for other reasons that we shall see, God's justice is our point of reference with Him. The second attribute of God that goes along with this is the one we already noted, the other half of divine integrity which is the righteousness of God also guards divine justice.

Justice serves as a guardian toward man while righteousness serves as a guardian toward justice. In the exercise of His justice, God is never arbitrary, impulsive, subjective or eccentric. His justice has a guardian of its own, the righteousness of God. Divine justice can never be corrupted because it always functions according to the standard of fairness found in God's perfect righteousness. **And He will judge the world [there's His justice] in righteousness; He will execute judgment for the peoples with equity or fairness (PSA 9:8).** In the same way that justice is the watchdog over God's entire essence, righteousness is the watchdog over His justice. Whereas justice is the function of divine integrity, righteousness is the principle of divine integrity. What righteousness demands, justice executes. Absolute righteousness is the key to the character of God; all else depends on it. Perfect unblemished impeccable righteousness is at the very core of His Being. This is why justice and righteousness are mentioned together in the word of God more than any other attributes of His divine essence. God cannot tolerate less than His own perfection.

What the righteousness of God demands, the justice of God must perform. If righteousness rejects something, justice condemns it; if righteousness approves, justice blesses. Righteousness rejects sin; therefore, justice condemns sin. Righteousness also rejects our human good because it falls short of the absolute standard of divine good. Therefore, justice condemns all our legalism, religiosity, human works, and self-righteousness. Righteousness likewise rejects evil; justice totally condemns it.

God's righteousness approves of the perfect God-Man, the Lord Jesus Christ. Righteousness approves of His perfect work on the Cross in payment for our sins. Therefore, justice blesses anyone who believes in Christ. Justice, not love, accomplishes this. It is the fairness of God that bestows upon every believer the amazing blessings that we call eternal salvation. Grace is the policy of the justice of God for blessing mankind.

*Therefore, the Lord longs to be gracious to you [God constantly desires to bless believers], and therefore He waits on high to have compassion on you. For the Lord is a God of justice [all the blessings He waits to give come through His justice]. How blessed are those who long for Him [daily PMA] (ISA 30:18)*

# THE SOVEREIGNTY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUSTICE OF GOD AS IT RELATES TO THE THEOLOGY OF GOD'S PLAN. PART 3.

12/21/08

We have been noting the Doctrine of the Theology of God's Perfect Plan. Under Point 2 we have been noting the fact that the Essence of God is necessary to understand the Theology of God's Perfect Plan:

1. God is Sovereign.
2. God also is perfect Righteousness.
3. God is also Just. God's holiness includes His justice as well as His righteousness.

God's righteousness and justice are tantamount to the integrity of God, guaranteeing His entire essence is completely involved in all He does. God's love stands upon His integrity, composed of perfect righteousness and absolute justice. This marvelous principle of Bible doctrine demonstrates that the God of love and grace is not sentimental, partial or indecisive toward anyone. Grace is divine strength which expresses the love of God, but grace is also the uncompromising policy of the justice of God. **For the grace of God [His unmerited favor and blessing] has appeared, bringing salvation and or deliverance to all men, instructing us to deny ungodliness and worldly desires and to live sensibly, righteously and godly [spiritual] in the present age (TIT 2:11-12).**

*"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life." (JOH 3:16)*

This familiar verse is God's entire plan of grace. The verse begins in eternity past when the destiny of the Second Person of the Trinity was established to be born a true man (His uniquely born Son), that He might go to the Cross to be judged for the sins of mankind. Then it specifies the mechanics of our entering God's plan: Faith in Christ. It concludes with one of the advantages gained from believing in Him: Eternal life. A great deal of basic doctrine is covered in JOH 3:16, because in it our Lord was presenting the plan of salvation to Nicodemus, a religious unbeliever. Jesus was explaining the Gospel to him in simple terms, but even with an explanation from the greatest Teacher of all time, this intellectual Pharisee was still slow to catch on. If he was struggling with these basic doctrines, how could he understand the inner functions of God's nature? Jesus could not speak to Nicodemus as He might have spoken to a mature believer. Then, just as now, few people understand the essence of God, but nearly anyone could comprehend love in some sort of human relationship. However, there is a vast difference between divine love and human love.

When we talk about God loving the world, we are not talking about the cosmic system; we are talking about loving the human race. Do you know what would be entailed if God loved the world? The world is Satan's kingdom (JOH 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; 2CO 4:4; EPH 2:2). Satan rules his domain according to a plan and policy called "good and evil" (GEN 3:5), or simply "evil" (GAL 1:4). Evil is the sum total of Satan's genius; it is the thinking of Satan as opposed to the mind of Christ, Bible doctrine. Satan sponsors many different false systems of thought by which he seeks to gain control of the human soul (MAT 15:19), and hence control of the entire human race.

When we understand Satan's reason for revolting against his own Creator we have a frame of

reference for understanding evil. Satan revolted because of arrogance, and his objective has always been to be independent from God, trying to be like God, and trying to usurp the throne of heaven (ISA 14:14). He wants to prove that he is as good as God. In order to do so, Satan is determined to solve the problems of life independent of God's design and Bible doctrine. Thus, he promotes human good which are any good deeds accomplished apart from the filling of the Spirit and Bible doctrine, or any solutions contrary to the laws of divine establishment. Evil thinking leads to evil function and such satanic doctrines as altruism, philanthropy, legalism, socialism, and communism lead people to sincerely pursue noble ends at the expense of human freedom, privacy, property, prosperity, and spiritual growth. Satan operates under the proposition that the end justifies the means; therefore, he resorts to violence whenever necessary to accomplish his "good" ends (JOH 8:44).

Satan intends to prove God a liar, to supplant God's perfect design, to win the angelic conflict, to expose God as unfair for sentencing him to eternal judgment in the Lake of Fire (MAT 25:41). The devil's world is totally hostile to the essence of God, to the plan of God, to the freedom, and salvation of man and to the spiritual advance of believers, and to everything related to God. There is absolutely no basis for compatibility between God and Satan's world (JOB 34:10; JAM 1:13). God judges evil and the primary characteristic of evil, arrogance. **"Thus I will punish the world for its evil, And the wicked for their iniquity; I will also put an end to the arrogance of the proud, And abase the haughtiness of the ruthless"** (ISA 13:11). Not only is the world enemy territory, but since the Fall of man, when Satan usurped the earthly throne from Adam, every person born into the human race (except Jesus Christ) are all born under divine condemnation, physically alive but spiritually dead. Adam rejected God's provisions in the Garden, and decided instead to eat from the tree of the knowledge of Satan's plan of good and evil. This act plunged the entire human race into spiritual death under Satan's new regime.

The glory of God is His perfect essence with emphasis on His righteousness. Through His glory and His righteousness, He solved the problem man had, and that reveals His love. Can perfect God love imperfect, condemned, depraved, unregenerate man? The answer is yes, but only with impersonal love. We are born spiritually dead because of Adam's Fall (ROM 5:12), but from the moment of physical birth every human being is the beneficiary of the integrity of God. Our lack of merit does not prevent God from designing and executing a plan to save us without violating His own standard. Under the principle of grace before judgment, God delays final judgment to permit us the opportunity to believe in Christ and receive eternal life. **Therefore you are without excuse, every man of you who passes judgment, for in that you judge another, you condemn yourself; for you who judge practice the same things. And we know that the judgment of God rightly falls upon those who practice such things. And do you suppose this, O man, when you pass judgment upon those who practice such things and do the same yourself, that you will escape the judgment of God? Or do you think lightly [by maliciously judging each other] of the riches of His kindness [God's impersonal love, His "kindness" to man based solely on His own integrity] and forbearance [His delay in judgment] and patience [His consistency regardless of our rejection], not knowing that the kindness of God [His impersonal love] leads you to repentance?** (ROM 2:1-4).

God delayed mankind's final judgment so that He could extend to us His kindness, His impersonal love. An impassable barrier stood between man and God. God cannot tolerate sin (ROM 3:23; JER 17:9; ISA 64:6b); He cannot cancel the penalty of sin (ROM 6:23a); nor can He ignore the problem of our physical birth and spiritual death (EPH 2:1). So, in phase one of this life for members of the human race, God offers salvation to all mankind from His impersonal love, but only the few accept Christ as Savior and come under God's personal love. In phase two all believers on earth are sustained

and protected by God's logistical grace from His impersonal love, but only the few utilize logistical grace, advance to maturity, and become recipients of supergrace blessings motivated by His personal love.

So, Grace is divine strength which expresses the love of God, but grace is also the uncompromising policy of the justice of God. That policy relies on the entire character and nature of God. So, the policy of grace is based upon the following:

- Righteousness - (Principle of grace).

*For if by the transgression of the one, death reigned through the one, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness. (ROM 5:17).*

- Justice - (function of grace)

*Being justified as a gift by His grace through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus; (ROM 3:24)*

- Love (Motivation)

*"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life." (JOH 3:16)*

- Eternal life (Abundance of grace)

*That, as sin reigned in death, even so grace might reign through righteousness to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (ROM 5:21)*

-Omnipotence (ability)

*And He has said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for power is perfected in weakness." (2CO 12:9a)*

- Omniscience (plan)

*Simon Peter, a bond-servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who have received a faith of the same kind as ours, by the righteousness of our God and Savior, Jesus Christ: Grace and peace be multiplied to you in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord; seeing that His divine power has granted to us everything pertaining to life and godliness, through the true knowledge of Him who called us by His own glory and excellence. For by these He has granted to us His precious and magnificent promises, in order that by them you might become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world by lust. (2PE 1:1-4)*

- Omnipresence (Fellowship)

*The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all. (2CO 13:14)*

- Sovereignty (Authority)

*Through whom we have received grace and apostleship to bring about the obedience of faith among all the Gentiles, for His name's sake, (ROM 1:5)*

- Immutability (Steadfastness)

*Let us therefore draw near with confidence to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy and may find grace to help in time of need. (HEB 4:16)*

- Veracity (Truth of Grace)

*For the Law was given through Moses; grace and truth were realized through Jesus Christ. (JOH 1:17)*

So, in phase one of this life for members of the human race, God offers salvation to all mankind from His impersonal love, but only the few accept Christ as Savior and come under God's personal love. In phase two all believers on earth are sustained and protected by God's logistical grace from His impersonal love, but only the few utilize logistical grace, advance to maturity, and become recipients of supergrace blessings motivated by His personal love. In phase three all believers in heaven possess the resurrection body, but only the few receive special rewards, decorations, and honors as the most eminent eternal aristocrats. So we begin with divine love in salvation.

The category in view in phase one of God's plan is the entire human race. The doctrine of unlimited atonement declares that Christ died for all mankind (ROM 5:6; 2CO 5:15; 1TI 2:6; 4:10; TIT 2:11; HEB 2:9). God manifests impersonal love toward everyone. He imputed human life to evil men, and presented them with repeated occasions to be saved (ROM 11:32; 2PE 3:9). The Cross is unconditional. However, in contrast, God reserves His personal love for only those few who believe in Christ and thus fulfill the conditions of the Gospel. In each generation a different proportion of all living people will trust in Christ, but those few, whatever their number, are the objects of divine personal love with reference to Phase One. The work of salvation required a gruesome price, the spiritual death of Christ on the Cross. No unbeliever has ever earned or deserved salvation, but if God has accomplished the most for those He loves impersonally, He can do only do much more than the most for those special few He loves personally.

*For if by the transgression of the one, death reigned through the one, much more those who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness will reign in life through the One, Jesus Christ. (ROM 5:17)*

God imputed all man's sins to Christ on the Cross in behalf of the entire human race, but God goes much farther for those who believe in Christ: to them He imputes divine righteousness. The most remarkable of all Bible doctrines is that God credits His own righteousness to every believer. We possess forever the very principle and standard of God's integrity, the quality that God has respected, honored, and loved throughout all His eternal existence. so when we talk about the love of God, I want you think about what God loves.

*For the Lord is righteous; He loves righteousness; The upright will behold His face. (PSA 11:7)*

*He loves righteousness and justice; The earth is full of the lovingkindness of the Lord. (PSA 33:5)*

*For the Lord loves justice, And does not forsake His godly ones; They are preserved forever; But the descendants of the wicked will be cut off. (PSA 37:28)*

*The Lord opens {the eyes of} the blind; The Lord raises up those who are bowed down; The Lord loves the righteous; (PSA 146:8)*

We could receive no more valuable or significant blessing, from the love of God than the righteousness of God. Think of it, the same phenomenal love that has always existed between the Members of the Trinity is directed toward us. God loves His own righteousness; He has given us His

righteousness; therefore, He loves us (2CO 5:21; ROM 5:19; GEN 15:6; ROM 8:38). As spiritual royalty each Church-age believer possesses a double portion of divine righteousness. The righteousness of God the Father is imputed to us at salvation, as it is to every believer of all other dispensations (GEN 15:6). We are included in the dynamics of "God is love," not because of who and what we are, but because of who and what God is. Because of His integrity our position in Adam, which makes us objects of divine condemnation, cannot suddenly become pleasing to God (1CO 15:22). God's absolute righteousness can never accept our relative righteousness (ISA 64:6a; ROM 9:30-33), nor can any attribute of God's character be compromised (ISA 46:9; ROM 8:8; 1TI 6:16).

The barrier between man and God was removed by the work of Christ on the Cross. Now only the Cross now stands between man and God. Only one issue remains: our volition. God cannot coerce our free will without compromising His integrity; He cannot arbitrarily save us. We must freely believe in Christ to be saved and avoid the Last Judgment (ROM 8:1). If God preempted our volition in salvation, He would destroy His own plan. He would cancel the very purpose of salvation: that each individual might choose to have a personal relationship with Him. Therefore, in impersonal love God does everything except make the decision for us. Positive volition is the only missing link, the only factor needed to complete our reconciliation with God. A single decision of non-meritorious faith in Christ closes the gap, and establishes us as God's beloved children forever.

The mechanics of salvation demonstrate the tremendous scope of God's impersonal love, the absolute "riches of His generosity." Without violating His integrity or relying on the unworthy objects of His impersonal love, God deployed all His infinite genius and power for our advantage, "**not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance,**" to a change of mind concerning Christ. God has provided everything for the eternal salvation of every unbeliever, and the maximum prosperity of every believer in both time and eternity. If an unbeliever rejects God's saving grace, he remains the object of only divine impersonal love until he dies, when the delay in judgment runs out:

*For if we go on sinning willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, but a certain terrifying expectation of judgment, and the fury of a fire which will consume the adversaries. (HEB 10:26-27)*

When the unbeliever accepts Christ, he becomes the object of divine personal love just as Adam was the object of God's personal love in the Garden. However, God's plan for the royal family gives us a higher position after salvation than Adam enjoyed before the Fall. God's game plan is to make us like His Son:

*For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to perfect the author of their salvation through sufferings. For both He who sanctifies and those who are sanctified are all from one Father; for which reason He is not ashamed to call them brethren, (HEB 2:10-11)*

This is the doctrine of sanctification.